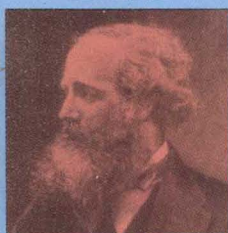


# Scientific Secrets of Jainism

(An exploration of the parallels between Modern Physics and Jain Philosophy)

Maxwell



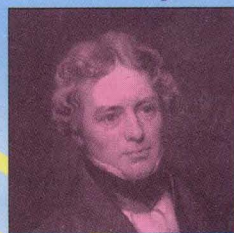
$$\mathbf{J}_2 = \epsilon_0 \frac{\partial \mathbf{E}}{\partial t}$$

Newton



$$F = G \frac{m_1 \cdot m_2}{d^2}$$

Faraday



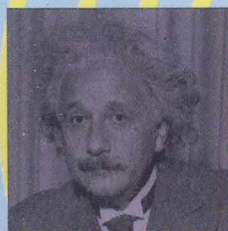
$$\nabla \times \mathbf{E} = - \frac{\partial \mathbf{B}}{\partial t}$$

Lord Mahavira



The Unique Scientist of the Universe

Einstein



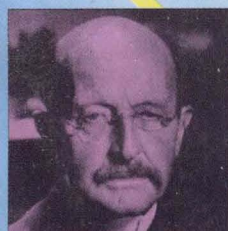
$$E = mc^2$$

De. Broglie



$$\lambda = h / mv$$

Planck



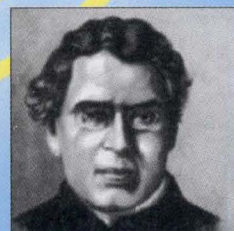
$$h = 6.625 \times 10^{-34} \text{ Joule-Sec}$$

P.C. Vaidya



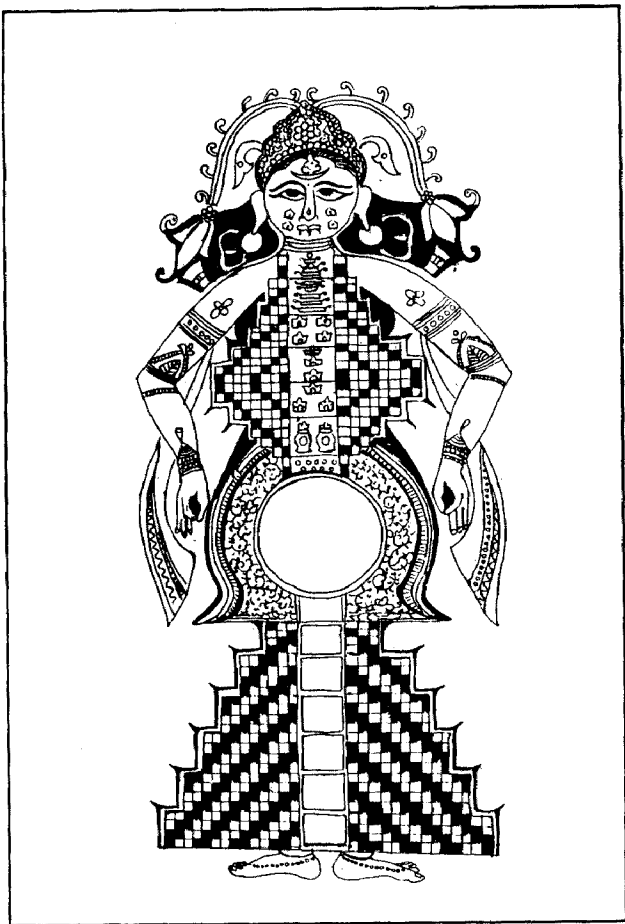
$$d v^2 / dr = 0$$

J.C. Bose



---

# Scientific Secrets of Jainism



**Research Institute of Scientific Secrets From  
Indian Oriental Scriptures  
Ahmedabad 380 004 (India)**



---

# **Scientific Secrets of Jainism**

( A collection of Articles)

(An exploration of the parallels between  
Modern Physics and Jain Philosophy)

By

**Munishri Nandighoshvijayji Gani**

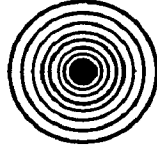
Disciple of

**Acharyashrivijaya Suryodayasuriji Maharaj**

Belongs to the Group of

**Acharyashrivijaya Nemisurishwaraji Maharaj**

सर्वत्रव्यपार्यायेषु केवलस्य



RISSIOS

Publisher :

**Research Institute of Scientific Secrets From  
Indian Oriental Scriptures  
Ahmedabad 380 004 (India)**



---

---

**Scientific Secrets of Jainism**  
**( A collection of Articles)**  
**(An exploration of the parallels between**  
**Modern Physics and Jain Philosophy)**

©2000 by Muni Nandighoshvijayji

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

1. Shri Hemantbhai H. Parikh  
c/7 Radhe Apartment, Behind Bombay garage,  
Nr. Underbridge, Shahibaug,  
Ahmedabad 380 004 (India)
2. Prof. H. F. Shah  
18, Rupayatan, Maneknagar, Opp. Ankur School,  
Paldi, Ahmedabad 380 007 (India)

First Edition: 2000 copies, June., 2001

Price: Rs. 300-00, \$. 10-00 £. 7-00

Publisher  
Research Institute of Scientific Secrets From  
Indian Oriental Scriptures  
Ahmedabad 380 004 (India)

Cover picture: Lord Mahavira : The Unique scientist of the Universe & the  
modern science

Printed by : Amrut Graphics  
128, Sahajanand Park, Shahibaug, Ahmedabad - 4. INDIA. Ph : 5623282

---

---

## **Our Financial Contributors**

1. Dr Pradip K. Shah Godhrawala, Mrs. Darshana P. Shah,  
Archit and Alap  
487, Jeremy, Bourbonnias, ILL 60914 USA
2. Dr Parag M. Doshi Godhrawala. Mrs. Dulari Doshi,  
Anjali, Anish,  
13406, Misty Meadow Drive, Palous Heights, ILL 60463 USA
3. Dr Jashwant N. Mody Godhrawala  
212, North Alwarado Suite, 112, Losangeles 90820 USA
4. Mrs. Damayantiben Bipinbhai K. Shah  
3/5, Damani Estate, Nawapado, Thana 400602
5. Mr. Chimanlal Manilal Shah Vejalpurwala, Ahmedabad
6. Mr. Pravinbhai K. Shah  
509, Carriage Woods Circle, Raleigh, North Carolina USA
7. Smt. Sumitraben Shantilal Mahasukhlal Gandhi  
Vejalpurwala by Mr. Bharatkumar, Mrs. Naynaben,  
Pinky, Switty(Arpita) (USA), Mr. Raju & Mr. Pankaj  
(Baroda)

---

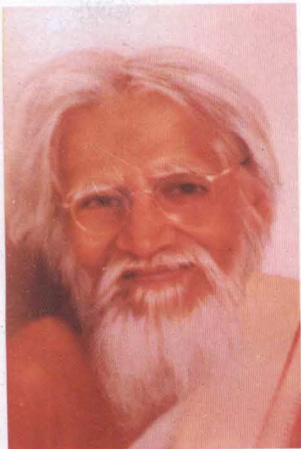
---

## Dedication

I dedicate this book  
to  
His Holiness Acharyashrivijay Nandanasuriji Maharaj  
who initiated me,  
My reverend Gurudev His Holiness  
Acharyashrivijay Suryodayasuriji Maharaj,  
Late Sadhviji Shri Vinitaprajnashriji  
who inspired me for initiation  
and  
worldy mother Vimalaben  
who gave me permission for initiation.

—Muni Nandighoshvijay Gani

**His Holiness**



**Acharyashrivijay  
Nandanasuriji Maharaj**

**His Holiness Reve. Gurudev**



**Acharyashrivijay  
Suryodayasuriji Maharaj**

**Reve. Sadhvi Shri**



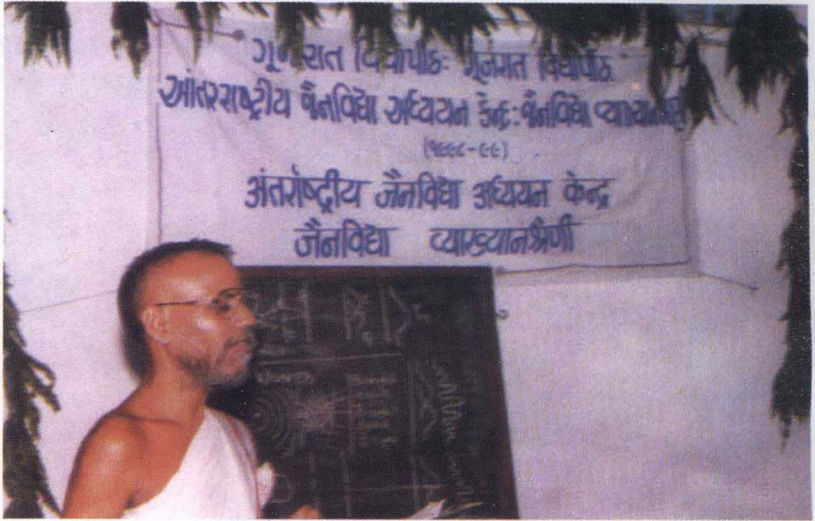
**Vinitaprajnashriji**

**Worldy Mother**



**Shri Vimalabahen**

**Muni Shri Nandighoshvijayji, delivering a lecture on**

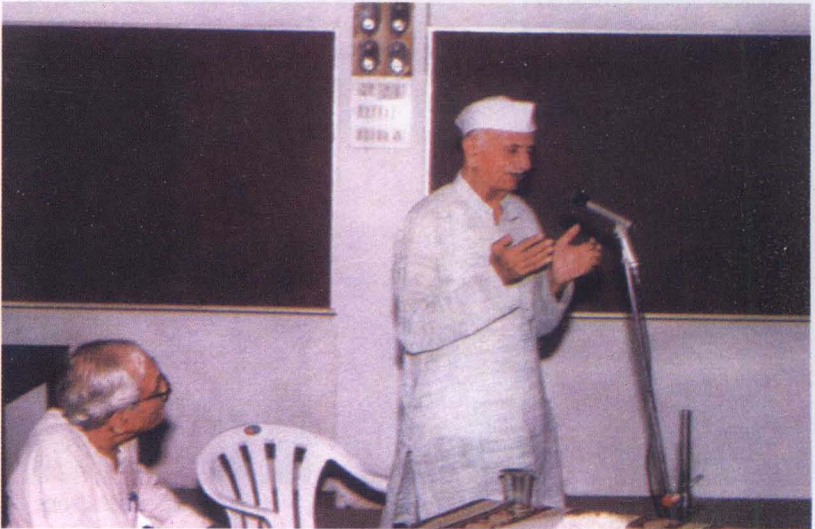


**"Quantum Mechanics & Janism" at Gujarat Vidyapith,  
Ahmedabad on 7th October, 1998**

**&**

**Dr. P.C. Vaidya,**

**addressing the scientists and the scholars, as a chief guest**



---

---

## Publishers Note

Reverend Muni Shri Nandighoshvijayji Gani, a disciple of Acharya Shrivijaya Suryodayasuriji Maharaj belonging to the group Acharya Shrivijaya Nemisuriji Maharaj, has written some comparative and critical articles in Gujarati, Hindi and English languages regarding the various branches of science and Jainism over several years. They have been published in various well known magazines (digests) like Navneet-samarpana (Gujarati digest), Tirthankara (a Hindi magazine), Jain Journal (a English quarterly on Jainism), Tulasi-prajna, Arhat-vacana, Parva-prajna etc.

Some of them have been collectively published in the two volumes entitled "Jainism : Through Science" by Shri Mahavira Jain Vidyalaya, Bombay. They were very well received in India and abroad especially by the large class of the people that has an interest in science as well as in Jain philosophy. As both the books and the Gujarati, Hindi and English sections contain different topics, after the publication of these books Prof. K. V. Mardia (Head, Department of Statistics, University of Leeds, U.K.) suggested to publish totally English version for the wider class of the people who is now in foreign.

After the publication of the book "*Jainism : Through Science*" Muni Shri Nandighoshvijayji has written some new articles. They have been also compiled here.

Totally Gujarati version of the same book has been published last year and the open-book-exam also successfully arranged by our institute throughout Gujarat state.

We are very grateful to Muni Shri Nandighoshvijayji Maharaj for giving the chance to publish his valuable contribution through our institute.

It is a pride for our institute that well known and prominent scientists like Dr P. C. Vaidya, Dr Narendra Bhandari (A senior scientist & Professor, Chairman, Solar System & Earth Science, PRL, Ahmedabad), Prof. (Dr) K. V. Mardia (Head, Department of Statistics, University of Leeds, U.K.) and Dr J. V. Narlikar (Director & Homi Bhabha Professor, Inter- University Center for Astronomy & Astrophysics, PUNE) have written introductions or comments to this book. We are especially very thankful to them.

We are very grateful to reverend Muni Shri Bhuvanacandrajji Maharaj for his valuable suggestions and foreword to this book.

This is a second publication from our institute and we have great confidence that this publication will wholeheartedly get its importance throughout the scientific world, Jains and non-Jains alike.

We are very thankful to our generous donors for their financial contribution. Perhaps without their contribution, this publication would not have seen the day of light. Simultaneously, we express our thanks to Mr. Hemant Parikh and Mr. Hasmukhbhai Parikh (Amrut Printers, Ahmedabad) for the finest printing of the book.

At last, we are thankful to the trustees of Shri Mahavira Jain Vidyalaya, Bombay for giving the permission to reproduce the articles in Gujarati version as well as in English version.

**President : Dr Divyesh V. Shah**  
**Research Institute of Scientific Secrets from Indian Oriental Scriptures**  
**Ahmedabad 380 004.**



---

## A Search for Meeting Points of Science and Religion

Every religion worth the name is basically a way of life; morality and mental purity are its main concerns. In other words, religion is a science of life. Nevertheless every religion has developed also a philosophy on which its spiritual and moral traditions are based. Its code of conduct or the way of life is a logical deduction of its views and theories pertaining to the physical and metaphysical world. These very philosophies worked as a springboard for the modern science.

Jainism is an ancient religion, well known for its rigid code of conduct. It is famous for its philosophy also. A closer look at it will convince every student of philosophy that its approach towards outer as well as inner world is 'scientific'. Jainism does not believe in God Almighty as a creator of the universe; instead, like science, it says that the universe is governed by some fundamental laws. There are very few old religions, which can comply with science. Jainism is one of those science-friendly religions. It has a vast heritage of knowledge buried in canonical as well as non-canonical books, in which we find a number of facts scattered, which have striking compatibility with modern science. Description of atom and sub-atomic particles, water as a compound of gas (physics), the value of pi (mathematics), life in vegetables (biology), innumerable suns and moons (astronomy)—these are some references which are considered discoveries of science, but actually are well known to Jainas from thousands of years. There is a good deal of such data in scriptures, which resembles the scientific findings of today, with slight difference. For instance, Jain scriptures say that Earth rests on three layers: '*Ghanōdadhi*' (solid ocean), '*Ghanavāta*' (solid gas) and '*Tanūvāta*' (fine gas). According to geology, earth's upper crust rests on the 'magma', which resembles '*Ghanōdadhi*'. Is then magma '*Ghanōdadhi*'? Likewise, Jainism believes in six kinds of living beings. Among them there are '*Pr̥thavīkāya*' (earth-bodied) and '*Agnikāya*' (fire-bodied) organisms. Scientists have recently found out new organisms—stromatolites which form the crust of rocks and thermophile, which live in heat. Are stromatolites '*Pr̥thavīkāya*' of Jain scriptures and thermophiles '*Agnikāya*'? There are so many 'secrets' in Jain literature which may turn out scientific truths, as the research goes on. We cannot rule out all this to be mere coincidence or accidents. There are many other things—pyramids, astrology, ESP, OBE, mantra etc. etc.—which already suggest that our ancestors knew more than we thought they knew.

Here some questions may be raised: If they knew so many things, which have been discovered by scientists only after life long attempts of research and experiments, then why there are gaps in the picture of the universe presented by the scriptures? Why we face differences and difficulties in comparison of scientific data with scriptural data?

---

Possible solutions for such puzzles may be lying in these points : True that we cannot match all the scriptural or traditional data with that given by science, but, as we noted before, we certainly come across many facts that science discovered later, but were actually recorded in Jain scriptures. It may be same in the case of other statements. Science might 'discover' them later on. Another possibility : Surely we face difficulty, discordance and discrepancies in many scriptural references. This may be due to the lost portions of scriptures and lost contexts. Language is a great hindrance in reaching to right meaning of words. In those days people preferred poetic language; afterwards the poetic narrations were taken to be bare facts. Thus understanding the scriptural data became difficult. In the first place, the seers and prophets were devoted to spiritual developement, they didn't bother to explain each and every thing in the physical world. So we can't find a complete picture of the universe and the objects in it. Of course they told much about this physical world, but with passing of time, decline of civilizations and due to other calamities much was lost. Then people used their imagination to complete the picture, and thus deviations and even alterations took place; therefore we now have a distorted and inconsistent image of the world in our sacred books and other old literature. Now time is ripe to unearth the facts from the ancient wisdom deposited in old scriptures and examine them in the light of science.

This task is up to not only followers of religions, lovers of ancient wisdom or students of philosophies, but up to scientists also. Because science is for mankind and religion also is for mankind. They are not apart like poles, but as close as two eyes which work with perfect co-ordination. To tell the truth, we can do without science, but not without religion. A scientist without religious attitude may create new Hiroshima and Nagasaki disasters. We need not only technology, but, over and above it, good character also. And character cannot be synthesized in laboratories. Only spiritual understanding can make a man, man. Religion is like eyes which see, whereas science is like feet which walk.

The process of combining both these seemingly opposite trends has now already started. Gone are the days when science took religion for mere superstitions and dogmas, and religious circles considered science an evil, rather a devil, out to distract people from the right path. The era of evaluation and assimilation of both the streams has now begun. This is why we happen to see books like present one. In Jain circles, the systematic study of science began relatively late. There are several books on the subject by Jain scholars, very few by Jain monks. Muni Nagarajji, Muni Abhayasagajji, Muni Amarendravijayji and Muni Mahendrakumar 'Dvitiya'—these are the prominent names of Jain monks who have worked in this direction. In this series, the name of Muni Nandighoshvijayji is now added. He has studied science with open mind. His approach towards science is balanced and healthy, befitting to a follower of the Jainism, which has the principle of 'Syādvāda' (relative truth) at its base. He does not discard the findings of science which differ from Jain scriptural beliefs but tries to find out a ground, with regard to scriptural citations, to accommodate the findings of science. He does not fall prey to hasty

---

conclusions and superficial similarities. He goes deep and searches for finer and subtler points where both the ideologies meet or even disagree. The name of the book is suggestive. It implies that there are things in Jain tradition which can be explained by science, therefore these are 'scientific'.

While discussing every topic, the author has given a brief account of the development of the relevant theory or the discovery. This helps the reader to be familiarized with the subject. This indicates also author's concern to give justice to the subject and diffuse the knowledge of science in religious circles. I appreciate this very much and wish that learned Jain monks and nuns follow this track. Science is going to stay here and it is nothing but a search for truth. Technology—indiscriminative use of technology—may be harmful, not science. Jain monks and nuns study the literature of six old schools of Indian philosophy and other subjects like astrology, Indian sculpture and architecture. Science has to say something regarding all these fields. Now it is high time to include science in the curriculum of a Jain monk. We cannot turn away from something which helps to see more and that too, with more closely.

This book does not announce final conclusions, but really speaking, starts serious examination of two powerful trends—science and religion, opposite like matter and antimatter. I hope that we will get much more from the author on this subject. And I am sure that this book will go a long way to instill scientific temperament in intelligent groups of Jain tradition and likewise impel the scientifically trained brains to see spiritual data with necessary regard, and inspire them to give an ear to religion which is just another branch of science—the science of life.

Bidada, (Kachchha)  
27th Feb., 2001

- Muni Bhuvanchandra

---

---

## Philosophy and Science

Generally, philosophy and science belong to different fields of study. Philosophy is born out of thinking and science is born out of experience. Different types of literature describing and discussing these two seemingly different activities have, therefore, emerged. But in spite of this distinction, these are two related activities and the literature discussing their relation has also emerged. This collection of articles of *Muni Nandighoshvijayji* belongs to this type of literature.

Proficient in Jain philosophical tradition, the Rev. Muni is no doubt a learned exponent of the reflective spiritual tradition. It is indeed a fact of gratification that he has made tremendous efforts to understand the empirical scientific tradition and it was my privilege to see him absorbed in studying it. The author of this collection of articles is thus proficient in former tradition and well acquainted with the progress in the later tradition. It will, therefore, be very interesting to know his thoughts on the relation between these two traditions.

Science is no doubt empirical knowledge but its basic principles are based on reflection. But these principles are accepted as scientific only after they have passed through the test of experiments. It is, therefore, clear that concentration on the basic principles of modern science is a prerequisite for a discussion of relation between philosophy and science.

This collection of articles discusses the following principles of science :

- (1) Concept of time and its units
- (2) Origin and development of the universe
- (3) Darwin's theory of evolution
- (4) Units of time and their relativity
- (5) Atomic theory of construction of material objects, and
- (6) Energy, the corpuscular theory and the wave theory of light.

The basic scientific introduction of each topic is followed by a detailed discussion of its description according to the Jain philosophical tradition. After awakening the reader's interest in the both traditions, the author attempts to compare them.

The results of the comparison of these two different traditions will hardly be acceptable to all. The author, who makes the comparison is proficient in the reflective philosophical tradition. If the reader like me, is a lover of the empirical tradition may not fully accept the conclusions of the comparison made by the author. But that does not at all diminish the importance of these articles.

---

The reflective tradition is in our cultural heritage. The empirical tradition of science has come to us through the contact with the West. The Indian reader of today is interested in the comparative study of these two traditions. There is no doubt that these articles of *Munishri Nandighoshvijayji* will go a long way in helping the reader to understand and assimilate these traditions.

34, Shardanagar Society  
Ahmedabad 380 007  
15-3-1994

**P. C. Vaidya**

[ With curtsy from the preface of the Gujarati first edition.]

---

## **An exploration of the parallels between Modern Physics and Jain Philosophy**

There is an intimate interdependence between religion, philosophy and scientific thought. Sometimes they may operate in different domains, not accessible to the other, but surely there also exists a lot of overlap, where they deal with common subject matter. In such a domain, they provide useful feedback to each other, and probably a common basis on which concepts can be developed further. Whereas religion should take into account, or be rather based on, the scientific experience and the theories, science is obliged to investigate matters of religious aspiration of mankind, remove superstition and provide logical basis for development of philosophic thought. None of them can exist in isolation, nor they can be complete without the other. Ideally, therefore, there should not be any conflict between them. Their development however proceeds as a different pace since they adopt different approaches. The religious thought had its golden age of development during 2500—2000 years ago during the times of Mahavira, Buddha and Christ, whereas the science developed lately during the 19th and 20th century. This has resulted in a big gap between the two. The present book written by *Muni Nandighoshvijayji* is an attempt to bridge this gap between Jain school of thought and modern science.

There are many a hurdles in finding parallelism between science and religion. The most difficult one is that of language. Science and religion use different terminologies and there are very few persons who can talk about either with equal authority. This sometimes may lead to apparent conflicts between the two, which may not exist in reality. The other equally serious problem is that of approach. Science requires rigorous proofs or observations whereas in religion, it is often adequate to cite the scriptures or quote some authority. Unless both of them can be assessed in the same fashion, a credibility does not develop. Equally important is the fact that if, after due discussion, one of them is found to be wrong, this should be accepted. That is rarely the case. In spite of these limitations, a frank discussion of the two may be useful, and lead us to a further insight into the reality of nature.

The book covers a wide variety of topics. In the beginning it takes up topics such as Special Theory of Relativity, Nature of Light, Doppler Effect, Black-holes etc., many of which form the foundation of modern physics and are deeply entrenched into current scientific thought. They have been verified by repeated observations and it is unlikely that they will need a significant refinement as a result of further experimentation or observations— although one must keep an open mind.

Quantum mechanics has been one of the greatest achievements of the modern physics. It has been able to explain a lot of diverse physical phenomena, but whether it describes the real world in completeness remains to be seen. The problem whether light is a wave or a particle has been a fundamental problem of the 19th century physics. This dichotomy originated from the fact that the western



---

---

science is based on rigid definitions. Whether it is this or that, a choice has to be made. There is no such conflict with the Jain philosophy since Anēkāntavāda is one of the basic premise on which Jain thought has developed. There is no difficulty in saying that light can be both, wave or a particle, or neither, depending on the perspective of the observer and its true nature may never be understood completely. In discussion of these scientific topics, some ideas have been put forth, quoting Jain scriptures, some of which may deserve further study. It is impressive to see that a variety of topics, as diverse as the origin of life to cosmic time cycles were discussed in the ancient scriptures, in quantitative terms and the theory of Karma, which can in rigour, beauty and complexity is as thorough as the quantum theory was formulated by Jain thought.

The topics dealing with mantra, yantra, japa, colour and music point out their importance in the Jain philosophy and spiritual practices and have not formed the subject of scientific investigations. It may be easy to feel their effects on human mind but it is difficult to quantify this effect and therefore they have eluded a proper scientific basis. If techniques develop which can measure their effects, scientific theories can then be developed. Celibacy is one of the corner stones of Jain religion and whereas its importance is accepted by the medical world, there are some new aspects which have been brought to light in this book. The bio-electromagnetic energy or extrasensory perception are the topics which are only lately being investigated scientifically.

The origin of life on Earth, and in the universe at large, is still not fully understood by scientific investigations made so far. Jainism seems to have a different approach to the problem and is worth further study. In contrast Jain description of geography and human physiology appear rather primitive compared to modern understanding although there may be some elements of human physiology, particularly related to spiritual practices which can form a topic of further research.

A series of chapters deal with topics where again, not much thought has been given in the modern science. These mainly concern the food practices. Whereas the modern science has confined at determining the calorific values and its classification into vitamins, proteins and carbohydrate content, the Jain school of thought has gone deep into subtler properties of various types of foods and deals with its psychic as well as physical effects. This forms the basis of several chapters in this book in which an attempt is made to give some rationales behind the Jain food practices, which is an important part of the Jain religious techniques. Long before existence of microscopic life was shown and plants were considered to be living by modern science, these facts were well establishes in Jain philosophy and formed the foundations of complex practices as corollary of nonviolence, which is the basic tenet of Jainism.

There can be two complementary approaches for finding parallelism between science and religion. Assume science to be correct and find similarities in religious

---

thought or do the other way around. The Muniji follows the latter approach and some of the discussion should be followed with this perspective. This has resulted in some difficulties. For example, in a chapter related to some conflicting problems between Jainism and modern science, some points have been raised for which there is no scientific rationale. An attempt is also made to propose some scientific solutions. It is clear that there is much confusion in the units of length (*Gaus*, *Dhanusya* etc.) and time (*samaya*) used in Jain scriptures. At least some of the problems can be resolved if the choice of units is correctly made, but it is ultimately to be supported by scientific evidence. Geological records, particularly those dealing with fossils form scientific basis of evolution of life and consciousness on the Earth. There are no fossils in the geological record which will support human beings being hundreds of feet tall. The Carbon-14 method, which can be used only for the period of about 50,000 years, can hardly throw light over events occurring on million year scale.

Furthermore the carbon dating is on a firm footing and the dates cannot be in error because of contamination which is known to affect some of the ages determined by this method. The discrepancy between some of the problems of this nature can be sorted out by a simple discussion among experts and taking the complementary approach.

I have gone through the book with great anticipation, to be able to find some ideas, inherent in Jain thought, which may not be well known to modern science. But to find such gems would need a further investigation and understanding of both, science and philosophy. May be this book can serve as a starting point for such a pursuit.

30th Sept., 1999  
PRL, Navrangpura,  
Ahmedabad 380 009

**Dr Narendra Bhandari**  
( Ph . D . , F . A . Sc . , F . N . A . Sc . )  
Senior Professor & Chairman,  
Earth Science & Solar System, PRL  
Ahmedabad 380 009

---

## Science Highlights Jainism

I am honoured to be asked by *Muni Nandighoshvijayji* to write a foreword to his book "*Scientific Secrets of Jainism*". The book is a collection of essays by Muniji written over several years. There has not been enough time for me to study all the articles but what I have read has given me a deep impression that Muniji sets out various themes which indicate that Jain science accords well with modern science. Jain science is, of course, qualitative as expounded by Tirthankaras whereas modern science is very much quantitative. However in both cases the underlying concepts are based on rational arguments. Albert Einstein, in his article entitled "*Science and Religion*" (1940, *Nature*, Vol. 146, pp. 605-607) expressed the situation as :

"Science, without religion, is lame,  
Religion, without science, is blind."

Jainism is science with religion. He adds:

"Science is the attempt at the posterior reconstruction of existence by the process of conceptualisation."

Jain science encompasses every aspect of the cosmos, including the living and nonliving entities. Einstein also adds:

"A person who is religiously enlightened appears to me to be one who has, to the best of his ability, liberated himself from the fetters of his selfish desires"

Thus, Einstein is describing the Jain way of life. Muniji not only describes the historical background to various aspects of the modern science but also compares and contrasts it with Jain science. He admirably shows the limitation of modern science. Rightly, he also appeals to scientists to take up challenges, e. g. on pp. 13 "So our scientists have to do a special research in this field (relativity) and they have to put forth scientific secrets, shown by our Indian philosophical tradition, before the world with a modern scientific method."

In my book, "*The Scientific Foundation of Jainism*", (1990, Motilal Banarasi Dass publishers, Delhi), I attempt to render the basic principles of philosophy and ethics of Jainism in terms of modern scientific terminology. Such endeavours are required to bring forth Jain science for modern audience - Jains and non-Jains alike. I think the writing on "*Jainism as it is*" is one important endeavour, but to put its relevance in the 20th and 21st century's concept is a somewhat harder task which requires urgent attention. Even the fundamental Jain concept of Karmic particles as *Karmon*, Pudgala as mass-energy etc. are not well understood. A long time before even photons and electrons were discovered, Jain science preached elementary particles such as Karmic particles. Karmic particles or *Karmons* are unique concept of Jain science as only these particles can interact with the soul. Jain science seems to be the only science which explains both natural as well as '*super natural*'

---

phenomena, interaction between living and nonliving entities, conscious and physical science.

I am not a physicist and have not been able to assess various arguments in the book. However, in my opinion, it is a noble task to 'relate' the concepts of modern science to Jain thoughts and vise-versa. This examination in itself is, of course, to be done through the principles of *Anekantwada* and *Syadwada* i.e. through non absolutistic and holistic principles. As I had previously suggested that his articles in Hindi and Gujarati would also be translated into English for a wider spectacle, all articles old and new, written by Muniji have been translated into English and are going to be published in a single book entitled '*Scientific Secrets of Jainism*'. I am also glad to know that the total Gujarati version has also been published in Jan, 2000.

I congratulate him for this important and timely contribution, and in particular, I wholeheartedly recommend it to the scientific community, Jains and non-Jains alike.

26th August, 2000  
Department of Statistics  
University of Leeds  
LEEDS LS2 9JT, England

**Professor Kanti Mardia**  
Holder of the Chair of Applied  
Statistics and Director of Centre  
of Medical Imaging Research

---

अंतर-विश्वविद्यालय केंद्र : खगोलविज्ञान और खगोलभौतिकी IUCAA

---

Inter-University Centre for Astronomy and Astrophysics

An Autonomous Institution of the University Grant Commission

Jayant Narlikar

Director &  
Homi Bhabha Professor

June 14, 2000

Ref : JVN/2000/PC/12441

Fax No. : 0278-562775

Mr. Hemant H. Parikh

Secretary,  
Research Institute of Scientific  
Secrets from Indian Oriental Scriptures,  
C-7, Radhe Apartments,  
Near Under Bridge,  
Shahibaug,  
Ahmedabad -380 004

Dear Mr. Parikh,

On the \* next sheet, I give my comments on the book entitled, "*SCIENTIFIC SECRETS OF JAINISM*" by Muni Nandighoshvijay.

As a rule, I do not write forewords to books by others and hence I am not in a position to write one for this book. My comments, however, are given on the \* attached sheet and if the author wishes, he can include them along with the comments by other persons which are present in the manuscript sent to me. I am sorry for this delay in sending my comments.

With kind regards,  
Yours sincerely,

J. V. Narlikar

Encl : \* Comments.

---

Mailing Address : IUCAA, Post Bag 4, Ganeshkhind, Pune 411 007, India.  
Location : Meghnad Saha Road, Pune University Campus, Pune 411 007.  
Phone : 91-020-5651513 [Direct], 5851414, 5659415 [General] Fax : 91-020-5656417 [Direct],  
5650760 [General]  
e-mail : jayant@iucaa.ernet.in URL : http://www.iucaa.ernet.in

---

---

## COMMENTS ON THE BOOK ENTITLED “SCIENTIFIC SECRETS OF JAINISM”

*by Muni Nandighoshvijay*

This book gives some fundamental ideas in modern science and mathematics, side by side with the ideas in Jain philosophy. I am not familiar with Jain philosophy, except that I am aware that this philosophy has a rich tradition of high level thinking about nature and life.

The scientific topics covered in the book include such subjects as Special Theory of Relativity, Wave-Particle Duality in Quantum Mechanics, Doppler Effect, Black Holes, etc. There is also a mathematical discussion of the fundamental number “ $\pi$ ”. The way this book is organised, one finds alongside the scientific concepts, some information about notions from Jain philosophy.

There is one school of thought in India which argues that whatever western science is discovering today was already known to the eastern thinkers long ago. The attitude in this book is not of this kind. Instead the author has argued that Jain thinking has been more mature, more comprehensive and more satisfying than what science has to offer.

By training, I am a scientist and I have been impressed by the pragmatic attitude of science where no claim is made to the ultimate truth and all accepted research and theories are based on factual confirmation. It is, therefore, difficult for me to accept the alternatives provided here through the medium of philosophy, although I am willing to grant that somebody who is more advanced in philosophy than I am will be better able to appreciate the philosophical arguments advanced in this book.

Nevertheless, I think it is an interesting combination of modern science and ancient Jain philosophy and the reader will find it of interest to think over the matters presented here.

J. V. Narlikar  
Director

IUCAA  
Post Bag 4  
Ganeshkhind  
Pune 411 007





भारत सरकार  
GOVERNMENT OF INDIA  
परमाणु ऊर्जा विभाग  
DEPARTMENT OF ATOMIC ENERGY  
न्यूक्लियर विद्युत् बोर्ड  
NUCLEAR POWER BOARD  
500 MW<sub>e</sub> PHWR

एत-७१, साउथ साईट,  
S-71, South Site,  
ट्राम्बे, बम्बई-४०० ०८५.  
Trombay, BOMBAY-400 085.

July 8, 1987.

P. Tewari,  
Engineer-SG

Dear Shri Parikh,

Please refer to your letter dated 30th May, 1987 to Chairman, Atomic Energy Commission alongwith the article entitled, "Some Shortcomings of the Theory of Special Relativity According to Jainology" prepared by **Muni Nandighoshvijay**.

Chairman, AEC has asked me to go through the article and write my comments to you. I am enclosing herewith my comments and also some relevant literature which could be of interest to you.

With regards,

Yours sincerely,

(P. Tewari)

---

**Comments on article entitled “ Some Shortcomings of the Theory Of Special  
Relativity According to Jainology” prepared  
by Muni Nandighoshvijay**

---

The paper attempts to point out shortcomings in Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity (STR) by putting forth arguments derived from the interpretation of the Jainistic religious philosophy. Support has also been taken from the hypothesis on the existence of 'tachyon' which are currently now postulated to have velocity higher than that of light. Einstein's postulate that velocity of light is the highest possible velocity in the universe is not supported and a proposition made that velocities greater than light velocity are possible. The conclusion drawn is that alternate theories need to be developed taking help from Indian philosophical ideas.

While STR has been challenged by many other scientists, and experimental results proving that velocity of light measured by different observers is not the same as postulated by Einstein, have been reported, the reasons for such refutation of STR are more profound and subtler than what is put forth in the present paper. The contribution of Einstein through STR on the insight that each particle of matter has in its structure energy proportional to its mass is an unparalleled achievement in the scientific history.

Many a times, an interpretation of religious/spiritual texts, especially, relating to the very basic stage of creation of the universe, if incorrectly done, can lead to results that complicate the further investigations. An instance of this seems to exist at page 3, last paragraph, and page 4, first paragraph. The interpretation from the Jain philosophy that the “ONE, by knowing which all is known”, is a *particle* of matter, certainly seems to be a mis-interpretation. The *Upanishads* and the works of *Adi Shankaracharya* (annex-1) declare this “ONE” to be a “substratum” rather than a “particle”, it is the omnipresent and eternal “chidakash”.

At page 21, para 3rd, it is stated that “Jain philosophy mentions that the earth is steady and the stars, planets, the sun, the moon etc. are moving in the space”. Certainly such a view is opposed to the accepted fact, at the present stage of scientific investigations, on the movement of planets and stars. It is likely that when the earth is stated to be steady in Jain philosophy, the reference must have been with respect to the observer on the earth itself.

Again at page 36, para 1, it is stated that “as per Jain scriptures, energy of atom is infinite because the velocity of atom is also relatively infinite”. For an atom to have infinite amount of energy is indeed impossible.

At page 38, last para, the fundamental element of the universe in the Jain philosophy appears to have been mistaken to be in the form of particles, rather than a substratum of energy as stated earlier.

---

Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity is only a crucial step in the development of fundamental physics, with regard to the nature of space, time and matter. Further development of physics may lead to the acceptance of more of reality of space than what has been taken in STR. It is very unlikely, if not impossible in my view, that velocities higher than light forms the basic postulate of a comprehensive theory of space, energy and matter in future physics.

The scientific and spiritual propositions of *Muni Nandighoshvijay* in this paper are of interest.

(P. TEWARI)

Engineer-SG

---

---

## Tunes of Inspiration

Knowledge can be acquired through three ways : 1. Through experiences and observations i.e. through experiments, 2. Through logic means contemplation, 3. Through intuition i.e. instinct or sixth sense.

The knowledge obtained through experiments and observation made by our eyes and other sense organs may be sometimes deceptive. That means, it is not an absolute truth but it must be relative truth. On the other hand, the knowledge acquired through contemplation / logic is also a subject of intellect, but it has also some limitations. Some empirical knowledge and all intuitional knowledge can never be a subject of intelligence. It will be always beyond logic and intellect.

The recognised principles in the science are established after they have passed through the test of experiments. Whereas the knowledge obtained through intuition or sixth sense does not require such examination. Though the knowledge acquired through intuition is very important for that person and whole society, and is consented by the majority class of society, it has not been accepted as scientific principle. But that does not at all diminish the importance of this knowledge. In fact, at the end of the life and in the extremely critical circumstances and where science is unable to do anything else, the spiritual or intuitional knowledge becomes the nectar.

The great persons, having spiritual knowledge through intuition or sixth sense or yoga and meditation and demolition of their inauspicious karma, of ancient time in the Indian culture, have described their experiences in words about the knowledge they acquired. This means that the knowledge obtained through intuition by them, has been shown in the scriptures. Of course, they are not completely or absolutely true and also it is a partial truth because the omniscient God i.e. Tirthankara also never able to describe the complete or absolute truth because their life-span is too small to describe the all infinite objects of the Universe and only one object can be described in the speech at a time.

The Jain canonical scriptures have been originally composed by the main disciples of omniscient Tirthankara that have seen all the phases of past, present and future of all the elements of the whole Universe like a clean water remaining in a palm.

Many scientific principles lie hidden in the most ancient Jain philosophical treatises. In modern times, it is very necessary to represent these principles

---

with the help of modern mathematics and scientific instruments before the world.

Of course, this work is extremely difficult and it could not be done by a single person. Yet in this book I venture to represent some scientific principles that had been concluded from oriental Jain canonical scriptures during my study and research.

Since I am a Jain Muni, there are many limitations regarding practical work. I have not tested these principles practically. I arrived at such conclusions on the basis of analysis of natural phenomena and social experiences. So it is necessary for the readers to notice that the research papers presented in this book are only theoretical.

The articles given in the book namely : (1) Limitations of the Theory of Special Relativity According to Jainology, (2) Light : Waves or Particles ?, (3) Intensity of Light, (4) New Concepts about Doppler's Effect and (5) New Concepts about Interference of Light, are special research papers for the presentation in the annual meeting of Indian Science Congress Association (Calcutta) at Baroda. But unfortunately, according to the rules of ISCA and since the research papers are only theoretical, they could not be presented. Articles regarding the extra-sensory perception of Shri Ashok Kumar Dutt and their analysis may probably open the doors to new research works.

In certain places repetition of some matter may be found. But every article being an independent article and being published or to be published in different magazines at different times, repetition of that matter was unavoidable.

Direct blessings of my reverend Gurudeva His Holiness Acharya Shrivijay Suryodayasuriji Maharaj and astral blessings of my 7th ancestral Gurudeva His Holiness Shasan Samrat Acharya Shrivijaya Nemisuriji Maharaj and inspiration and guidance from His Holiness Acharya Shrivijaya Sheelachandrasuriji Maharaj are important factors in my research articles.

A learned scholar and Atmasadhaka (Soul-seeker) Muni Shri Bhuvanachandraji, though being physically far far away from me, he has removed all my frustrations and gave me important suggestions to make this book flawless, free from mistakes and credible in scientific world. I have possibly incorporated them here.

Moreover, I will never forget Prof. H. F. Shah (Head, Dept. of Physics. St.

---

Xavier's College, Ahmedabad-9) who inspired me and gave enough co-operation in writing these articles. Whenever the necessity of exposition and clarification of concept of modern physics and mathematical derivation arose, he explained them to me.

Dr P. C. Vaidya, a great mathematician and scientist not only of Gujarat but also of India who is even at the age of 80 years, today engaged in the research of maths and physics, accepted without any hesitation to write the preface. Really, he has devoted his life to researches of maths and physics. Many many students have done research in his guidance. Even though he is not able to read the manuscript of the Gujarati edition, with the help of reader he read it and wrote an introduction to this book. His thanks cannot be expressed in words. Moreover, it is my privilege that all the important articles contained in this book have been read by him in its original form and all the suggestions and corrections made by him are incorporated in the text. Since 1986, he is giving me guidance and help in the form of valuable books.

Dr Narendra Bhandari (Chairman, Earth Science & Solar System, PRL, Ahmedabad-9) also gave me important suggestions & help for my research articles. He has also wrote a wonderful comment of this book.

I am also thankful to Dr A. P. J. Abdul Kalam (Scientific Adviser to Defence Minister and Secretary, Deptt. of Defence Research and Development, Ministry of Defence, India) for suggesting the name of Dr Jayant Narlikar, a well known Astrophysicist for writing the comment to this book.

Dr Jayant Narlikar, a well-known Astro-physicist and a Director & Homi Bhabha Professor of Inter-University Centre for Astronomy and Astrophysics, PUNE (India) also sent a brief but excellent comment on this book. I am very thankful to him.

I highly appreciate Prof. (Dr) K. V. Mardia, the author of the book '*Scientific Foundation of Jainism*' and Head of the Department of Statistics, University of Leeds, LEEDS, (U.K.) who gave me enough and generous co-operation through the Yourkshire Jain Foundation, Leeds, in my research work. He had written a valuable preface of the first Gujarati edition and has also written a preface of this English edition. Without his generous co-operation this publication would not have seen the day of light.

Also, I especially remember Prof. Vasantbhai M. Doshi, Who examined the English translation of the articles and rearranged them. I am also



---

thankful to Smt. Pramila Jain and Prof. P. C. Patel (M. G. Science College) Who read the complete English text and corrected it. I am also thankful to Dr. Jitendrabhai B. Shah, a director of L. D. Institute of Indology and Smt. Shardaben C. Lalbhai Educational Research Centre, Ahmedabad who inspired me for this English edition.

I offer my blessings to Dr Prdipkumar K. Shah and Smt. Darshanaben P. Shah, now in U. S. A. who read my articles published in Navaneet-Samarpana, A Gujarati magazine and inspired me each and every time through letters and gave enough co-peration for this English version.

I am also very thankful to Mr. Bipinbhai K. Shah (Thana) who has totally made me free from worries for this publication.

Moreover, Dr Shriniwasan (Ex. Chairman, Atomic Energy Commission, Bombay), Dr R. Chidambaram (Chairman, Atomic Energy Commission, Bombay), Dr Paramahansa Tewari (Chairman, Nuclear Power Project, Kaiga, Mysore, Karnatak), Dr Shantilal M. Shah (Ex. Senior Scientist, Bhabha Atomic Research Centre, Bombay), Dr Utpal Sarkar (PRL, Ahmedabad), Dr Satya Prakash (PRL, Ahmedabad), Dr Umesh Joshi (PRL, Ahmedabad), Dr Surendra Sinha Pokharna (ISRO, Ahmedabad), Dr R. P. Doshi (ISRO, Ahmedabad), Dr P. S. Thakkar (ISRO, Ahmedabad), Dr Anil Kumar Jain (Manager, IRS, O.N.G.C., Ahmedabad), Dr Abhijit Sen (Institute of Plasma Research, PRL, Ahmedabad), Dr Dilip Ahalpara (Institute of Plasma Research, PRL, Ahmedabad), Dr Kirtibhai R. Shah (Canada), Dr Narayan Kansara, (Ahmedabad), Dr Virendra J. Shah (Central Salt and Marine Chemicals Research Ins., Bhavnagar), Dr Rajesh S. Somani (Central Salt and Marine Chemicals Research Ins., Bhavnagar), Dr J. Krishna Rao (Ex. Head, Department of Mathematics, Bhavnagar Uni., Bhavnagar), Dr Nandlal Jain (Rewa, M.P.), Dr Nemichandji Jain (Editor : Tirthankar, Hindi Magazine, Indore, M.P.), Dr Urmiben G. Desai (Bombay), Mr. Ghanshyambhai Desai (Editor : 'Navneet-Samarpan', A Gujarati Magazine, Bombay), Smt. Gitaben Jain (Editor : Parva Prajna, Annual Magazine), Late Mr. Siddharthabhai Lalbhai, Dr Vimalaben S. Lalbhai (Atul), Mr. Ashok Kumar Dutt (Noida, Gaziabad), Lieut. Col. C. C. Bakshi Mr. Tusharabhai Bhatt (Ex. Editor, Times of India, Ahmedabad Edition) etc. have occasionally inspired me for this publication.

Also, I am proud that Research Institute of Scientific Secrets from Indian Oriental Scriptures, (RISSIOS, Ahmedabad) publishes this book. I conclude in expectation that this publication will also bring enough pride to this

---

institute. God bless them. I am also very grateful to Mr. Harshadbhai K. Dave for final proof reading.

It is a matter of divine pleasure that with the divine favour of 20th Tirthankara Shri Munisuvratasvami and Ananta-labdhi-nidhana Ganadhara Shri Gautamasvamiji this wonderful publication has been finished without any difficulty.

At last, if anything described against the scriptures and the sermon of the Tirthankara Paramatma, I seek forgiveness for it.

26 April 2001  
Jain Upashray, Shantinagar  
Godhra 389 001  
India

**Muni Nandighoshvijay Gani**

## Transliteration Chart

अ आ इ ई उ ऊ ऋ ॠ लृ ए ऐ ओ औ अं अः

a ā i ī u ū ṛ ṛṣṣ lṛ ḷ ē ai ō au aṃ aḥ

क का कि की कु कू के कै को कौ कं कः

ka kā ki kī ku kū kē kai kō kau kaṃ kaḥ

ख खग घ ङ च छ ज झ ञ

ka kha ga gha ṅa ca cha ja jha ṇa

ट ठ ड ढ ण त थ द ध न

ṭa ṭha ḍa ḍha ṇa ta tha da dha na

प फ ब भ म य र ल व

pa pha ba bha ma ya ra la va

श ष स ह झ क्ष त्र श्र

śa ṣa sa ha jña kṣa tra śra

# CONTENTS

Publisher's Note	7
A Search for Meeting Points of Science and Religion	8
Philosophy and Science	11
An exploration of the parallels between	13
Modern Physics and Jain Philosophy	
Science Highlights Jainism	16
Comments from Dr J. V. Narlikar	18
Comments on article entitled " Some Shortcomings of the	21
Theory Of Special Relativity According to Jainology" by P. Tewari	
Tunes of Inspiration	23
Transliteration Chart	28
1. Limitations Of The Theory Of Special Relativity According To	3
Jainology	
2. Misunderstanding About The Equation $E=mc^2$	17
3. Light : Waves Or Particles ?	19
4. Intensity Of Light	39
5. New Concepts About Doppler's Effect	41
6. New Concepts About Interference of Light	43
7. Black Holes : Imaginary Ideas Of Their Structure	49
8. Jainistic And Scientific Analysis Of Extrasensory perception	73
Of Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt	
9. Colour : The Wonderful Charecterisite Of Sound	84
10. Limitations Of Mathematics In Jain Philosophy	90
And Modern Physics	
11. The Value Of $\pi$	115
12. Mathematical Form Of Paramāṇu-Units (Vargaṇā)	120
According To Ācārāṅgasūtra	
13. The Jambūdīvīpa Laghusaṅgrahaṇī And The Modern Science	123
14. The Jain Time-Cycle And The Cosmic Calendar	143
15. Is There An Origin Of Life?	155

16. Indian Classical Music And Its Scientific Significance	165
17. Mantra, Yantra And Sound: A Scientific Analysis	186
18. Two Great Scientists : One From Eastern India And One From Western India	205
19. Why Does Omniscient Tīrthaṅkara Moves About On A Golden Lotus?	216
20. Kinds Of Jāpa And Their Scientific Importance	222
21. Scientific Importance Of Guru In Spirituality	228
22. Light : Animate Or Inanimate?	234
23. Directions In Jain Āgamas	243
24. Celibacy: A Scientific Analysis	251
25. Advantages And Secrets Of Penance : The Scientific View-point	261
26. Prohibition Of Fresh Vegetables On Parva-Tithis: A Scientific View-point	267
27. 'Vigais' And 'Mahāvigais'	276
28. Water : With Life And Without Life : A Scientific View-point	287
29. Jainism And Science : Solutions of Some Problems	292
30. Some References To Human Physiology In Jain Scriptures	303
Appendix I Index of Proper Names	314
Appendix II Glossary - Index of Scientific Terms	318
Appendix III Glossary - Index Of Jain Technical Terms	321
Bibliography	337

---

# 1. Limitations Of The Theory Of Special Relativity According To Jainology

**I**t is now ripe time for the reconsideration of the principles of the theory of special relativity and the theory of general relativity that have been established by Einstein because some years ago, an Indian scientist, (now in U.S.A.) Dr E.C.G. Sudarshan has mathematically proved the existence of the particles, named TACHYON that have greater velocity than light-velocity.

Till now it is not possible to describe the definite construction and the nature of the atom. We do not have a clear idea of the nature of the atom nor can we explain it. This shortcoming of ours is explicitly presented in the great scientist Michael Faraday's words pronounced in 1833 A.D.:

*"But I must confess, I am jealous of the term 'atom' for though it is very easy to talk of atoms, it is very difficult to form a clear idea of their nature, especially when compound bodies are under consideration."*

Till this date these words are almost completely true of the nature and construction of atoms, because as day by day the scientists undertake new research works in the field of fundamental particles, the concepts of construction and characteristics of fundamental particles, become more and more complex.

According to the principles of Einstein's theory any physical substance (object) can maintain maximum velocity equal to the velocity of photon particles or light, but can't get more velocity than that of light. And also when the object is in motion, it becomes shorter in length and its mass increases i.e. as the velocity of an object increases, its length decreases and mass increases. If the velocity of an object becomes equal to the light-velocity, its length becomes zero and mass becomes infinite. Another remarkable principle of this theory is that as the velocity of the physical body increases, the time interval (the intervening time) between two phenomena decreases and if it becomes equal to the light-velocity, time

becomes steady for that object. i.e. time interval for that object becomes zero.

Einstein accepted the velocity of light as constant and it is denoted by 'c'. Einstein's principle touches two aspects of this physical world. On the one hand it describes the construction and shape of the vast universe and the forces that act upon it and on the other hand it explains the behaviour of the fundamental particles and their characters.

Einstein gave an excellent equation for knowing the energy of a substance,  $E = mc^2$ , where  $E$  denotes the total energy of the substance with a mass ' $m$ '. ' $m$ ' denotes the mass of a substance, and ' $c$ ' is nothing but the velocity of light, which is accepted as constant.

Einstein gave an equation for calculating the mass of the mobile objects.

If the mobile object has the velocity ' $v$ ' then  $m_v = \frac{m_o}{\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}}$ , where  $m_v$  denotes the mass of the object in mobile condition, which has the velocity ' $v$ '.  $m_o$  denotes the original mass of the object when the object is at rest, ' $v$ ' and ' $c$ ' denote the velocities of the object and light respectively.

So when the object maintains the velocity equal to the velocity of a photon particle.

$$\text{i.e. } v = c \text{ Then, } m_v = m_c = \frac{m_o}{\sqrt{1 - c^2 / c^2}}$$

$$m_v = m_c = \frac{m_o}{\sqrt{1 - 1}} = \frac{m_o}{0} \text{ (by putting 'c' in place of 'v')}$$

And according to the principle of mathematics, if any number is divided by zero it gives value infinite and it is denoted by  $\infty$ . As a result we can say that, if the velocity of an object becomes equal to the velocity of light, its mass, becomes infinite.

The equation for calculating the length of a mobile object is as follows :

$$L = L'(\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2})$$

Here  $L$  denotes the length of a mobile object, which has the velocity

' $v$ ',  $L'$  denotes the original length of the object, i. e. when it is at rest,  $v$  and  $c$  are the velocities of object and light respectively.

In this equation as the value of ' $v$ ' increases  $v^2 / c^2$  also increases, hence the value of  $\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}$  decreases. So we get always  $L < L'$ . If ' $v$ ' becomes equal to  $c$ , the value of  $\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}$  becomes zero. So  $L$  becomes zero. In the same way, considering the light-velocity as constant according to the equation  $\Delta T = \Delta \sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}$  i. e. time interval for the mobile object decreases as its velocity increases. And if the velocity of an object becomes equal to ' $c$ ',  $\Delta T$  becomes zero. i. e. time becomes steady for it.

Another principle of Einstein's theory is that the summation of two or more vectors does not exist, according to Galilean principle, if two or more forces act on a same object. For e. g. suppose a train has a velocity equal to  $^{3c}/_4$  i. e.  $2.25 \times 10^5$  km/sec. Let us think that a man, who is travelling in the train, has the velocity  $^{c}/_2$  i. e.  $1.5 \times 10^5$  km/sec. Then according to Galilean principle, the velocity of the passenger must be  $3.75 \times 10^5$  km/sec.  $\{(2.25 + 1.5) \times 10^5 \text{ km/sec.}\}$  but it is not true. The summation of these vectors, according to Einstein's equation, becomes  $^{10c}/_{11}$ , which is as follows :

$$\vec{V} = \frac{\vec{V}_1 + \vec{V}_2}{1 + \frac{V_1 V_2}{c^2}}, \quad \text{Here } \vec{V}_1 = ^{3c}/_4 \text{ \& } \vec{V}_2 = ^{c}/_2 \therefore \vec{V} = \frac{\frac{3c}{4} + \frac{c}{2}}{1 + \frac{3/4 \cdot 1/2}{c^2}} = \frac{\frac{5c}{4}}{1 + 3/8} = \frac{5c/4}{11/8} = \frac{10}{11}c$$

Thus, the summation of vectors, (in any number) must not be greater than ' $c$ '. But this principle is only for high velocity - vectors, which reach the ' $c$ '. For the common velocity vectors, the result is approximately the same according to Galilean theory and the theory of relativity.

The equation that calculates the mass of mobile objects, doesn't give a satisfactory solution for sunlight particles i. e. photon particles, because

this equation tells us that 
$$m_v = \frac{m_o}{\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}}$$

Now, in the case of photon particles, their velocity is  $3 \times 10^5$  km/sec. i. e. equal to ' $c$ '. These photon particles are nothing but a special type of fundamental particles, so they must have some mass. If the mass of



photon particles is not equal to zero, but even it is a little more than zero,  $m_c$  becomes infinite ( $\infty$ ). That is, the mass of photon particles becomes infinite and hence according to Newtonian equation  $F = ma$ , any type of the greatest force doesn't positively or negatively accelerate the photon particles. i.e. They must be very powerful like micro bullets, and because of their infinite mass they must be black-holes. But as we experience in our daily life, the photon particles of sun-light do not have infinite mass, so scientists have to believe that the mass of photon particles is zero, when they are at rest.

And also this equation can't apply to the particles that have velocity greater than light-velocity, because here ' $v$ ' is always greater than ' $c$ '. And if ( $v > c$ )  $v$  is greater than  $c$ , the value of  $v^2/c^2$  must be greater than 1. So we will get negative value of  $1 - v^2/c^2$  and a square root of a negative number is imaginary. So Einstein had to believe that there is no existence of the particles that have greater velocity than light-velocity.

But Jain philosophy doesn't accept this posulate. As shown in the Jain philosophical scriptures, the particle or an object that has greater velocity than light-velocity can decrease its velocity up to zero and a particle which is at rest now, can maintain the velocity many times more than light-velocity. We find a reference to this fact in the sacred Jain philosophical treatise named the BHAGAVATĪ SŪTRA or the VYĀKHYĀPRAJÑAPTĪ, which is as follows. This reference is in the form of question and answer between Lord Mahāvīra, the 24th Tīrthaṅkara of Jainism and his first disciple Śrī Indrabhūti Gautama. It is as follows :

परमाणुपोगले णं भंते ! लोगस्स पुरत्थिमिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ पच्चत्थिमिल्लं चरिमंतं एगसमएणं गच्छति, पच्चत्थिमिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ पुरत्थिमिल्लं चरिमंतं एगसमएणं गच्छति, दाहिणिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ उत्तरिल्लं जाव गच्छति, उत्तरिल्लाओ दाहिणिल्लं जाव गच्छति, उवरिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ हेट्ठिल्लं चरिमंतं एगं जाव गच्छति, हेट्ठिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ उवरिल्लं चरिमंतं एगसमएणं गच्छति ? हंता गोतमा ! परमाणुपोगले णं लोगस्स पुरत्थिमिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ पच्चत्थिमिल्लं तं चेव जाव उवरिल्लं चरिमंतं गच्छति ।

(भगवतीसूत्र, शतक-१६. उद्देशक-८)

*paramāṇupōggalē ṇaṃ bhantē ! lōgassa puratthimillāō carimantāō paccatthimillam carimantaṃ ēgasamaēṇaṃ gacchati, paccatthimillāō carimantāō puratthimillam carimantaṃ ēgasamaēṇaṃ gacchati, dāhiṇillāō carimantāō uttarillamō jāva gacchati, uttarillāō dāhiṇillamō jāva gacchati,*

राष्ट्र

मिच्छाता च रिमंताकाग्रहादि मिच्छाता च रिमंताकाग्रहादि गिरुदसि मंते पदममणो गच्छति । एतन्निमिच्छाता वरि सताता उरुति निरुसि रमंतेण  
समयणं गच्छति । दाद्विणिच्छाता वरि सताता उरुति निरुदसि मंते पदममणो गच्छति । उरुति निरुदसि मंते पदममणो गच्छति । उरुति निरुदसि मंते पदममणो गच्छति ।  
जादाग्रहादि हि हिच्छाता वरि सताता उरुति निरुदसि मंते पदममणो गच्छति । इत्तागमता परमागुप्यागलगाजागसा उरुति मंते च वजाद उवे  
रिच्छंति रमंते गच्छति ।

Reference of Bhagawati Sutra, which has been originally composed  
minimum 1500 years ago, mentioning the maximum velocity of atom (paramanu)  
in the universe. This manuscript, belonging to the collection of I. I. Institute  
of Indology, Ahmedabad-380009, having serial No. 14407, has been approximately  
written in the first half of the 16th century of Vikram Era or latter half of the 15th  
century of A.D.

५०९

*uvarillāo carimantāo hēṭṭhillam carimantaṃ ēga0 jāva gacchati, hēṭṭhillāo carimantāo uvarillam carimantaṃ ēgasamaēṇaṃ gacchati ? hantā gōtamā ! paramāṇupōggalē ṇaṃ lōgassa puratthimillāo carimantāo paccatthimillam0 taṃ cēva jāva uvarirallam carimantaṃ gacchati .*

(Question) (Indrabhūti Gautam) : 0, Bhagavān! Does a pudgala i.e. atom go in one samaya from the extreme end of east of the universe to the extreme end of the west of the universe? and from the extreme end of the west to the extreme end of the east?, from the extreme end of the south to the extreme end of the north?, from the extreme end of the north to extreme end of the south?, from the upper extreme end to the lower extreme end and from the lower extreme end to the upper extreme end of the universe?

Ans : (Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmī) : 0, Gautam! Yes, In one Samaya a pudgala atom goes from the extreme end of the east of the Lōka (universe) to the extreme end of the west of the universe and so on.

(Bhagavatīsūtra, Śataka-16. Uddēsaka-8)

Einstein has accepted the velocity of light as constant but according to Jainology it is improper to accept it as constant because the acceptance of constancy of light-velocity, delimits the velocity of paramāṇu which is  $3 \times 10^5$  Km/sec. But as we referred above, the paramāṇu can go from one end to another end of the universe within a SAMAYA. SAMAYA is the most micro unit of time according to Jain philosophy. Its explanation will be given later on.

According to Jainology there is in the whole universe an existence of only six fundamental elements. They are independent of each other, though their combinations are present in the universe. They are as follows:

1. Jīva i.e. the living element ( soul) 2. Dharma i.e. the medium for motion 3. Adharma i.e. the medium for rest 4. Ākāśa i.e. space 5. Pudgala i.e. matter 6. Kāla i.e. Time

From these six elements only the first element is a living element, while the rest are nonliving elements.

According to Jainology, time and space both are the elements with their separate existence. They are not co-related. The theory of special relativity mentions that space and time are co-related. A phenomenon, which occurred at one point of space can appear after some time at

another point of space. The point of time, when the phenomenon appears at the second point of space, is the present time for the second point and the past time for the first point. Thus time is nothing but the measurement of space. i.e. there isn't a separate existence of time.

Jain scriptures show that space is divided in two parts, Lōkākāśa, and Alōkākāśa. Lōkākāśa, means space belonging to the universe. Lōka means the whole universe inhabited by living beings. It consists not only of the animal kingdom and the plant kingdom as accepted by the modern science but it also consists of all types of soil-lives, water-lives, fire-lives, wind-lives, and gas-lives as found in Jain Biology. Space beyond the Lōka (universe) is called Alōkākāśa, where there is no possibility for the existence of a living being and also Alōka does not include the rest of the four non-living elements Dharma, Adharma, Matter and Time.

Moreover the universe is completely filled with two non-material elements named Dharma and Adharma. Outside the universe Dharma and Adharma do not exist. Though both elements are completely separate from each other, they combine with each other like milk and water. Therefore we find both elements in the same space. The element Dharma helps the motion of moving objects, while the element Adharma helps the stagnation of objects. And we have to remember that these elements are not constituted of material particles. So the belief fostered by our scientists that every element must consist of material particles and therefore Dharma and Adharma also consist of material particles is improper. Since these are non-material elements, they have no material-properties like colour, odour, taste, touch, mass, weight, electromagnetic field, to produce friction and to give response to friction.

The most microscopic particles of matter (paramāṇus) possess these properties. As these elements (Dharma and Adharma) are not outside the universe, the elements – matter and soul – can't go outside the universe.

Einstein's acceptance of velocity of light to be constant means that the velocity of the source of light doesn't affect the velocity of light. e.g. Though the velocity of the source of light is  $2 \times 10^5$  km/sec. the velocity of its own light remains  $3 \times 10^5$  km/sec., but not  $\vec{v}_1 + \vec{v}_2 = \vec{v}$ , as the Galilean theory holds. It means the velocity of light will not become  $(3 + 2) \times 10^5$  km/sec. in the positive direction or  $(3 - 2) \times 10^5$  km/sec. in negative

direction in respect of the direction of motion. Though this belief of Einstein's theory is partly true, it is not absolutely true. When the velocity of the source of light is more than ' $c$ ', the velocity of light becomes more than ' $c$ '. And it can be denoted in sign as follows :

$c = 3 \times 10^8$  km/sec. i.e. velocity of light or photon particle.

$v + c = c$  (If  $v \leq c$ )

but  $v + c = v$  (If  $v > c$ )

In this condition as the value of ' $v$ ' or velocity of the source of light increases, the velocity of light also increases. It means the velocity of light is not constant but variable. If the velocity of light source is greater than the light-velocity, the velocity of light for its own light becomes greater than ' $c$ ' and equal to the velocity of light source. Not even a little difference takes place in the velocity of light, if the velocity of light source is less than ' $c$ ' because in this condition, the ray of light, created at the second moment always remains behind the ray of light, created at the first moment. The ray of light created at third moment always remains behind the ray of light created at second moment. And at last the source of light remains behind all the rays of light. So it is natural that the velocity of light-source doesn't affect the light-velocity.

But when the light-source maintains a velocity equal to " $c$ ", the ray of light doesn't go outside the source of light because both go with each other and an invisible, unbreakable, screen or wall of light waves gets formed before it.

But if that source of light gives off its light in two opposite directions the velocity of light in the opposite direction, relatively to the direction of motion of light source, becomes zero and light could be seen as motionless.

But experimental proof is a unique feature of modern science. And it accepts all theories after a practical test. It is impossible to give a practical proof for the 'superlignic' objects because such objects can never be seen with our eyes. (Here the word 'superlignic' is used for the objects having greater velocity than that of light.) For this reason Einstein must have said that no object can have velocity greater than the velocity of light.

Of course, Einstein's assumption is relatively true, because the object,

maintaining a greater velocity than light-velocity must be formed through (from) such a micro and special kind of fundamental particles which should be smaller than photon particles and they should be frictionless or might produce a negligible friction. According to Jainism the atoms of every physical substance, are very large in size, so they can never maintain velocity greater than 'c'. But we can't rule out the existence of other types of atoms.

The description of types of Vargaṇās i.e. groups of material particles, in Jain scriptures, also tells us this fact. VARGAṆĀ is a technical word for these various divisions of matter. Though the types of these vargaṇās are infinite in the universe, there are only eight classified types of these vargaṇās, which are useful for living beings. Their names are as follows :-

1. Audārika vargaṇā 2. Vaikriya vargaṇā 3. Āhāraka vargaṇā 4. Taijas vargaṇā 5. Bhāṣā vargaṇā 6. Śvāsōcchvāsa vargaṇā 7. Manō vargaṇā 8. Kārmaṇa vargaṇā

All the fundamental particles like electron, proton, neutron, positron, neutrino, quark etc. that have been discovered by our scientists, belong to the first Audārika vargaṇā.

### *SAMAYA -- The Smallest and Basic Unit of Time*

SAMAYA is a technical word of Jain philosophical tradition and is used in scriptures to denote the smallest unit of time. There isn't a smaller unit than SAMAYA. Āvalikā is also a unit of time and a technical word of Jain traditional scriptures. According to Jainology 1 Muhūrtta (i.e. 48 minute) contains 1,67,77, 216 Āvalikās, it means in 1 second, the number of Āvalikās is approximately 5825.4221... Even though there isn't a definite reference in Jain traditional scriptures to the number of SAMAYAs, of 1 Āvalikā, we could find that 1 Āvalikā contains uncountable SAMAYAs. Here 'uncountable number' means, it cannot be denoted in mathematical terms or equation.

Now-a-days, scientists have taken the second as the smallest unit of time and they can measure a pico [one trillionth] second, which is equal to  $10^{-12}$  second. But this Jain technical word SAMAYA is the smallest unit and though it is difficult to denote it, in terms of seconds, according to the calculation of Śrī Nandalal Jain, we can possibly say that 1 SAMAYA is

equal to approximately,  $10^{-380}$  sec. to  $10^{-500}$  sec.

During this smallest time-unit, SAMAYA, a maximum velocity of the paramāṇu is 14 Rājālōka (Rajju). It means a paramāṇu can go throughout the universe or from the lower end to the upper end or from the upper end to the lower end within a SAMAYA. A Rajju is the greatest unit of length.

Though, C.T. Colebrook and S'ri G.R. Jain have tried to calculate the measurement of Rajju, (Rājālōka), it cannot satisfy the belief of Jain scriptures.

Muni Śrī Mahendrakumar "Dvitiya" has done hard work to calculate the measurement of Rajju and according to his calculation the minimum measurement of Rajju is as follows.

$$Rajju = 4 \times 10^{\{1.8 \times 10^{245} + 3\}} \text{ miles}$$

Even though, this value of Rajju is not real, it is more trustworthy than the value of Rajju calculated by Mr. G. R. Jain and C.T. Colebrook.

In this condition it is not proper to say that a particle cannot get more velocity than the light-velocity and also it is improper to say that the particles, which have greater velocity than light-velocity cannot decrease their velocity comparatively with that of light. i.e. it is improper that their velocity never becomes less than light-velocity.

$$E = mc^2$$

In this world - famous equation, Einstein mentions the energy, contained by a substance. Here  $E$  denotes energy, " $m$ " denotes mass and ' $c$ ' is the light-velocity, which has been believed by the scientists as constant and value of " $c$ " is 3,00,000 km/sec. If we want to know the energy of a substance, we have to multiply the mass with the square of light-velocity i.e.  $9.0 \times 10^{20}$  cms/sec. But as we have shown above the velocity of light is not constant, because the velocity of the source of light affects the velocity of light, if the velocity of light-source is greater than light-velocity, and the velocity of light-source does not affect the light-velocity, if it is less than light-velocity. That is why when the source of light has greater velocity than  $3 \times 10^5$  km/sec., the velocity of light-source is considered as the light-velocity. Greater the velocity of light-source than  $3 \times 10^5$  km/sec. greater the value of  $c$ . So we have to put  $v$  instead of  $c$  in the above equation, and

$v \rightarrow$  uncountable number i.e.  $v \rightarrow$  infinite number but  $v \neq$  infinite number. If  $v$  tends to infinity,  $E$  (energy) also tends to an infinite number.

Even though scientists believe that the mass of photon particles is zero, really no particle has zero mass. So  $m$  (mass) of photon particles, according to Einstein's equation must become infinite and if their mass becomes infinite, the gravitational force becomes infinite. So they must be converted into black-holes. But really it does not happen. It shows that the equation  $m_v = m_o / \sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}$  is not true.

In the same method  $\Delta T$  never becomes zero for the photon particles and even when we remark that the  $\Delta T$  becomes zero for the objects that have velocity equal to the light-velocity, it is not a reality but only an imagination.

The third fact is as follows : It is not true that the length of the object, which has the velocity equal to light-velocity, becomes zero. If we believe that the length of the object becomes zero which has the velocity equal to the velocity of photon particles, the object must be destroyed and converted into energy. But as we know that the photon particles cannot be destroyed by the velocity. The object, which has velocity equal to light-velocity, cannot be seen by any one and in this sense the length of that object becomes zero, but it is illusion.

$$(1) m_v = \frac{m_o}{\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}} \quad (2) \Delta T = \Delta t \sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2} \quad (3) L = L'(\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2})$$

And also these three equations cannot apply to the objects, that have greater velocity than that of light, that is why these three equations are not proper.

$$\vec{V} = \frac{\vec{V}_1 + \vec{V}_2}{1 + \frac{\vec{V}_1 \cdot \vec{V}_2}{C^2}}, \quad \text{Einstein's equation for the addition of the vectors is not}$$

satisfactory because according to this equation the sum of the vectors which have greater velocity than light is always less than  $c$  and if the velocities of two vectors are  $c$  and  $2c$ , the sum of these two vectors becomes equal to  $c$ , which is not true.



In short all four equations of Einstein are useless for the object, having greater velocity than that of the photon particles. While the most learned scientists believe that the equations of classical physics must give a satisfactory interpretation of all physical phenomena from micro to macro i.e. atomic and sub-atomic particle world and the great heavenly bodies. But as we have shown above, the equations of the theory of special relativity can't give satisfactory interpretation of the modern sub-atomic particles and heavenly bodies having a greater velocity than light-velocity. So our scientists have to make a special research in this field and they have to put forth scientific secrets, shown by our Indian philosophical tradition, before the world with a modern scientific method.

I know very well that this being extremely difficult task, it cannot be done by a single scientist. And it can be done by a team of scientists, who have dedicated their life to science and philosophy.

I wish that all the scientists will give me enough co-operation in this extremely difficult task.



N.B. :- This article had been, originally, written fifteen years ago and I had made a statement that according to Jain philosophy, the velocity of light is not constant and any material particle or object may have greater velocity than that of light.

Till now all physicists have accepted that the velocity of light is constant and no particle has velocity greater than light velocity according to the postulates of Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity.

Recently, in research carried out in US, particle physicists like Dr Lijun Wang etc. of the NEC Research Institute in Princeton have shown that light particle can be accelerated up to 300 times their normal velocity of 1,86,000 miles per second ( 3,00,000 km per second ).

Of course, according to the report given in 'The Times of India' dated June 5, 2000, details of the findings remain confidential because they have been submitted to *Nature* for review prior to possible publication.

Regarding this the famous scientist Dr J. V. Narlikar says in his article This is not against any result of relativity. Because, the point of intersection has a geometrical existence only; it has no physical status. No material particle is sitting at that point. While relativity tells you that no material

particle can be made to move faster than light. More generally it tells us that no physical effect, information can be transmitted across space faster than light. So an abstract point of intersection of two straight lines traveling faster than light will not raise any eyebrows in the relativity community.

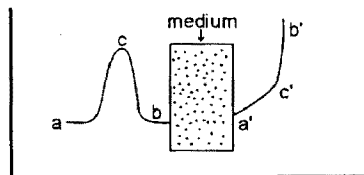
This would only breach one of the basic principles of physics causality, which says that a cause must come before an effect."

Regarding the Tachyon particles the famous scientist Dr Jayant Narlikar writes in his article published in Times of India dated 17 June 2000:

"In the early 1960s, George Sudarshan, V. K. Deshpande and OMP bilaniuk had proposed that nature does allow faster than light particles to exist; only they can never slow down speeds less than the speed of light. Called tachyons, these particles can travel into the past. However, they cannot be used to send information or energy into the past and so they would not create paradoxical situations. They are, therefore, not inconsistent with special relativity. Do they exist? This is an open question to which the future holds the key."

After reading the article in '*Nature*' dated 20, July, 2000, regarding the experiment carried out by Dr Lijun Wang, crossing the ultimate light speed barrier, Dr Narendra Bhandari (Chairman, Earth Science & Solar System, PRL, Ahmedabad) in his letter dated 2 Nov., 2000 explains as under:

"The experiment does not violet the theory of relativity. Speeds greater than that of light are known in certain media but only if "information" can be transmitted with velocity greater than  $C$ , then only cause and effect can be reversed. In the present experiment it does not happen. As I understand the waveform changes in the medium as I can better show and express by the following diagram :



Because of finite width of the wave part 'b' travels first. The peak amplitude is at 'c', but the wave at point 'b' can derive energy from the medium and appears as the peak b' as it goes out of the medium. Time taken from c to c' or b to b' is the same as permitted by the velocity of light

but  $b'$  (which actually corresponds to  $b$ ) appears to have travelled faster than velocity of light if it is wrongly considered to correspond to point  $c$ , the point of maximum amplitude.

In brief, therefore information (which is at point  $c$ ) has not travelled with velocity faster than light. I hope I have explained the experiment clearly though somewhat crudely. If I will find some good article on this topic I will send it to you."

There is a news in the Times of India dated 20 Jan 2001 that the scientists Lene Vestergaard Hau of the Harvard University and a team led by Mikhail D. Lukin and Ronald L. Walsworth of the Harvard Smithsonian Center for Astrophysics in Cambridge have independently reduced the speed of light (photons) to zero for a millisecond.

The news are as under:

"New experiments reduce speed of light to zero in a millisecond.

Researchers have been able to reduce the speed of light from 186,000 miles per second to zero, trapping the light beams for short periods of time before allowing them to burst forth again at full speed.

Now Hau's group and a team led by Mikhail D. Lukin and Ronald L. Walsworth of the Harvard-Smithsonian Center for Astrophysics in Cambridge have independently gone that achievement better. They have brought the light pulse to a complete stop before allowing it to burst forth once again.

They could halt the beam for as long as a millisecond before turning the coupling beam back on and allowing the light pulse to re-emerge at full speed."

Of course there was a question for the existence of the tachyon particles but at present after the experiment carried out by Dr Lijun Wang, it may be shortly proved.

Both the experiments show that the statement regarding the velocity of atoms and sub-atomic particles or the tachyon particles that had been made by me 16 years ago has already been proved today.



---

## 2. Misunderstanding About The Equation....

$$E = mc^2$$

**$E = mc^2$**  is a famous equation that has been established by the great scientist Einstein, and it is related to the special theory of relativity.

The special theory of relativity is established on two main postulates, as follows :

1. Velocity of any physical particle or object always remains less than the light-velocity.

2. The velocity of light, i.e. photons is constant. It means that the velocity of source of light never affects its light-velocity.

And according to the second postulate in the equation  $E = mc^2$ ,  $E$  denotes total energy,  $m$  denotes mass of object, and  $c$  is the light-velocity that is accepted as constant.

Generally, all, who have not properly studied physics or special theory of relativity know that (1) mass and energy are interchangeable, (2) energy of object or particle is equivalent to its mass multiplied by the speed of light squared.' In reality ' $m$ ' in the equation  $E=mc^2$ , does not denote rest-mass, but it denotes the mass of particle or object with the velocity ' $v$ ' and therefore  $m$  is a variable for the same object according to its velocity. As velocity increases,  $m$  increases and therefore  $E$  increases. If the velocity of a particle becomes approximately equal to light-velocity,  $m$  tends to be infinite. It means that the energy of a substance or particle is not constant.

In the equation  $E = mc^2$ ,  $mc^2$  denotes the sum of rest energy  $m_0c^2$ , and its Kinetic energy, and it is denoted as  $E=mc^2=m_0c^2 + K.E^*$ . Here  $m_0c^2$  is constant for the same object or particle, while  $K.E$  (kinetic energy) is variable according to its velocity. So it is a

misunderstanding that mass and energy are interchangeable and energy of the substance with the same mass is constant.

Though in practice, any sub-atomic particle never obtains velocity equal to light-velocity\*\*,  $E = m_0 c^2 + K.E.$  says us that even the smallest particle of a matter may possess infinite energy and Jain philosophy also denotes that even the atom (paramāṇu) which is completely indivisible at a given time by any instrument, has also infinite energy.

Jain philosophy tells us that light is not an energy-packet but is made up of tiny material particles and its velocity is not constant, it is variable, if the velocity of source of light is greater than light-velocity. According to Jain philosophy a particle may obtain velocity greater than light-velocity. Thus though the postulates of Einstein and the concepts of philosophical tradition of Jainism, which are absolutely true, are contradictory to each other, they come to same results.



References : 1. Holistic Science and Human Values (Quarterly, Feb, 1989, Vol-1, No. 1, page 6, column 1)

\*Special theory of Relativity, Mass-Energy Equivalence

\*\*Beta ( $\beta$ ) particles are able to obtain maximum velocity equal to .99c.

THERE THE EYE GOES NOT,  
SPEECH GOES NOT, NOR THE MIND.  
WE KNOW NOT, WE UNDERSTAND NOT  
HOW ONE WOULD TEACH IT.

KENOPNISHAD -3

---

### 3. Light : Waves Or Particles ?

**E**ver since very ancient times, the sun has been regarded and worshipped as a divine being in India as well as in some western countries such as Italy, Greece etc. and it is just and proper for the simple reason that it is the only source of energy in the microcosm and macrocosm and since times immemorial, is giving energy to all living beings in the whole universe and it will no doubt continue to do so throughout eternity.

On the strength of the belief that an atom is the cheap, clean and harmless source of energy, all the twentieth century scientists give importance to it as an alternative source of energy. Experimental experience of a period as long as thirty five years, has proved that atomic energy is neither cheap nor clean nor harmless and therefore, the sun as a source of energy enjoys and will no doubt continue to enjoy sovereign position forever. In the book '*The Turning Point*' the scientist named Fritjof Capra, writes in this connection as under :

*"Twenty five years ago, world leaders decided to use 'atom for peace' and presented nuclear power as the reliable, clean and cheap energy source of the future. Today we are becoming painfully aware that nuclear power is neither safe nor clean nor cheap."*

The sun gives immeasurable quantity of energy to the whole world only in the form of light. Since long, scientists have been doing their best to know the complete structure of light but they have not been able to know fully its structure in its real form.

According to some scientists light is in the form of waves, while in the opinion of others it is in the form of particles. But scientists have of late unanimously come to the conclusion that since some physical phenomena of light cannot be understood and explained without accepting the particle theory of light and some such phenomena cannot be comprehended or fully explained without accepting the wave theory of light, light is in the form of particles and also in the form of waves.

Practically speaking, the particle theory is in reality quite right and it can explain every physical phenomenon pertaining to light. All that is needed is introduction of some changes in the fundamental concept of the particle theory. The Jainistic theory of light constituents also states that light consists of particles and it is on the basis of the particle theory that transformation of light in various phenomena such as reflection, refraction, interference, diffraction, polarisation etc. can be explained.

Sir Isaac Newton (1642–1727), the English mathematician and physicist made important discoveries about light. He thought about the velocity of light and its ingredients. He advanced his reasoning to prove that light consists of microscopic particles.

If we accept that light is formed of particles, it follows that the particles of light emanating from illuminated objects, travel in all directions. Since light travels in a straight line and since it does not bend its course of travel at the edges of windows, doors etc., Newton preferred the particle theory. Though the particle theory, accepted by Newton, could not explain refraction of light or other experimental phenomena on the ground of acquired information, Newton did not meet with any difficulties because he held that the particles of light are different from the generally observed particles.

Christian Huygens, the Dutch mathematician, astronomer and physicist, advanced the wave theory of light. He argued that if light is formed of microscopic particles, the particles of two crossing light beams must get scattered but this does not happen in practice and therefore, the particle theory of light cannot be accepted.

The wave theory of light strongly contrasted the particle theory of Newton. The wave theory at that time was in its infancy and could not explain the straight path of light as consistent with unbendability of the light ray at the edges of doors, windows etc. But after Newton's death the wave theory acquired development and could explain the straight path of light on the ground of the contemporarily prevailing condition that the wavelength of light is so small that its acquired bendability at edges of doors, windows etc. is so scanty as to be negligible in practical life.

A clear shadow of the sharp border of the object is not seen on account of light. But in place of a clear shadow one can see illuminated

and unilluminated lines of a definite pattern inside of the shadow. Such lines were known at the time of Newton also. But the particle theory of light advanced by Newton, could not explain it, while the wave theory could explain it.

A. J. Fresnel (1788–1827) the French physicist developed the wave theory and fully explained all physical phenomena of light that were known at that time.

After a lapse of some years Jean Bornard, Leon Foucault (1819–1868), performed a decisive experiment, gave nearly a death blow to the particle theory and the wave theory came into the lime-light. The experiment proved that the two theories are definitely different.

The velocity of light in vacuum is  $3 \times 10^8$  kms/sec. According to the particle theory of Newton there must be greater velocity of light in water than 3 lakh kms/sec. Foucault measured the velocity of light and showed that it travels more slowly in water i.e., with a velocity less than 3,00,000 kms/sec.

Michael Faraday (1791–1867) gave his opinion that there are some magnetic force-line around the magnet and though they are expanded practically in a limited field, theoretically they can be expanded up to infinite distance, that is why magnet can attract the piece of iron or steel.

Faraday could not arrive at the mathematical accuracy of magnetic field but James Cleark Maxwell (1831–1879), the British physicist took great interest in the magnetic field and expressed Faraday's thoughts in a form of mathematical equations. His contribution in this field is esteemed to be a great work in the 19th century. Elongations occurring in the electromagnetic field according to the technical calculations of Maxwell and the emergence of electromagnetic waves in the electromagnetic field were accepted by all scientists as facts of physics, but experimental evidences were not available. During that period Maxwell studied the properties and measured the velocity of electromagnetic waves and observed that the velocity of electromagnetic waves is equal in amount to the velocity of light. Maxwell's mathematical equations of scientific and technical excellence remained only on paper for a very long time.

In an experiment in a laboratory Heinrich Rudolf Hertz (1857–1894),



the German physicist, succeeded in producing an electromagnetic wave, and studied its velocity and properties, which were exactly in accordance with the calculations of Maxwell. The radiation found out by Hertz was in the form of wave and it exhibited its reflection and refraction also.

Light waves and radio waves are electromagnetic waves. They differ only in wavelength and frequency. The whole universe is managed exactly in accordance with the few mathematical equations of Newtonian mechanics, Maxwell's electromagnetism and thermodynamics. Every physical phenomenon known at that time could be explained by combination of these three sciences. And practically speaking, the struggle between the wave theory and particle theory came to an end here. But in the fundamental experiment performed by Hertz and in the electromagnetic wave that he generated according to Maxwell's mathematical equation, the particle form of light peeped out to him, but it is no wonder the new radiation having been detected, which Hertz or any other scientist might have overlooked. During the experiment performed by Hertz, when ultraviolet rays were thrown upon the instrument that generated sparks, sparks were speedily and easily generated.

Thus the question : "Is light formed of waves or particles?" surfaced again in a new form. Even after Maxwell and Hertz had expounded electromagnetic waves, there was some doubt in the minds of Hertz and Thomson and the doubt was proper. Hertz's doubt was based on the results observed by him in his experiment; while the chief doubt of Thomson was about the 'ultraviolet enigma' which one comes across in the study of radiation of a completely black substance. 'Ultra-violet enigma' means radiation of wave with a small wavelength. The wave theory of light could not explain either of these phenomena. Thus the wave theory of light came to be called in question.

In 1880 A. D. two German scientists named Kirchhoff and Wien carried out their experiments regarding the study of radiation of black substances. With the help of thermodynamics, they explained the wavelength of radiation and the changes operative in its intensity. They could explain the changes operative in the intensity of waves having small wavelength and also the changes in the greatest wavelength but they could not explain the changes operative in the intensity of waves having greater wavelength.

During this period two scientists in Britain, Rayleigh and Jeans by name, carried out their experiments in this field. They obtained sufficiently satisfactory results only with reference to radiation having greater wavelengths. They used Newtonian mechanics, Maxwell's electromagnetism and statistics of Boltzmann. Their study showed that the intensity of radiation of waves of small wavelength was infinite, while experiments showed that the intensity of this radiation was never infinite. Thus there arose a crisis in physics.

In short there must be an error in at least one of the three sciences used by Rayleigh and Jeans (viz. Newtonian mechanics, Maxwell's electromagnetism and Statistics of Boltzmann) or at least one of these three sciences which is not applicable here. Moreover these three sciences were the bases of classical physics. So they concluded that the experimental results were defective and therefore, they frequently carried on experiments. But the results were the same. It was thus established that there was no defect in the experiments.

Thus when the ultraviolet enigma was explained the wave theory completely failed and about that time, Hertz during his experiment saw the particle form of light presenting itself to the view. On the other hand the existence of electromagnetic waves had already been proved in the laboratory. Therefore, again the question cropped up : What constitutes light – waves or particles ? In the beginning of the twentieth century this question gained prominence. In order to be able to answer this question Max Planck (1858–1947) the German physicist, took great exertions. In the beginning after some permutations and commutations in his mathematical calculations, Max planck found out a new equation but could not give derivative proof of it. With the help of this equation 'the ultraviolet enigma' could be sloved, but in order to give a scientifically derivative proof of this equation Max planck had to undergo immense intellactual labour. In the process of solving this equaiton he felt that the principles of classical physics needed to be radically changed. After changing these principles he presented his new principle named the quantum theory to the Berlin Academy of Science in the year 1900 A. D. and the particle theory of light emerged in a new form.

According to the quantum theory originated by Max Planck, the emission

of energy, inconstantly takes place in the form of 'quanta' and for that he offered his equation as under :

$$E_e = nhf, \text{ where } E \text{ denotes energy getting emission.}$$

$n$  denotes 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 and so on i. e. integer numbers.  $h$  is the universal constant of Max planck and  $f$  denotes frequency of radiation.

The value of Planck's constant  $h$  is  $6.624 \times 10^{-34}$  ergs.sec. (Joule.Sec.). Max Planck has named the particles of light as photons. Thus in the process of arriving at the solution of the 'Ultraviolet enigma' with the help of the quantum theory, there arose a contingency for accepting the particle form of light and the question regarding the acceptance of the wave theory and the particle theory stood unsolved as before.

In England Mr. J. J. Thomson found out electrons and in Germany the scientist named Lenard experimentally proved that electrons are emitted if ultraviolet light of definite frequency is incident upon light sensitive surface of metals. i.e. the emission of electrons takes place. This phenomenon is known as photoelectric effect.

In 1905 A.D. Albert Einstein (1879-1955) the physicist born in Germany, presented the special theory of relativity and on the basis of the quantum theory of Max Planck, he carried out his research works. His research work strengthened the quantum theory.

Using the phenomenon of photoelectric effect, Einstein presented the views of Max Planck more revolutionarily and thus he showed more widely the use of the quantum theory. On the other hand since the existence of electromagnetic waves had already been proved in the laboratory, the thought of the wave theory was still on Max Planck's mind. He, therefore, stated that when emission of radiation takes place, it takes place in the form of particles and when it propagates from one point to another, it behaves as a wave. But Einstein stated that the emission of radiation takes place in the from of quanta (particles) and also it propagates from one point to another in the form of quanta (particles). It means that in the phenomenon called photoelectric effect when light in the form of small particles strikes a metal plate, they throw out the electrons separated from the metal. And for the energy of photons connected with the light wave of frequency ' $\nu$ ', he gave the following equation.

$E_{ph} = h\nu$ , where  $E_{ph}$  is the energy of photon,  $h$  is Planck's constant and ' $\nu$ ' is a frequency.

**WAVES** : What are waves and how are they created ? If we ponder on this question with a penetrating intellect, it seems more proper to accept the particle form than the wave form of light and sound. Generally waves are created through some definite medium but they are not created without medium. In science, generally speaking, there are four kinds of waves :

1. **Mechanical Waves** : Mechanical waves are waves travelling in an elastic medium with participation of particles of the medium. The propagation of such waves is due to the elastic property of the medium e.g. waves on string, sound waves moving in air.

2. **Non-Mechanical waves** : Non-mechanical waves of light require no medium for their propagation. The disturbances corresponding to the electric and magnetic fields travel in space. Instead of particles, the electric and magnetic field vectors at all points make oscillations. Hence these waves are called electromagnetic waves.

3. **Transverse Waves** : The waves in which the direction of displacement of particles of the medium, is perpendicular to the direction of propagation of the waves, are called transverse waves. In these waves the highest points on shapes bulging out on the upper side are called crests and those on bulging out on the lower side are called troughs. The light waves are transverse waves.

4. **Longitudinal waves** : The waves in which the direction of displacement of particles of the medium is along the direction of propagation of waves are called longitudinal waves. e.g. Sound waves travelling in air or any other media.

The particles of the fundamental medium of waves can move upwards and downwards in their own definite place but they cannot go from one point to another point of the same medium. In this way they impart kinetic energy to the nearest particles. So it is believed that conduction of energy takes place. But according to Jain philosophical contention no conduction takes place here but, really speaking minute particles move in light waves, sound waves and electromagnetic waves.

De Broglie, the French physicist was awarded the Noble Prize in physics (1929) for his contribution to modern quantum theory. In 1927 he demonstrated by experiments that particles exhibit wave like properties and thus established the field of wave mechanics. With the help of Einstein's theory of relativity he showed that light is in the form of material corpuscle waves. He took it for granted that particles of light (photons) have some mass. Though modern scientists believe that a photon has zero mass, De Broglie showed with a mathematical equation that there is a great similarity between light particles and material particles. With a number of practical proofs he showed that there are photons in light and it is not possible to say that light is not in the form of wave. Both these forms enjoy simultaneous existence.

As in the theory of relativity, energy is connected with matter, so here also we can connect material particles and its mass with energy and frequency of waves. This is as under :

- A material particle has mass.
- Mass is energy. Energy denotes frequency and frequency denotes waves.

Thus De Broglie originated a new theory, the material particle-wave theory. Even an extremely minute particle can behave as a wave. He proved this on the basis of the relativity theory. Physics discussed in Jain Philosophical treatises corroborated the same theory. And regarding material particles and material waves De-Broglie gave a formula as under :

$\lambda = h/mv$ , where  $\lambda$  is wave length,  $m$  is mass of the particle, ' $v$ ' is the velocity of the particle and  $h$  is Planck's constant.

The velocity of particles used in light i.e. photons and of particles used in other electromagnetic waves is definitely 3,00,000 kms/sec. It means that with reference to light and electromagnetic waves there is no change in the value of  $h/c$ . It means that as the mass of a particle increases, the wavelength decreases and as the mass of a particle decreases, the wavelength increases. Here the velocity of the particle is the same therefore the frequency varies as the variation of wavelength. If the wavelength decreases, the frequency increases and if the wavelength increases, the

frequency decreases. And as mentioned the wavelength depends upon the mass of the particle. As the mass of the particle increases the frequency also increases.

According to the Jain principle, here we need to pay special attention to the fact that the mass of particles does not depend upon their own size, but upon the number of the most microscopic particles i.e. paramāṇus. Therefore along with the mass of particles, their volume also should be taken into consideration. If along with the increment in mass, there is corresponding increment in volume, it makes no difference at all. Jain philosophical treatises show that in the space of one unit atom, there might be infinite atoms (paramāṇus). And as the number of paramāṇus (atoms) increases in the space of one unit atom, paramāṇus become smaller and smaller in size and thus they become denser i.e. their volume does not change or increase but their mass increases. If the volume of photon, electron, proton, neutron, quark and other microscopic particles is the same, the mass of photon etc. and other electromagnetic particles must vary according to the variation of their frequency. It means that the transmitters transmit the waves possessing different types of frequency, really they emit microscopic particles having different masses with the velocity of 3,00,000 kms/sec. in all directions. This should be accepted.

This is a strange fact which the common man finds difficult to understand. One finds it difficult to believe that microscopic particles behave like waves. This difficulty arises out of the fact that our minds are preoccupied with the knowledge of pure particles and pure waves. We are familiar with the waves on the surface of water and we know the dynamics of a bullet coming out of a gun.

The experimental proof of the aforesaid equation of De Broglie was arrived at in the year 1925 A.D. While C. J. Dewison-Germer performed experiment in the Bell Telephone Company, a liquid air bottle suddenly burst open and the liquid air splashed upon a red hot piece of nickel and it soiled the surface of the nickel piece. Later on when they performed an experiment on that nickel piece, they found that great changes had taken place in the nickel piece, On account of the accident it was converted into a single crystal and wonderful results came out of these changes. It was observed that electrons were found to be acting in the form of waves and

the wavelength was equal to the wavelength in accordance with De-Broglie's formula  $\lambda = h/mv$

The question therefore arose : "Is an electron a wave or a particle ?" In a number of electric phenomena the electron acts in the form of a particle. In a number of experiments we see its emission from the filament of the valve. We can change its path with the help of electric field and magnetic field. Also its path of motion in the cloud chamber can be seen clearly. In the phenomenon of photoelectric effect, the electron itself acts as a particle and it also compels light to act as a particle.

Thus it is definitely clear that electrons are particles.

Modern physicists perform three experiments for examining the behaviour of electrons :

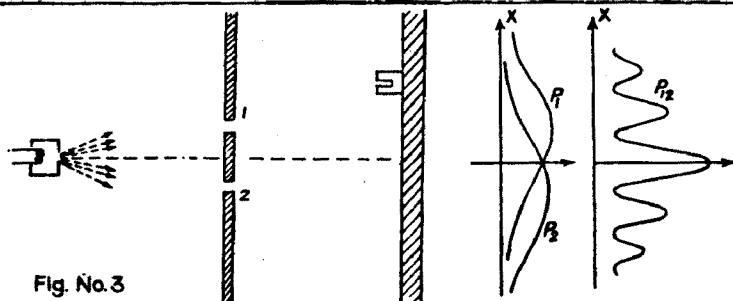
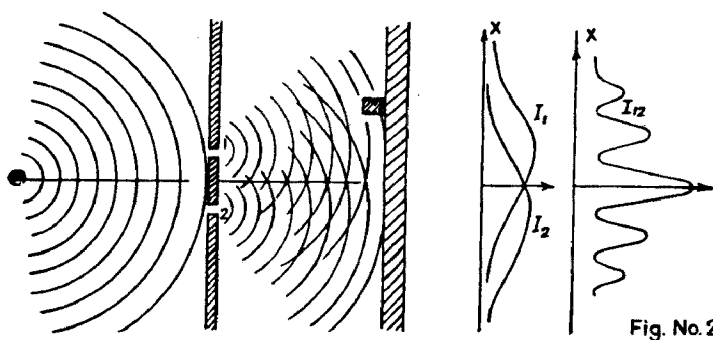
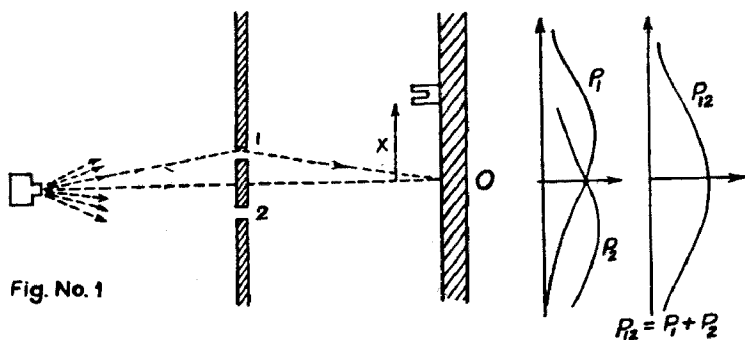
1. The experiment with bullets of gun.
2. The experiment with waves of water.
3. The experiment with electrons.

In the first experiment bullets shooting from the gun at various angles pass through slits No. 1. and 2 of the curtain in front of them, as shown in figure No.1. Slits No. 1 and 2 are so sized that a bullet can easily pass through them and after passing they dash against the wall behind. On this wall there is a detector and the coming bullets are recorded with its help. In this experiment a number of bullets are rapidly shot in quick succession and at enormous speed. It is, therefore, not possible to observe each bullet minutely nor is it possible to notice the hole from which certain bullet passed. On the basis of the principle of probability, we can determine the probability of a certain point on the wall behind at the distance X from the point O. According to the principle of probability :

<p>The probability of the bullets striking at a distance X from the point O =</p>	<p>No. of bullets coming to point X in a definite period.</p> <hr style="border: 0; border-top: 1px solid black; margin: 5px 0;"/> <p>Total No. of bullets coming to the whole wall in the same period.</p>
---	---

This experiment is performed in three stages : The experiment begins, when slit No. 1 and 2 are opened. The results are recorded by the graph in

fig. 1C. The results are wonderful. Since both the slits were opened, the point of maximum probability where the bullets would strike, was not exactly in front of either slit but it was at the central point of the closed portion between the two slits.





In the second stage of the experiment, slit No. 1 is kept opened while slit No. 2 is kept closed. The results of the experiment are shown graphically by the line  $P_1$  in fig. 1B.

In the third stage of the experiment slit No. 1 is kept closed while slit No. 2 is kept opened. The results of the experiment are shown graphically by the line  $P_2$  in fig. 1B.

All the three graphs in figures 1B and 1C, make it very clear that  $P_{1,2} = P_1 + P_2$ .

A similar experiment can be performed on waves, created on the surface of water. As shown in fig. No. 2, an object is placed on the surface of water for producing waves. It is then oscillated upwards and downwards with the help of an electric motor. The position of the object produces circular waves on the surface of the water.

On the right hand side at a small distance from the object, there are two slits whose central line is attached to the surface of water. Behind it there is a detector for detection of waves. It can be moved in the X direction. The detector fully absorbs all the waves falling upon it, and it also measures the intensity of the waves and their amplitude also. This experiment is also performed in three stages :

1. Measuring with a detector, the intensity of waves at different points, while keeping the two slits opened, we get the graph of the results as shown in fig. No. 2C.

2. Measuring with a detector, the intensity of waves at different points, while keeping slit No. 1 closed and slit No. 2 opened, we get the graph of results as shown by the line  $I_2$  in the fig. 2B.

3. Measuring with a detector, the intensity of waves at different points, while keeping slit No. 2 closed and slit No. 1 opened, we get the graph of results as shown by the line  $I_1$ , in the fig. 2B.

Graphs of single slits show similar behaviour of particles and waves, while graphs in which the two slits are opened, show that the behaviour of particles is different from that of waves.

The intensity of waves  $I_{1,2}$  is not obtained by addition of the waves  $I_1$  and  $I_2$ . It means that the effects obtained from the two slits are not

independent of each other. It follows that interference takes place.

The experiment with electrons is as under :

When electrons are emitted from the filament of the heated metal named tungsten they behave like real particles. After emission if they are connected with an electric or magnetic field, their direction of movement can be changed. When they are detected by a detector they create pulses in the detector. fig. No. 3 shows when the same electrons pass through slits, like bullets from the gun, they are detected in No. 1, 2, 3, ... etc.

In spite of all this, it is surprising to observe that experimental results obtained from both slits with reference to electrons and waves are similar to each other.

The experiment shows that the electron behaves in the form of a particle, when one slit is opened. While it behaves in the form of a wave when two slits are opened.

The question : "Is an electron a particle or a wave ?" therefore, remains unsolved from the view point of modern physics. We observe that in spite of being in the form of a particle, the members of the microscopic world, can also behave as waves. This fact can provide a basis for the prospective material - particle - wave theory.

Similarly, the question whether light is in the form of particles or waves also remains unsolved from the view point of modern physics. Such phenomena as interference, polarisation and diffraction with reference to light can be explained only by means of the wave theory, which hopelessly fails to explain the phenomena of photo-electric effect and intensity of radiation.

Therefore the particle theory and the wave theory of light are both acceptable today.

Regarding this Fritjof Capra makes the following statement in his book named '*The Turning Point*' :

*"A few years later, the quantum theory made it clear that even the sub-atomic particles—the electrons and the protons and the neutrons in nucleus – were nothing like the solid subjects of classical physics....*

*They appear sometimes as particles, sometimes as waves and this dual*

*nature is also exhibited by light, which can take the form of electromagnetic waves or particles. The particles of light were first called 'quanta' by Einstein hence the origin of the term 'quantum theory' and they are now known as photons.*

*"This dual nature of matter and of light is very strange. It seems impossible to accept that something can be at the same time, a particle – an entity confined to a very small volume – and wave which is spread out over a large region of space."*

*"An electron is neither a particle nor a wave. It may show particle-like aspects in some situation and wave-like aspects in others. While it behaves like a particle, it is capable of developing its wave nature at the expense of its particle nature and vice versa, thus undergoing continual transformation from particle to wave and from wave to particle."*

**Here comes to an end the history of the particle theory and the wave theory with reference to light from the view point of modern physics.**

Jain scriptures clearly explain this phenomenon. According to them, there are six fundamental eternal elements (dravyas) namely, 1. Jīva i.e. the living element (Ātmā or soul) 2. Dharma i.e. the medium for motion 3. Adharma i.e. the medium for rest 4. Ākāśa i.e. space 5. Pudgala i.e. matter 6. Kāla i.e. Time. Out of these six dravyas Dharma, Adharma and Ākāśa are formless. They do not have properties of shape, odour, taste, touch and colour. Living together with pudgala, the soul attains a concrete form. But the pure soul is formless i.e. colourless and shapeless. Jain philosophers regard Kāla (time) as a dravya and this is a distinct feature of Jain philosophy. Kāla is also formless but its existence can be inferred from its functions.

In short, every object in the whole universe, whether it is microscopic or macroscopic, visible or invisible, perceptible or imperceptible, is either a pudgala or a soul living in contact with pudgala (matter). And the minutest particles of pudgala which can never be divided into more particles in any of the three phases of time, (i.e. the past, the present and the future.) is called a paramāṇu (ultimate atom). A combination of these minutest particles (paramāṇus) can constitute any object in the universe. A pudgala has infinite energy. A pure soul also has infinite energy. But the great

contradiction between the two is that the energy of a soul is self-controlled, while the energy of a pudgala is controlled by a living being. Every paramāṇu of a pudgala has colour, smell, taste and touch (tangibility) and they are the characteristics of a pudgala. Wherever one experiences colour, smell etc. by means of sense organs, aggregates of paramāṇus have to be present there. Every object is essentially pudgalic (material). These objects are sometimes so insignificant that their colour, taste, smell and touch are not perceptible to sense organs, but their existence cannot be denied on that ground; e.g. though ultraviolet rays and infra-red rays cannot be perceived by our eyes, their effect is received on photographic plates.

In the wake of progress in physics it becomes all the more significant to know whether light consists of rays or particles. Are the objects known to classical physics as waves, really waves or are they particles ? If they are really in the form of particles, why is it that they behave like waves ? This needs to be explained. Different types of waves – rays of visible or invisible light, sound waves of different wavelengths, ultrasonic waves of very high frequency and infrasonic of very low frequency, which are not audible and electromagnetic waves of different frequency and different wavelengths, which are useful in broadcasting radio signals and television signals and signals of other transmitters are known to classical physics. Are all these rays in the form of waves or particles ? This is a very important question of modern physics and we shall try to find its solution.

Jain scriptures state that Śabda (sound), Andhakāra (darkness), Udyōta (cooling, soothing light i.e. moonlight), Ātapa (hot light i.e. sunlight), Prabhā (irregular spread reflection, interference etc. of light) are modifications of prime matter. All the aforesaid phenomena are constituted of microscopic particles (paramāṇus) of matter. In the fifth chapter of Tattvārtha Sūtra, Umāsvāti, while defining pudgala (the prime matter) says - pūrayanti galayanti iti pudgalāḥ (पूरयन्ति गलयन्ति इति पुद्गलाः). In pudgala (the prime matter) the process of splitting i.e. fission and combination i.e. fusion of particles is ever going on. No object remains in the same condition forever. e.g. There are billions of cells in our body. Lakhs of them are destroyed every moment and they are replaced by nearly as many newly created cells.

In atomic physics the process of fission and fusion is the best examples

of splitting and combination of particles. Both these processes need energy. In certain circumstances fusion produces atomic power and in others fission produces atomic power.

Uranium, radium etc. used in atomic process emit three types of rays namely alpha ( $\alpha$ ), Beta ( $\beta$ ), and Gamma ( $\gamma$ ). These rays are nothing but shower of particles of a particular kind. An oscilloscope produces their trace on the screen. Particles of alpha rays are like nuclei of Helium atoms, Beta rays contain electrons and Gamma rays are like particles of light and as we have seen the rays of light are also forms of particles which are called photons.

The description of types of paramāṇu-units in Jain scriptures also support this theory. There are infinite types of Vargaṇās in the universe but there are only eight classified types of Vargaṇās which are useful to living beings. Their names are as under :

1. Audārika Vargaṇā 2. Vaikriya Vargaṇā 3. Āhāraka Vargaṇā 4. Taijas Vargaṇā 5. Bhāṣā Vargaṇā 6. Śvāsōcchvāsa Vargaṇā 7. Manō Vargaṇā 8. Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā.

Vargaṇā' are groups of paramāṇus and each unit of it has a certain paramāṇus number. Paramāṇu-units of Audārika Vargaṇā possesses infinite number of paramāṇus— All fundamental particles such as eletron, proton, neutron, positron, neutrino, quark and so many others that scientists have discovered belong to the Audārika Vargaṇā.

Of the eight types of Vargaṇās we here confine our discussion to Taijas Vargaṇā and Bhāṣā Vargaṇā. Different types of electromagnetic waves and light waves are paramāṇu-units of Taijas Vargaṇā and sound waves are paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā.

More description and explanation is given in Jain tretises like कर्मप्रकृति, पञ्चसङ्ग्रह, आचारांगटीका etc.

It is very pertinent here to study how sound is created and how it propagates in the universe. The fourth chapter named Bhāṣā-Jāta of the second part of the Ācārāṅga, the sacred Jain Āgama (canonical book) states that sound (Bhāṣā ) has four varieties :

1. Utpatti-Jāta, 2. Paryava-Jāta 3. Antara-Jāta and 4. Grahaṇa-Jāta.

1. A living being takes paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā and releases those after converting them into words Bhāṣā. This is called Utpatti-Jāta.

2. If paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā released according to the above-mentioned process collide with other paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā that are in a order or disorder of series around the source of sound and convert them into sound, this newly converted sound is called Paryava-Jāta.

3. If paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā released according to Utpatti-Jāta process, collide with other paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā that are in a series around the source of sound and convert them into sound, these newly converted paramāṇu-units of sound are called Antara-Jāta.

4. Whether they are in an order of series or in a disorder of series, some of the paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā get converted into sound and then they enter the hole of the ear and affect the hearing centre in the mind. They are called Grahaṇa Jāta.

These paramāṇu-units, called Grahaṇa Jāta have infinite space-points (pradēśas). (One pradēśa means the volume of space occupied by a single separate paramāṇu). They occupy space consisting of innumerable pradēśas. The life-span of these paramāṇu-units consists of countless SAMAYAS. In Jain philosophy SAMAYA is the extremely minute unit of time. Even though it seems impossible to calculate how many SAMAYAS make a second, Śrī Nandlal Jain has calculated that one second contains approximately a minimum number of  $10^{380}$  to  $10^{500}$  SAMAYAS. These paramāṇu-units have different types of colour, smell, touch and taste.

Paramāṇu-units of sound that do not enter the ear, dissolve either in the original paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā or into other types of paramāṇu-units.

The modern well established classical physics fully accepts the theory that sound is in the form of waves. But according to the logical viewpoint of Jain philosophy, sound is composed of particles.

The propagation, reflection, defraction, interference and other phenomena of sound being the subject-matter of a separate research article, we do not discuss them here.

We return to our original question whether light and electromagnetic waves which have a velocity 3,00,000 kms/sec. are absolutely in the form of waves or particles.

Max Planck says that energy (light) is emitted in the form of quanta but it propagates in the form of waves. Einstein states that emission and propagation of light are both in the form of quanta. He calls them photons.

As a matter of fact, light is composed of minute particles and it propagates in the form of particles. According to Jain philosophy, even photons are composed of infinite and extremely microscopic particles i.e. paramāṇus. When they propagate, they rotate like a cricket ball or a ball-bearing. Those who play or watch the game of cricket, know that the bowler continuously polishes one side of the ball to make it smooth. And there is a scientific reason for it. Being polished the surface on one side of the ball becomes smooth, while the surface on another side of the ball is comparatively rough. When the bowler throws this ball, air passes fast by the smooth surface and less friction is produced and so the resistance of air decreases. But air passes slowly by the rough surface and more friction is produced and so the resistance of air increases. On account of unequal resistance, the ball diverts to the direction of greater resistance. The bowler throws inswinger and outswingers. There are inswing and outswing types of bowling in cricket.

Similarly since photons are composed of innumerable paramāṇus, when they propagate with a velocity of 3,00,000 kms/sec. they resist other particles which are more microscopic than photons and therefore, they again and again divert from their original path into two opposite directions and they seem to behave like a wave. Their diversion is caused by unequal (smooth and rough) surfaces and resistance. Unequal mass can also cause their diversion. If there is greater mass on one side and less mass on another side of photon particles, they can behave like a wave.

Thus though light and other electromagnetic waves are in the form of particles, they seem to propagate in the form of waves. The distance between the two points in a straight line where light particles divert from its path in same side is called wavelength. The distance of displacement of photons on two sides of its original straight path is called amplitude.

The number of diversions of a photon from its straight path in one second is called its frequency.

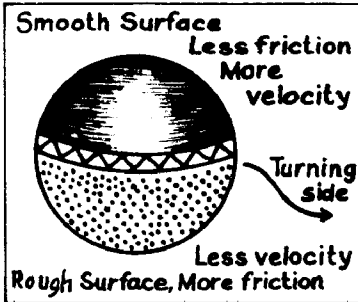


Fig No. 4

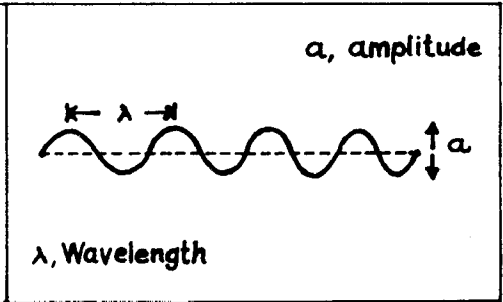


Fig No. 5

Frequency, wavelength and amplitude of light waves depend on types of photon differing, according to the number of paramāṇus, they have.

Photons of all types of visible and invisible light rays may be considered as the Taijas Vargaṇā. Taijas means light or electricity. Since all electromagnetic waves are created with electricity, they also belong to Taijas Vargaṇā. And where there is electricity, there are positive and negative electric charges. An electric current gives rise to magnetic field when it passes through steel. In short electricity and magnetism are so closely interconnected that they cannot be separated.

Paramāṇu-units of all electromagnetic waves may be considered as Taijas Vargaṇā, while paramāṇu-units of all sound waves, may be considered as Bhāṣā Vargaṇā.

Sound waves bend because paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā have a very low velocity of 330 metres/sec. Light waves and electromagnetic waves having velocity as high as 3,00,000 kms/sec. do not bend because particles of light (photons) and those of electromagnetic waves can propagate through atmosphere and outer space consisting of paramāṇu-units which consist of particles of smaller size and less mass.

Though the paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā are useful for propagation of sound, they consist of many more paramāṇus than the units of Taijas Vargaṇā or units of electromagnetic waves. Since the velocity of particles of units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā is  $1.1 \times 10^{-9}$  times less than that of photons,



when propagating particles of Bhāṣā collide with other paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā, and convert them into sound and get reflected. When the velocity of paramāṇu-units of sound rises, with the help of electromagnetic force to the velocity of electricity, paramāṇu-units of sound, too, propagate in a straight direction.

On the basis of all these scientific facts and on the basis of physics discussed and described in Jain scriptures, we can conclude that paramāṇus dominate the whole universe and these microscopic particles while retaining their particle form, can behave like a wave. Contrarily to what Fritjof Capra says, their waveform is not created on destruction of their particle form nor does their particle form come into existence on destruction of their wave form. In short, when they are stationary, particles are in the form of particles. When they propagate they are perceived like a wave. But the wave form of particles can be never seen.

I end this paper with an appeal to research scholars to explore the vast ocean of precious gems of knowledge lying hidden in oriental scriptures and assimilate them with modern science in the larger interest of human welfare.



THE CONNECTION BETWEEN PHYSICS AND MYSTICISM IS NOT ONLY  
VERY INTERESTING BUT ALSO EXTREMELY  
IMPORTANT.....MYSTICISM IS, ABOVE ALL, AN EXPERIENCE  
THAT CANNOT BE LEARNED FROM BOOKS.

FRITJOF CAPRA

## 4. Intensity Of Light

**W**ith regards to light as generally believed by all scientists, we also accept that the intensity of light depends upon the number of photons.

Intensity of any kind of radiation depends upon the number of incident particles i.e. photons per unit area per unit time. As the distance between the source of light and light receiving surface increases, intensity decreases with a proportion to be reciprocal of the distance square because the number of photons received by that surface decreases. It is denoted as follows.

$I \propto 1/d^2$  {Where I is intensity and 'd' is distance between source of light and light receiving surface}

$\therefore I = K/d^2$  {Where K is constant for the same source of light and it denotes total number of photons per unit time emitted by a source and it depends upon emissive power of the metal}.

$\therefore I = \frac{n}{t} \times \frac{1}{d^2}$  ( $K = n/t$ , n depends upon emissive power and light-velocity  
 $n = e \sigma c$ )

$I = \frac{e \sigma c}{t \cdot d^2}$  (Where e depends upon an area of emitting surface,  $\sigma =$  *Nandighosh* constant and its unit may be joule.sec/meter.  $c =$  velocity of light.  $d =$  distance between the source of light and light receiving surface)

But photons are scattered in all directions, the number of photons per unit area decreases with proportion to  $1/4\pi r^2$ . Here  $r = d$ .

$$\therefore I = \frac{e \sigma c}{4 \pi t d^2} \text{ OR } \frac{e \sigma c}{4 \pi t r^2}$$

If either a source of light or a light receiving surface is in motion and they come nearer to each other, their velocity becomes negative then  $r = d - v \cdot t$ , where d is an initial distance between the source of light and light

receiving surface. And if they go far apart from each other then  $r = d + v \cdot t$

$$\therefore I = e \sigma c / 4 \pi t (d \pm v t)^2$$

This formula can be used only for direct light but not for reflected and concentrated light. Doppler's effect can easily be known by this formula.

In this formula 'e' does not depend only upon the area of light emitting body but it also depends upon the specific resistance of metal., length of filament and area of a cross section of the filament and it can be determined from the following formula of electricity.

In electricity, intensity of light depends upon the watt of a bulb. e. g. Light intensity of 40 Watt bulb is more than 25 Watt bulb, in the same way light intensity of 60 watt bulb is more than that of 40 watt bulb. In short as watt increases intensity increases.

But  $W = I^2 R$  (Where  $W$  = watts.  $I$  = current in amp. and  $R$  = Resistance in ohms ) and  $R = \delta l / a$  (Where  $R$  = Resistance,  $\delta$  = Specific Resistance of metal,  $l$  = length of filament in cms.,  $a$  = area of a cross section of filament in square cms. )

Suppose in case of electric bulbs of same company, a specific resistance of tungston metal and area of a cross section of the filament might be same forever then  $R$ , resistance is directly variable with length of filament. Therefore, as length of filament increases resistance increases and with the increment in length of filament watt also increases, if there will not be any change in current  $I$ . But, in practice, it is not possible.

Absolute temperature has not been considered here because, it affects only on the frequency of each photon.



---

---

## 5. New Concepts About Doppler's Effect

Indian philosophical treatises are composed by ancient saints with minute and extra-sensory knowledge, which are completely scientific and true. More than 2500 years later they are able to give a solution of modern scientific problems.

According to Jain philosophy sound, darkness, light, shadow, and aura are absolutely the modifications of matter. And according to Jainism the most micro and completely indivisible particle of matter is called atom. Though the definition of atom in modern physics and in oriental philosophical scriptures is the same yet their concepts are quite different from each other.

Oriental concepts about light and sound are able to solve all difficulties or problems of modern physics.

Today, I am mentioning new concepts about Doppler's Effect in case of light.

According to Special Theory of Relativity, Einstein gave a formula for the frequency of moving luminous objects as follows :  $f' = f \frac{1 - \cos\theta v/c}{\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}}$

Where  $f'$  denotes resultant frequency for moving bodies,  $f$  denotes frequency when the body is at rest,  $v$  and  $c$  are the velocities of moving bodies and light respectively.

This is Doppler's principle for all velocities. When  $\theta = 0$  the equation assumes the perspicuous form  $f' = f \sqrt{\frac{1 - v/c}{1 + v/c}}$

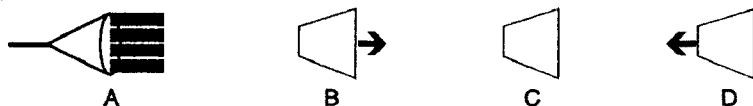
If here velocity of source of light is  $-c$  i.e.  $v = -c$ , it means ray of light and source of light have equal velocities in the forward direction. Then

$f' = \infty$  and hence according to  $E = nhf$ , energy becomes infinite and wavelength becomes zero.

And if  $v = c$ , i.e. the source of light and the light-approached the surface go far apart from each other with a velocity  $c$ . If the approaching surface is steady then the source of light goes far and far from it. Therefore

according to the equation  $f' = f \sqrt{\frac{1-v/c}{1+v/c}} = f \frac{0}{\sqrt{2}} = 0$ , the resultant frequency becomes zero, wavelength becomes infinite and energy becomes zero i.e. photon will remain steady or motionless.

Suppose for the Doppler's Effect, the situation is as follows:



A is a source of light which is steady and B, C and D are the objects from which B has velocity  $+v$  i.e. it goes far from source of light A, with a velocity  $v$ , C is steady and D has velocity  $-v$ , i.e. it comes nearer to the source of light.

Now according to Einstein's equation, frequency of the same photons of the same source of light is different for B, C and D objects. For the object B frequency of photon decreases, while for the D object frequency of the same photon increases, at the same time for object C, it remains constant, What a strange situation it is !

Though this is mathematically true yet in practical life and logically it is not appropriate or proper.

Actually, in Doppler's Effect frequency or the energy of each photon remains the same forever. It is not variable according to the velocity of either source of light or light approaching surface because the source of light emits photons which have always equal or the same energy and the frequency is either steady or it moves in the forward or the reverse direction.

Intensity of light or any radiation depends only on the number of photons approaching the unit area of surface per unit time. And therefore the velocity of either the source of light to the approaching surface or the approaching surface to the source of light, increases the intensity of that light. And if they are going far apart from each other, intensity of that light

decreases because the number of photons per unit area per unit time decreases.

A total energy per unit area does not only depend upon frequency of each photon but also it depends upon number of photons per unit area per unit time. Hence, if intensity increases total energy also increases.

Actually in modern physics, according to Jainism (Jain philosophy) and according to my opinion, frequency is absolutely imaginary. Only the particles of sound or light or electromagnetic waves travel in space and their path is serpentine or zig-zag. When they are at rest, there is no frequency, no energy. Only when they are in motion, they have imaginary frequency depending on their serpentine paths and energy depending on their velocity, that might be equal to Newtonian Mechanics  $K.E = \frac{1}{2}mv^2$  or  $\frac{1}{2}mc^2$ . Where  $m$  is the rest mass of photon. Though scientists of modern age believe that photon has zero rest mass yet in calculation of momentum  $p = mv$ , ( $p = mc$ ), they consider that a photon has rest mass.

Photoelectric effect also proves that the photons are in the form of the most micro particles. And the following words of the scientists G. Heber and G. Weber say that a photon can be divided into 1 electron and 1 positron.

*"We only mention the transformation of a photon into 1 electron and 1 positron, the reciprocal process, the manifold transformations among the mesons and transformations from mesons to electrons, photons and neutrons."*

Solar deflection of star light is also able to prove that photons have some mass.

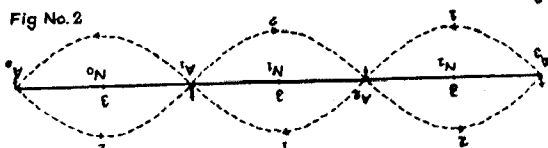
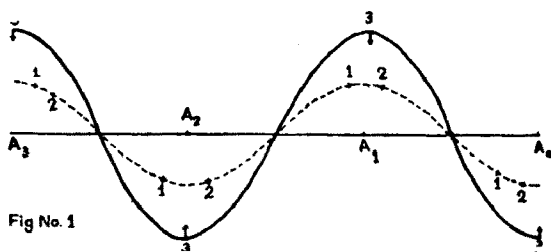


## 6. New Concepts

### About Interference of Light

In modern physics, the phenomenon of interference has unique importance and according to the opinion of scientists of modern age it could be explained only by the acceptance of the wave theory of light. On the other hand, the phenomenon of photoelectric effect could be explained only with the help of the corpuscle theory or the particle theory. Hence all the scientists of modern age accept the dual nature of light and they also believe that the subatomic particles like electrons, protons, neutrons etc. also have a dual nature, similar to that of light.

On the other hand Jain physics or Jain philosophy absolutely accepts light in the form of corpuscles and according to my opinion it is absolutely true. Therefore, in this article, I give an explanation of the phenomenon of interference of light with the help of the corpuscle theory only. Of course, when light, all the electromagnetic waves and also all subatomic particles, propagate in space, their path is serpentine or zigzag similar to that of waves. Thus there is no difficulty about acceptance of the corpuscle theory of light.



$$P.D. = 0, \lambda, 2\lambda, \dots$$

$$P.D. = \frac{\lambda}{2}, \frac{3\lambda}{2}, \dots$$

According to the wave theory of modern physics, when two waves from coherent sources superpose each other, the phenomenon of interference takes place. In this phenomenon if the path difference between the two

waves, that are superposed on each other is  $0, \lambda, 2\lambda, 3\lambda, \dots, n\lambda$  then the crest of one wave falls on the crest of the other wave and also trough of one wave falls on the trough of the other wave and as a result constructive interference takes place. If the path difference between two waves is  $\frac{\lambda}{2}, \frac{3\lambda}{2}, \frac{5\lambda}{2}, \dots, (2n-1)\frac{\lambda}{2}$  then crest of one wave falls on the trough of the other wave and in same way the trough of one wave also falls on the crest of the other wave and as a result destructive interference takes place.

According to modern physics the intensity of light or waves depends upon the amplitude of waves. It is directly proportional to the amplitude. i.e. If amplitude ( $a$ ) increases, intensity increases and if amplitude decreases, intensity also decreases. In the phenomenon of constructive interference, amplitude of resultant wave on account of superposition of one wave on another wave becomes double, and intensity of a wave is directly proportional to the square of its amplitude.

$$I \propto a^2 \quad (I \text{ denotes intensity, } a \text{ denotes amplitude})$$

$$\therefore I' \propto (2a)^2 \quad (I' \text{ denotes resultant intensity})$$

$$\therefore I' \propto 4a^2$$

$$\therefore I' = 4 I \quad (\text{as } a^2 = I)$$

According to this equation the intensity of the resultant wave in constructive interference becomes four times greater than the original single wave intensity and it is the maximum intensity of resultant wave.

While in destructive interference the resultant amplitude of the resultant wave becomes zero, hence the resultant intensity also becomes zero.

In Young's experiment, there is an illuminated slit in screen A as shown in fig, No. 3 which emits spherical waves. In the second screen there are two slits having equal distance from the slit of first screen A. They act as the coherent sources. The waves, having the same frequency, the same amplitude and the same wavelength, passing through both slits  $S_1$  and  $S_2$  superpose each other and produce interference. In fig, No. 3, dark lines show the crests of both waves coming from slit No. 1 and Slit No. 2. While dotted lines show the troughs of both waves, coming from both slits. We can see from the figure that when a crest of one wave falls on the crest of the other wave or a trough of one wave falls on the trough of the



other wave, a constructive interference takes place and both are denoted by small circles. In the same way when the crest of one wave falls on the trough of another wave or a trough of one wave falls on the crest of the other wave, destructive interference takes place and both are denoted by dark points. By putting a screen in the path of these superposed waves, we get bright fringes on the screen in the straight lines of small circles showing constructive interference of light and dark fringes on the screen, in the straight lines of dark points showing destructive interference.

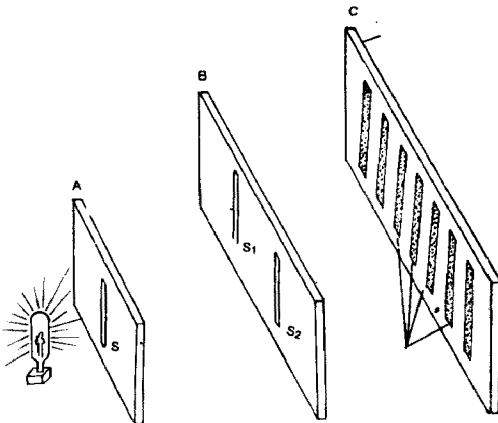
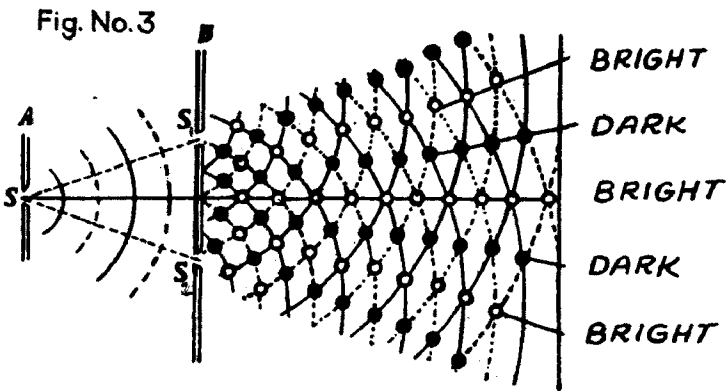


Fig.No.4

Now I am giving an explanation of interference, with the help of corpuscle theory according to Jainism.

In the phenomenon of interference when both the slits are opened, the photons pass through both the slits in very large numbers simultaneously i.e. at a same time. According to the wave theory when along straight lines of interactions of crest with crest and trough with trough of both waves created by both slits, bright fringes are formed on the screen and along straight lines of interactions of crest with trough and trough with crest of each other, dark fringes are formed as shown above.

When the crest of one photon interacts the crest of another photon or a trough of one photon interacts a trough of another photon, there is a collision between the photon particles that are coming from two separate slits at the same time with the same frequency, amplitude and wavelength. Hence after collision, both photons propagate in the direction of resultant vector according to the law of parallelogram. It is denoted by the following equation.

$$\vec{e} = \vec{E} \sin (\omega t - Kr), \text{ where } K = 2\pi/\lambda \text{ is a wave vector. Of course both}$$

the photons have the same energy and the same mass after and before the collision and they do not interact with each other and therefore only the intensity of light increases. Law of conservation of mass, energy and momentum can also be applicable to this phenomenon, though scientists believe that photons have no mass.

While in the interactions of the crest of one photon with the trough of the second photon or a trough of one photon with the crest of the second photon, both photons do not collide with each other and they pass through without changing the direction of the other photon. But these same photons change their directions, when their crests fall on the crests of other photons or their troughs fall on the troughs of other photons. As a result along the straight lines, showing the interactions of the crest of one photon with the trough of the other photon, photons will be absent and, therefore such type of interactions form the fringes of darkness.

As aforementioned, according to modern physics, intensity of light in constructive and destructive interference depends upon the amplitude of the resultant wave. In case of constructive interference it becomes four

times greater than the original single wave and in destructive interference it becomes zero. According to Jain physics as I have shown in the articles 'Intensity of Light' and 'New Concepts About Doppler's Effect', intensity of light depends only upon the number of photons per unit area, per unit time. Here, in the constructive and destructive interference, it is applicable.

According to modern physics a distance between two consecutive bright fringes is  $\bar{x} = \frac{\lambda D}{d}$  and a distance between two consecutive dark fringes is also  $\bar{x} = \frac{\lambda D}{d}$ . It means that the area in which the photons are incident becomes half the original area and all the photons coming from both slits, fall on this half area. Hence the number of photons become double and area becomes half. As a result the number of photons per unit area per unit time becomes four times greater than that of a single wave coming from any single slit.

Here the intensity of bright fringes formed due to constructive interference becomes four times greater than the intensity of single wave coming from the single slit and the intensity of dark fringes becomes zero due to destructive interference.

Thus the most important phenomenon called interference can be interpreted with the help of corpuscle theory only.



THE GENERAL NOTIONS ABOUT HUMAN UNDERSTANDING.... WHICH ARE ILLUSTRATED BY DISCOVERIES IN ATOMIC PHYSICS ARE NOT IN THE NATURE OF THINGS WHOLLY UNFAMILIAR, WHOLLY UNHEARD OF, OR NEW..... WHAT WE SHALL FIND IS AN EXEMPLIFICATION, AN ENCOURAGEMENT, AND A REFINEMENT OF OLD WISDOM.

JULIUS ROBERT OPPENHEIMER *SCIENCE AND THE COMMON UNDERSTANDING* P.8-9

---

---

## 7.Black-holes: Imaginary Ideas Of Their Structure

In the boundless universe our earth is nothing more than a mere point. For those who live on the earth, the earth is, however, their all in all. Man's curiosity is so strong that since centuries he has been making efforts to know the earth, its location and importance with reference to the whole universe. As new researches are made in science, various kinds of new problems arise. Sometimes they make the structure of the universe more complex rather than simple and more confusions are created.<sup>1</sup>

Through the progress of the modern physics, through its modern instruments and through the radio telescope (whose function is to find out unfamiliar space objects moving in the boundless space and give information about their structure), the horizons of astrophysics go on expanding. With their expansion, it is now high time, we dismissed the old concepts of Einstein.

According to the modern physics, there are three main elements in this universe 1. Space, 2. Time and 3. Matter. They alone are thought of everywhere in the physics. Of course, he who thinks of these elements is himself an important constituent element of the universe. In Jain terminology, it is called the living element, soul. But no thought is given to it in the physics because it is non-materialistic. The physics has not been able to give any definite description of it or to make any research on it. Therefore, it has been kept aside, In the whole universe, search is being made for matter.

Nearly in the decade 1971 to 1980 A.D. an influence was drawn with the help of a radio-telescope that there were black-holes in the distant deep regions of the universe because from a particular direction, some special kinds of signals were received on the radio-telescope. But with the help of the usual powerful telescope, nothing except a black point was seen in the region. The scientists, therefore, named the black point which was the source of the signals received on the radio-telescope, as the black-hole and they started making inferences about its structure. Of course, they made the inferences according to the principles of the physics.

For the common man, the structure of the black-holes was very impressive. Even so, the black-holes were for them nothing more than a mere imaginary science fiction, a cosmic picture-story or a newish subject-matter of making feature-films.

Modern scientists believe that the black-holes have a very strong gravitational force and even light cannot escape from their gravitational force and that is the reason why they cannot be seen.

This inference of scientists is based on scientific principles and their mathematics.<sup>2</sup> According to their inference, stars which have as much mass as nearly ten times the mass of the sun of our solar system and which are in very distant and deep regions of the boundless universe become supernovae at the end of their life-span. In other words when they cannot bear their own internal pressure - attraction and repulsion - they burst out with a tremendous explosion and then on account of tremendous pressure of their own gravitational force, they go on contracting and became so small that compared to the whole universe which is as expansive as thousands of millions of light-years, their volume is reduced to the point of negligibility. The volume of the stars having as much mass as ten times the mass of the sun of our solar system is reduced to the diameter of only 60 kilometres.<sup>3</sup> For that reason, its gravitational force rises tremendously and it soon begins to attract all the surrounding objects to itself and gulps down all that comes to it. It again absorbs even the light emitted by the same supernovae i.e. itself. As an object, a stone, a ball etc. tossed from the earth, returns to the earth, to the centre of the earth by its gravitational force, so the light emitted by the contracted supernovae star, is again absorbed in the centre. Moreover, it does not allow the reflection of the light that falls on it from other external illuminated objects. As a result, those stars cannot be seen. Only something like black points are seen in the direction. That is the reason why they are called black-holes.

We are all familiar with the concept of escape velocity, i.e. velocity to escape from gravitational force. If a small stone is tossed from the surface of the Mars to the phobos, the satellite or moon of the Mars with the force and velocity with which it is tossed from earth-surface to space, it reaches its orbit or goes up 9000 kilometres high in the orbit of the phobos, the satellite of the Mars and become a satellite of the Mars because the gravitational force of the moon phobos of the Mars, is so slight that there, the velocity to escape from

its gravitational force, is only 5 metres/sec.<sup>4</sup>

If an artificial satellite of the earth which is set moving in space, moves only at the velocity of 8 km/sec., the centripetal gravitational force and centrifugal force caused by the velocity of the artificial satellite can counter-balance and the satellite can keep moving in the orbit.<sup>5</sup> Otherwise, it is attracted downwards by gravitational force of the earth. This applies to artificial satellites set in the lower orbit.

But if, for example, a motor-cyclist increases his speed beyond a certain limit, he can make his motor-cycle jump from one bank of a river to the other. Similarly, if the speed of rocket carrying a satellite in space, rises to a certain limit or beyond it, it can get free from gravitational force of the earth. The minimum velocity required for getting free from gravitational force of the earth is called escape velocity. For the objects on the earth, it is at least 11.2 km/second. This escape velocity of any planet, star or space object can be easily calculated.<sup>6</sup>

The escape velocity of our moon, is 2.4 km/sec.. The escape velocity of the sun is 620 km/second. The stars which have a greater density and are known among scientists as white dwarfs have escape velocity of thousands of kilometres per second.<sup>7</sup>

As the mass of space object increases, its escape velocity increases. It is also necessary to note that if the mass is constant, the escape velocity of a space object with a smaller radius or diameter is greater than the escape velocity of space object with a greater radius or diameter. In short, the mass being constant, the escape velocity of a space object increases as its radius becomes smaller.<sup>8</sup>

It is on the basis of this plain and simple, intelligible principle of escape velocity that modern scientists make inference about black-holes and explain them. It is since the time of observation of the satellite of Jupiter made by Olais Roemer in 1676 A.D. that the velocity of light believed to be 3,00,000 km/sec. It is therefore, very easy to guess that some stars/objects in space have such a great mass that on their surface, their escape velocity is greater even than the velocity of light.<sup>9</sup>

In his article which John Michell presented to the Royal Society in 1783 A.D. and which was later published in the Philosophical Transection, he wrote

that if the density or mass of the sun is kept constant and if its diameter is halved, it is reduced to 500th part of its size. In these circumstances, if an object is sent to the sun from infinite distance, it gains a greater velocity even than light before it reaches the surface of the sun. As a result, light is also attracted to the sun with the same force and all the light emitted by the object is again absorbed by it by force of gravitation. Later on, only after a few years, in 1796 A.D. Pierre Simon, the mathematician and astronomist and Marquis de Laplace made a similar note in their essay entitled *'Exposition due System du monde.'*<sup>10</sup> It means that the inference regarding black-holes was made 200 years ago. But these concepts of Michell and Laplace were altogether forgotten till Einstein searched and developed his General Theory of Relativity because nobody knew about this kind of contraction of physical objects in space and on the other hand, the inference of black-holes was based only on the Newton's principle that light is constituted of material particles. Contrarily, Newton's theory of particles with reference to light came to be rejected and scientists accepted wave-form of light. Moreover, they accepted that gravitational force of an object had no effect on light-waves, whereas the effect of gravitational force was the main thing in the concepts of John Michell and Laplace.

In 1911 A.D. when Einstein was a Professor in the Prague University, he for the first time, calculated the effects of gravitational force of space objects on light-waves. In 1914 A.D. at the time of the total solar eclipse, Einstein tested the results, he had obtained. But since the first World War declared in those days, the subsequent research work had to be cancelled. It was good for Einstein because Einstein's theory at that time was not sound and his calculations were also faulty.<sup>11</sup>

But in the weekly *'Berliner Berichte'* published on the 4th, the 11th, the 18th and the 25th of November, 1915 A.D., Einstein fully explained the *'General Theory Of Relativity.'*<sup>12</sup> According to the General Theory Of Relativity, on account of gravitational force of space object like the Sun which have a tremendous mass, their surrounding space contracts and curves and that is why the ray of light that passes near by it, attracts towards that massive object i.e. it slightly deflects from its straight path. This is called Solar Deflection of Star-light.

In short, the tremendous gravitational force of the sun has an indirect effect

on the rays of light of distant stars. This is what Einstein said. On 29th May, 1919 A.D. at the time of the total solar eclipse, the deflection of rays of light passing by the sun near Sobral in Brazil was measured and it accorded with calculations shown by Einstein.<sup>13</sup>

Einstein announced his research in November, 1915 A.D. Only a month later Karl Schwarzschild, the German Physicist calculated the area of the gravitational force of a globe in vacuum.<sup>14</sup> And on the basis of it, the idea of invisible stars presented by Michell and Laplace in 1796 A.D. again enthused scientists.

Space objects which have a greater mass than that of our sun, can be divided into three categories. Some objects contract and become white dwarfs. Some objects become neutron stars and some become black-holes.

Dr Subramanyam Chandrashekhar, the Indian astrophysicist, presented a research paper in 1931 A.D. and stated that since the objects which have a greater mass than  $1.4 M_{\odot}$  (1.4 solar mass), cannot bear their own internal gravitational force, they begin to contract and are reduced to a small bright star which is called a white dwarf. The white dwarf has no greater mass than  $1.4 M_{\odot}$  and in size it is almost as big as the earth.<sup>15</sup> But neutron stars are very small and sometimes they are of a diameter of only 20 kilometres.<sup>16</sup> Regarding the mass of neutron stars, there are different beliefs. According to some, it has a mass of  $0.7 M_{\odot}$  at the most. According to others, a neutron star has a mass of  $2.2 M_{\odot}$  at the most. According to Shipman, it has a mass of  $3.0 M_{\odot}$  at the most.<sup>17</sup>

According to some, objects which have a mass up to  $10 M_{\odot}$ , become supernovae, contract and are changed into black-holes. According to some, stars with a mass of  $10 M_{\odot}$  are changed into neutron stars. Before it becomes a black-hole, the mass of the star is greater than  $3 M_{\odot}$  and its extreme size is as big as that of a Neutron Star.<sup>18</sup>

The ancient history has also recorded some supernovae events. In the present times also, while Ian Shelton, the astronomer was observing space from his observatory at Las Companas, he saw a star becoming supernovae in the direction in which he was making observation. This supernovae was seen in the galaxy known as Magellanic Cloud. By a telegram he immediately communicated this to the International Astronomical Union.<sup>19</sup> This is the first



recorded case of a supernovae seen with a naked eyes. The supernovae star itself contracts in course of time and becomes a black-hole.

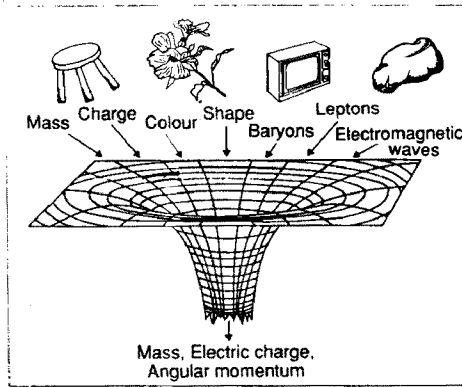


Figure 1 The black hole remembers only the mass, angular momentum and electric charge of the matter which falls into it. (After Ruffini and Wheeler.)

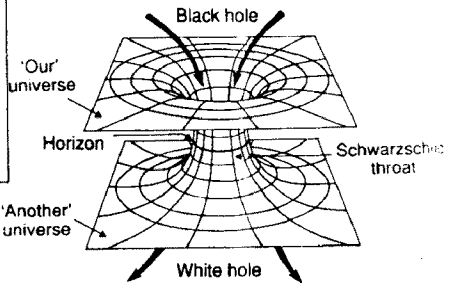


Figure 2 Embedding of Schwarzschild space-time. The Schwarzschild throat connects 'our' universe (upper sheet) with 'another' universe (lower sheet).

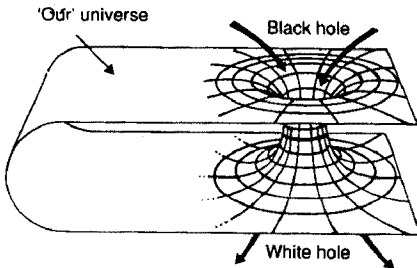


Figure 3 Identifying the sheets.

The two sheets of the Schwarzschild throat can be interpreted as two different regions of the same universe. For this the two sheets are connected at a great distance from the throat. The diagram 'cheats' by flattening the sheets, whose usual shape would be paraboloidal.

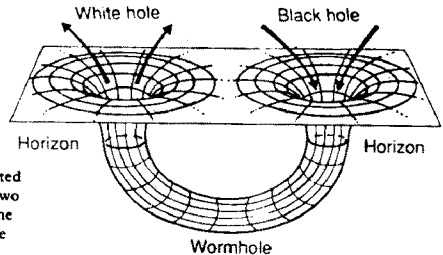


Figure 4 A wormhole in space-time.

This is the unfolded version of the preceding diagram. The horizons of the black hole and the white hole have been separated, and are linked by a wormhole.

Thus scientists hold different view regarding the structure of black-holes created in imagination. The structure of black-holes is believed to be according to the four different figures shown below.

Why do astronomers make such a deep research work on black-holes? Hundred of such blackholes are there in our solar system and outside the galaxy at a distance of hundreds of light years. We are not to obtain anything from them. In their heart of hearts, scientists have a hope that these black-holes are an inexhaustible treasury of energy and in future that energy may be useful to the earth. Of course, this is only an imagination but scientists hope that some time even this imagination will turn into reality. Here a principle of physics is at work. It is that in the whole of the universe, there is a definite quantity of matter and energy. It is never reduced. It is always constant. Therefore, the objects that go into black-holes and get destroyed must undergo some transformation and according to the equation shown by Einstein, energy must be obtained through the destruction of the objects. (Fig.No.1)

But according to the researches that have been made, this does not happen. Some scientists, therefore, think that at the other end of the black-holes, there must be a counter universe (Anti-universe) which is similar to our universe and we invisibly conceive to. The objects gulped from our universe through the black-hole, are obtained across the white hole in a new form. (Fig.No.2)

There are some who believe that the black-hole and the white hole are two divisions of one and only the one universe that we belong to. And, therefore, the universe towards us, to this side of the black-hole and the universe towards that side of white hole are very distantly connected as shown in Fig.No.3. Some scientists believe that the black-hole and the white hole are on the same horizontal level and they are connected by the wormhole. They also believe that our solar system, galaxy etc. lie between them or in some other region outside them. (Fig No.4)

The neutron star shown above has a density<sup>20</sup> generally varying from 1 tonne/cm<sup>3</sup> to 4,00,000 tonnes/cm<sup>3</sup> and the area of the circular black-hole is 5650 sq. kilometres and near its surface its gravitational force is 1500 crore times greater than the gravitational force on the earth.<sup>21</sup> But the weight of the smallest black-hole is 10<sup>15</sup> grams and its size is only as big as that of a proton at the centre of its atom.<sup>22</sup>

Some modern Jain scholars believe that the black-hole is the kṣṇarāji and

Tamaskāya (embodiment of darkness) described in the Jain scriptures such as the Sthānāṅga Sūtra, the Brhatsēgrahaṇī, the Brhatkṣētrasamāsa etc. Of course, Jain scriptures give description of the structure which is the same as or largely similar to the description of the structure of the black-hole which the modern scientists give. In the Sthānāṅga Sūtra, we get the following reference to the Kṣṇarājī.

उपि सणकुमारमाहिदाणं कप्पाणं हेट्ठिं बंभलोगे कप्पे रिट्ठविमाणे पत्थडे एत्थ णमक्खाडग समचउरंससंठाणसंठितातो अट्ठ कण्हरातीतो पन्नता तं जहा - पुरच्छिमेणं दो कण्हरातीतो, दाहिणेणं दो कण्हराइओ, पच्चच्छिमेणं दो कण्हराइओ, उत्तरेणं दो कण्हराइओ, पुरच्छिमा अब्भंतरा कण्हराती दाहिणं बाहिरं कण्हराइं पुट्ठा, दाहिणा अब्भंतरा कण्हराती पच्चच्छिमं बाहिरं कण्हराइं पुट्ठा, पच्चच्छिमगा अब्भंतरा कण्हराती उत्तरं बाहिरं कण्हराइं पुट्ठा, उत्तरा अब्भंतरा कण्हराती पुरच्छिमं बाहिरं कण्हराती पुट्ठा, पुरच्छिम-पच्चच्छिमिल्लाओ बाहिराओ दो कण्हरातीतो छलंसातो, उत्तरदाहिणाओ बाहिराओ दो कण्हरातीतो तंसाओ, सव्वाओऽवि णं अब्भंतरकण्हरातीतो चउरंसाओ १। एतासि णं अट्ठणं कण्हरातीणं अट्ठ नामधेज्जा पन्नता, तं जहा - कण्हरातीति वा, मेहरातीति वा, मघाति वा, माघवतीति वा, वातफलहेति वा, वातपलिकखोभेति वा, देवपलिहे वा, देवपलिकखोभेति वा २। एतासि णं अट्ठणं कण्हरातीणं अट्ठसु उवासंतरेसु अट्ठ लोगतितविमाणा पन्नता, तं जहा - अच्ची, अच्चिमाती, वतिरोअणे, पभंकरे, चंदाभे, सूरभे, सुपइटाभे, अगिच्चाभे ३। एतेसु णं अट्ठसु लोगतितविमाणेसु अट्ठविधा लोगतिता देवा पन्नता, तं जहा - सारसतमाइच्चा वण्ही वरुणा य गदतोय य। तुसिता अवाबाहा अगिच्चा चेव बोद्धव्वा ॥१॥

uppiṃ saṇaṅkumārāmāhindāṇaṃ kappāṇaṃ hēṭṭhiṃ bambhalōgē kappē riṭṭhavimāṇē patthaḍē ēttha ṇamakkhāḍaga samacauramsasaṇṭhāṇasaṇṭhitātō aṭṭha kaṇharātītō pannatā taṃ jahā - puracchimēṇaṃ dō kaṇharātītō, dāhiṇēṇaṃ dō kaṇharāiō, paccacchimēṇaṃ dō kaṇharāiō, uttarēṇaṃ dō kaṇharāiō, puracchima abbhantarā kaṇharātī dāhiṇaṃ bāhiraṃ kaṇharāiṃ puṭṭhā, dāhiṇā abbhantarā kaṇharātī paccacchimagaṃ bāhiraṃ kaṇharāiṃ puṭṭhā, paccacchimaga abbhantarā kaṇharātī uttaraṃ bāhiraṃ kaṇharāiṃ puṭṭhā, uttarā abbhantarā kaṇharātī puracchimaṃ bāhiraṃ kaṇharātīṃ puṭṭhā, puracchima-paccacchimiṭṭhā bāhirāō dō kaṇharātītō chalaṃsātō, uttaradāhiṇāō bāhirāō dō kaṇharātītō taṃsāō, savvāō'vi ṇaṃ abbhantarakāṇharātītō cauraṃsāō 1. ētāsi ṇaṃ aṭṭhaṇhaṃ kaṇharātīṇaṃ aṭṭha nāmadhējjā pannattā, taṃ jahā - kaṇharātīti vā, mēharātīti vā, maghāti vā, māghavatīti vā, vātaphaliḥhēti vā, vātapaliḥkhōbhēti vā, dēvapaliḥhē vā, dēvapaliḥkhōbhēti vā 2. ētāsi ṇaṃ aṭṭhaṇhaṃ kaṇharātīṇaṃ aṭṭhasu uvāsantarēsu aṭṭha lōgantitavimāṇā

*pannattā, taṃ jahā - accī, accimālī, vatirōṇē, pabhaṅkarē, candābhē, sūrābhē, supaiṭṭhābhē, aggiccābhē* 3. *ētēsu ṇaṃatṭhasu lōgantavimāṇesu aṭṭhavidhā lōgantitā dēvā pannattā, taṃ jahā - sārasatamāiccā vaṇhi varuṇā ya gaddatōyā ya . tusitā avvābāhā aggiccā cēva bōddhavvā .. 1..* <sup>23</sup>

“Above the third and the fourth worlds of the gods namely Sanatkumāra and Māhendra and below the fifth world of gods namely Brahmaḷōka, there are eight Kṛṣṇarājis in the shape of square dies i.e. Akṣa (अक्ष). They are as follows :

There are two Kṛṣṇarāji in each of four directions, east, south, west and north. The inward Kṛṣṇarāji in the east and the outward Kṛṣṇarāji in the south, touch each other. The inward Kṛṣṇarāji in the south touches the outward Kṛṣṇarāji in the west. The inward Kṛṣṇarāji of the west touches the outer Kṛṣṇarāji of the north. The outward Kṛṣṇarājis of the east and the west are hexagonal - six sided. The outer Kṛṣṇarājis of the north and south are triangle-shaped. The inward Kṛṣṇarājis of all sides are square-shaped. Their names are Kṛṣṇarāji, Mēgharāji, Maghā, Māghavatī, Vātapaligha, Vātapalighōkṣōbha, dēvaparigha, Dēvaparighōkṣōbha. Between them there are heavenly abodes of the eight Lōkāntika gods namely Arci, Arcimālī, Vairōcana, Prabhaṅkara, Candraprabha, Sūryābha, Supraṭiṣṭhabha, Agnitōya (Śukrābha). The heavenly abodes of Lōkāntika gods of the ninth kind namely, Riṣṭa, are the highest of all. The names of Lōkāntika gods living in them are Sārasvata, Āditya, Vahni, Aruṇa (Varuṇa), Gardatōya, Tusita, Avyābādha and Āgnēya (Marut).”

Kṛṣṇarāji contains and embodiment of darkness. According to Jain scriptures, when a special kind of gods hide themselves, in the Kṛṣṇarāji, nobody can find them. They almost disappear.

Mr. Nirajanbhai N. Vakharia in his book “Cosmological Truths of Ancient Indian Religions, Jainism and Hinduism”, shows positively that Kṛṣṇarāji itself is the blackhole. Comparing them he writes :

(1) As the black-hole curves the space according to Einstein’s General Theory of Relativity (GTR), so Tamaskāya and kṛṣṇarāji attract and curve a large portion of space and ultimately, it gets transformed into a black-hole.

(2) Nobody can enter Kṛṣṇarāji or the black-hole except through a special

kind of way, nor can anyone go across them. Only a special kind of gods can enter Kṛṣṇarāji.

(3) If a strange intruder enters Kṛṣṇarāji or the black-hole, he can never return and is destroyed there.

(4) Scientists believe that at the other end of the black-hole, there is a counter universe named white hole. Similarly at the other end of Kṛṣṇarāji, there is a counter-world of gods.

(5) According to Mr. Vakharia one of the two ends of Tamaskāya (embodiment of darkness) in the Aruṇavara ocean, is black-hole, the other is the white hole and kṛṣṇarāji is called worm hole.<sup>24</sup>

The similarities shown above by Mr.Vakharia are perhaps not proper. The reasons are as under :

(1) Scientists show that space has a curved shape but according to the Jain theory, space is a one whole element/substance and it is inert or non-transformable in any condition. Therefore, its shape cannot be changed.

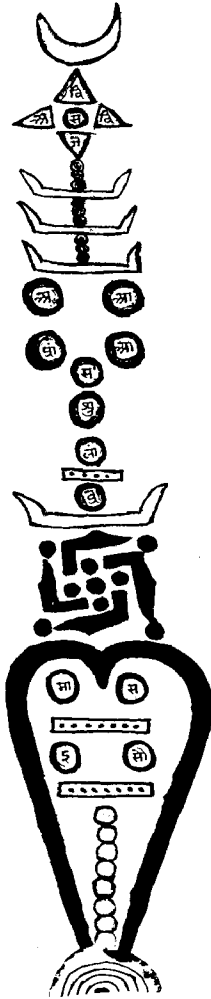
(2) Only a special kind of gods enter kṛṣṇarāji, when they wish. They hide in it and can come out when they wish. But attracted by its gravitational force, an object enters the black-hole without any effort and then it never comes out. According to what scientists guess, it perhaps enters the counter universe of white hole. This is only a conjecture and no reality. This similarity is, therefore, not proper.

(3) Scientists believe that if a strange intruder or intruding object enters the black-hole, it is destroyed. None but gods can enter Kṛṣṇarāji. There is, therefore, no question of a strange intruder or intruding object entering it.

The fourth and the fifth similarities shown by Mr.Vakharia are mutually contradictory. In the fourth similarity, he says that kṛṣṇarāji is the black-hole and its other end opens into the world of gods (counter-universe) named the fifth Brahmaṇḍa. But in the fifth similarity, the eight divisions of Kṛṣṇarāji are named worm holes. There is, therefore, no propriety in both these similarities.

According to science, there are many black-holes, not only eight.

He has also shown two more similarities which are not at all proper. What is the reasons for believing that Kṛṣṇarāji or Tamaskāya is believed



Eight Black Strips known as astha Rajees belived to be in the Black Region of deep Darkness as shown the space by Jain Astronomy.

Four might be four kingdoms of Gods in space and other four oblong rectangular shape strips can be perhaps the bridges to reach these kingdoms can possibly be working as Einstein-Rosen Bridges as per thinking of Mr. Niranjana Vakharia.

black-hole? Pondering over it, we reach the following conclusion.

'Kṛṣṇarāji' includes the word 'Kṛṣṇa'. 'Kṛṣṇa' means black and Tamaskāya means a black dark object. On account of this verbal similarity modern Jain scholars are naturally prompted to believe that Kṛṣṇarāji and Tamaskāya are black-holes.

On account of such verbal similarity, there prevails among Jain scholars, a misunderstanding about Einstein's Theory of Relativity. Whenever Einstein's Theory of Relativity is under discussion, Jain scholars proudly say that the Theory of Relativity given by Einstein was shown by Bhagavān Mahāvīra 2500 years ago. Thus they compare Einstein's Theory of Relativity with Anekāntvāda or Syādvāda of Jainism. Really speaking, they are quite different from each other and there is no relation between them. Anekāntvāda of Bhagavān Mahāvīra teaches us to think of elements, objects etc. from various view points. It, therefore, pertains to thoughts. But Einstein's theory of relativity explains only visible physical phenomena and it is based on postulates. Those postulates are not true according to the philosophical concepts of Jainism.

Likewise, there is nothing more than verbal similarity between kṛṣṇarāji or Tamaskāya and black-holes, we cannot therefore, rule out the possibility that the real fact may be of quite a different nature.

The first thing is that Kṛṣṇarāji described by Jain scripturists is certainly not in the world of human beings. Kṛṣṇarāji is shown to be located below the fifth world of gods namely Brahmālōka. From the world of human beings it is at a distance of more than at least three Rājālōkas. According to Jain scripturists one Rājālōka is equal to innumerable Yōjanas. According to the last gross calculation shown by Muni Śrī Mahendrakumar 'Dvitiya',

$$Rajju = 4 \times 10^{\{1.8 \times 10^{245} + 3\}} \text{ miles.}^{25}$$

It cannot be believed that the signals coming from kṛṣṇarāji which at a greater distance than three Rājālōkas, can be received by radio telescopes of our scientists because in the two intermediate Rājālōkas there are four worlds of gods. Moreover, there are in the madhya Lōka suns, moons, planets, constellations, stars and such other space objects which are crores multiplied by crores in number. It does not seem possible that maintaining their

identity as separate from all these space objects and signals coming from them, these signals can reach to the world of human beings.

Moreover, the structures of Kṛṣṇarāji and black-holes are altogether different.

(1) Gods hide in Kṛṣṇarāji and they can also come out. The object that goes into the black-hole, never returns. It is absorbed inside the black-hole.

(2) It never happens that gods are unwillingly pulled into kṛṣṇarāji on account of its gravitational force but the gravitational force of the black-hole is so stupendous that it pulls any physical object that comes into its field and there is no exception. Even light with a velocity of 3,00,000 km/sec. cannot escape from its gravitational force. The result is that we do not know what the black-hole is really

(3) Light that falls on the black-hole, is not reflected and, therefore it looks like a really black object.

(4) In Jain scriptures, there is no mention of density or gravitational force of the black object in Kṛṣṇarāji. With a special type of mathematics scientists have, through researches, determined the stupendous gravitational force of the black-hole and its density. Since these imaginary objects are at a distance of thousands of light years, we cannot know their density or gravitational force by perceptible or direct experiments but we can know that only through mathematics.

In short, Kṛṣṇarāji or Tamaskāya described in Jain scriptures and the black-hole guessed by scientists, seem to be altogether different objects.

As shown above, in modern astronomy there is no relation whatsoever between the blackhole searched out by scientist and Kṛṣṇarāji or Tamaskāya described in Jain scriptures. The question, therefore, arises how to explain the black-hole on the basis of the physics described in Jain scriptures. Using Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity, Einstein's Theory of gravitational force i.e. General Theory of Relativity and physics described in Jain scriptures we can explain the black-hole as under.

According to Jain scriptures, there are six basic/fundamental elements in the whole universe - 1. Dharma(the medium for motion) 2. Adharma (the medium for rest) 3. Ākāśa (space) 4. Pudgala (matter) 5. Jīva (Soul) 6. Kāla



(time).<sup>26</sup>

The dharma element helps the motion of an object. It is one and whole and pervades the whole universe. Similarly, the adharma element is also one and whole and pervades the whole universe. But it helps to keep an object at rest.<sup>27</sup> Since both these elements are non-material, they are incomprehensible. Ākāśa (space) is also one and whole element. But space in the universe (Lōka) is called Lōkākāśa while space outside the universe is called Alōkākāśa.

Dharma, adharma and Ākāśa (space) - these three are devoid of Kriyā (activity i.e. motion). This means that they do not undergo a transformation of the form of modification.<sup>28</sup> Kāla (time) is also regarded as an element.<sup>29</sup> The Jain physics accepts all the characteristics of the pudgal (matter) which the modern physics accepts. Regarding the matter, the concepts of the modern physics and concepts of the Jain physics are altogether similar. Sometimes even the definitions are also similar. Only the interpretations and illustrations of the definitions are found to be different. e.g. the definition of paramāṇu (atom).<sup>30</sup>

According to Jain scriptures, even light is nothing but a transformation or modification of the matter.<sup>31</sup> Therefore, as the laws of gravitational force apply to other physical objects, so they apply to light also. i.e. Light is also influenced by gravitational force. But the modern physics believes that light is in the wave-form and, therefore, it is a non-material. That is the reason why in order to explain the deviation of star-light, it has to believe that the space (Ākāśa) is curved/contracted by an object of stupendous mass that the sun is. But omniscient Tīrthaṅkaras (Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmi and others) who lived 2500 years ago, have shown that space is a non-material and devoid of activity and that light is a matter.

All visible objects in the universe and all subtle objects which are their basic units, are material or combinations of matter and Jīva i.e. soul. The fifth chapter of the 'Tattvārthasūtra' authored by Umāsvātijī, gives a detailed discussion of five out of the six elements apart from the soul. In the terminology of modern science, it can be said this chapter contains the basic principles of physics and chemistry.

According to Einstein's Special Theory Of Relativity, as the velocity of an

object rises, three types of changes are occurred in it.

1. We can know from the following equation that as the velocity of an object

increases, its mass-increases.  $m_v = \frac{m_o}{\sqrt{1-v^2/c^2}}$ , where  $m_v$  is the mass of an object in motion,  $m_o$  denotes the mass of the object, when it was at rest, and  $v$  and  $c$  respectively denote the velocity of the object and the velocity of light.<sup>32</sup>

2. As the velocity of an object rises, its length decreases and this can be known from the following equation.  $L_v = L_o \cdot \sqrt{1-v^2/c^2}$ , where  $L_v$  is the length of the object in the motion,  $L_o$  denotes the length of the object, when it was at rest and  $v$  and  $c$  denote the velocity of the object and the velocity of light respectively.<sup>33</sup>

3. As the velocity of an object rises, time for it becomes slower and slower and this can be known from the following equation.  $T_v = T_o \cdot \sqrt{1-v^2/c^2}$ , where  $T_v$  denotes the time-duration, while the object was in motion  $T_o$  denotes the time-duration, when it was at rest,  $v$  and  $c$  respectively denote the velocity of the object and the velocity of light.<sup>34</sup>

According to the equations given above, if the velocity of an object equals the velocity of light, the mass of the object would rise to infinity, the volume or length of the object would be reduced to zero and for that object time stops.

Space objects are always in motion. Of course, the velocity of all objects is not equal nor is the mass of all objects equal. But according to Einstein's equations shown above, as the velocity of space objects rises, the mass of space objects in motion, increases and the length or volume decreases. But on the other hand, according to his General Theory of Relativity i.e. the law of gravitational force, as the mass of an object rises, its gravitational force increases. Besides, as the volume of an object is reduced, its gravitational force increases. According to the equations shown above, here the mass of space objects in motion increases and volume-length decreases. Thus in both the ways, the gravitational force of the objects increases tremendously.

Of course, the rise in mass and the reduction in volume-length caused by the velocity of the objects, are only virtual and not real and consequent rise in gravitational force is also only virtual.

If the velocity of the space objects rises to be equal to or greater than the

velocity of light, according to Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity, the virtual mass of the objects would rise to infinity and their length/volume would be reduced to be zero or mathematically less than zero. In these circumstances even the virtual gravitational force rises to be infinite. They are transformed into black-holes and become invisible.

As a matter of fact, if the velocity of an object, rises to be equal to or greater than the velocity of light, the object becomes invisible. Light that falls on it, is reflected but till it reaches us it becomes excessively dim, its intensity excessively reduced or in technical terms of modern science, since the wavelength rises tremendously i.e. the amplitude is reduced tremendously and becomes less than infrared rays, the object becomes imperceptible to our eyes and that is the reason why, if we observe in the direction through telescope etc., we see only black spots or darkness in the round shape.

There are several reasons why the rise in mass and reduction in length/volume are considered to be virtual. 1. There is an eternal rule of science and of Jain philosophical treatises that the quantity of matter (pudgal) and its mass in the whole universe is fixed and always constant. 2. The second reason is as under :

In the fifth Aṅgasūtra, the Jain canonical scripture entitled Śrī Bhagavatī sūtra or Śrī Vyākhyāprajñapti or Śrī Vivāhapannatti, the twenty fourth Jain Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmī said to his first disciple Gaṇadhara Indrabhūti Gautam, nearly 2550 years ago :

परमाणुपोगले णं भंते ! लोगस्स पुरत्थिमिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ पच्चत्थिमिल्लं चरिमंतं एगसमएणं गच्छति, पच्चत्थिमिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ पुरत्थिमिल्लं चरिमंतं एगसमएणं गच्छति, दाहिणिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ उत्तरिल्लं जाव गच्छति, उत्तरिल्लाओ दाहिणिल्लं जाव गच्छति, उवरिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ हेट्ठिल्लं चरिमंतं एगं जाव गच्छति, हेट्ठिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ उवरिल्लं चरिमंतं एगसमएणं गच्छति ? हंता गोतमा ! परमाणुपोगले णं लोगस्स पुरत्थिमिल्लाओ चरिमंताओ पच्चत्थिमिल्लं तं चेव जाव उवरिल्लं चरिमंतं गच्छति ।

(भगवतीसूत्र, शतक-१६. उद्देशक-८)

*paramāṇupōggalē ṇaṃ bhantē ! lōgassa puratthimillāō carimantāō paccatthimillāṃ carimantaṃ ēgasamaēṇaṃ gacchati, paccatthimillāō carimantāō puratthimillāṃ carimantaṃ ēgasamaēṇaṃ gacchati, dāhiṇillāō carimantāō uttarillāṃ jāva gacchati, uttarillāō dāhiṇillāṃ jāva gacchati, uvarillāō carimantāō hēṭṭhillāṃ carimantaṃ ēgaō jāva gacchati, hēṭṭhillāō*

*carimantāō uvarillam carimantam ēgasamaēṇam gacchati ? hantā gōtamā ! paramāṇupōggalē ṇam lōgassa puratthimillāō carimantāō paccatthimillamō tam cēva jāva uvarirallam carimantam gacchati .*

(Bhagavatisūtra, Śataka-16. Uddēśaka-8)

(Question) (Indrabhūti Gautam) : 0, Bhagavān! Does a pudgala i.e. atom go in one samaya from the extreme end of east of the universe to the extreme end of the west of the universe? and from the extreme end of the west to the extreme end of the east?, from the extreme end of the south to the extreme end of the north?, from the extreme end of the north to extreme end of the south?, from the upper extreme end to the lower extreme end and from the lower extreme end to the upper extreme end of the universe?

Ans: (Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmī) : 0, Gautam! Yes, In one *Samaya* a *pudgala* atom goes from the extreme end of the east of the *Lōka* (universe) to the extreme end of the west of the universe and so on.

(Bhagavatī sūtra, śataka-16, Uddēśaka-8) <sup>36</sup>

This means that a physical object can travel in one *Samaya* , i.e.  $10^{-500}$  second<sup>36</sup> from the upper extreme end of the universe to its lower extreme end or from the lower extreme end of the universe to its upper extreme end i.e. a distance of 14 Rajju (*Rājālōka*) i.e.  $14(4 \times 10^{(1.8 \times 10^{245} + 3)})$  miles.<sup>37</sup> According to the postulate of Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity, the velocity of a physical object is never greater than that of light. Of course, the mathematics based on this postulate seems to be comparatively true in respect of visible objects or events. But as shown above, when the velocity of an object surpasses the velocity of light, not a single equation of Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity is useful. On the contrary, these equations say that the objects with a greater velocity than that of light are only imaginary. But the greatest omniscient, who has perfect knowledge of all the three phases of time of all objects in the whole universe, goes to the length of saying that a physical object at rest, goes on increasing its velocity through an external force and acquired the highest velocity shown above and an object with the highest velocity goes on decreasing its velocity and can become motionless.

In these circumstances, the mass and length of an object in motion which we get through Einstein's equations are only apparent. When the object again

becomes motionless or come to rest, it regains its original mass and length. How can then a reduction in mass and rise in length be possible?

3. When the velocity of an object rises to be equal to velocity of light, the volume/length of the object becomes zero. This means that it loses its existence. How can then its mass become infinite? Only those objects which have existence, can have mass. Mass is a property and it belongs only to an object. When an object has no existence, what can have infinite mass?

4. If we say that an object is destroyed and transformed into energy, that is also not proper. Energy is also a property and in various objects, it expresses itself in various ways. The energy of different objects is not of the same form. In this connection Harry L. Shipman says in the introduction to his book - "Black Holes, Quasars and The Universe".

"Light is a form of energy. It is difficult to define precisely the term 'energy' much in the news recently. It is easier to develop a mental picture of the energy concept by asking what energy does. The usual definition of 'energy' is 'the ability to do work' which is an accurate description. The type of work that energy does varies with its form. Light energy can illuminate the printed page, heat energy can keep us warm, kinetic energy (or energy of motion) can be used to move something from one place to another." <sup>38</sup>

Regarding energy, scientist themselves say "Whatever happens in the universe, can neither create nor destroy energy." <sup>39</sup> i.e. Whatever happens in the world, energy is not destroyed nor can new energy be created.

Since energy is a property, it must belong to the substance. Only a Jīva (soul) or a pudgal (matter) is its abode. In the Tattvārtha Sūtra, the Jain scripture, Śrī Umāsvātījī says about properties 'द्रव्याश्रया निर्गुणा गुणाः। *dravyāśrayā nirguṇā guṇāḥ*.' <sup>40</sup> Properties belong to substance and they have no properties. This means that energy, therefore, belongs to matter and a few other reals. In short science shows that energy is constant and indirectly shows that the quantity of a pudgala i.e. matter is also constant.

5. The physics theoretically shows that an object can be transformed into energy and energy can be transformed into an object. <sup>41</sup> But by experiments, energy can be obtained from an object (of course not wholly) but the object cannot be regained from energy. This means that the proposition that an object can be regained from energy, is only imaginary. Though it is true

mathematically or theoretically, it never seems possible in practice. That is why an object in motion, regains its original length/volume when it becomes motionless, proves that the length of an object in motion, is only apparent.

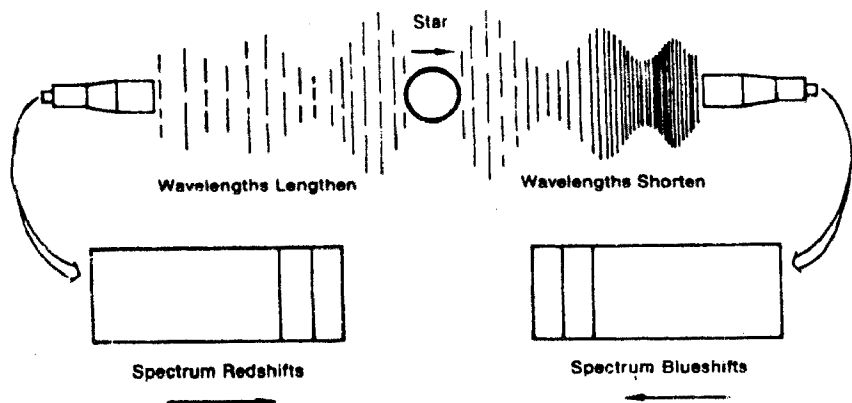
6. Of what kind the energy is that causes rise in the mass of an object in motion? This is also certainly a puzzle. As a matter of fact, while an object is in motion, energy is obtained from it. Its mass should, therefore, be reduced but theoretically mass increases.

7. According to what scientists say, the gravitational force of black-holes is so tremendous that even light cannot escape from its gravitational force. This means that the escape velocity of black holes is above 3,00,000 km/sec. If this is true, no radiation of any kind, not even infrared radiation nor even ultraviolet radiation can escape from its gravitational force because like light, all these kinds of radiations are only a special kind of electromagnetic waves and their velocity is only 3,00,000 km/second. Einstein himself says, "No signals are faster than light."<sup>42</sup> Experimental facts show that black-holes do not gulp everything. On the contrary, a special kind of radio waves come out of them and they are detected by radio telescopes. It is by means of them that black-holes are discovered. By analysing them, the origination, inner structure or construction, distance and the velocity of black-holes are determined.

In short the knowledge of tremendous gravitational force of black-holes is only virtual, not real. It is an imaginary presumption based on imaginary mathematics.

I conclude that according to the principles described in Jain philosophy, the black-holes are nothing but only space objects with a greater velocity than that of light. Since they move in the direction opposite to that of the earth, they appear to be only black spots in that direction. If they moved towards the earth, they could possibly be seen as white dwarfs or Neutron stars. It is precisely this that can be explained through its spectrum.

Black-holes are among the objects which have a greater velocity than that of light. As the velocity of the object is greater, the visible form of black-holes is small and as the velocity is less and nearer to the velocity of light, the visible form of black-holes is bigger. This is my personal belief and assumption. The velocity of visible and invisible space objects can be known by receiving radiations or light coming from them, by getting photographs of their spectrum and by analysing them.



Astronomers see Doppler shifts in stellar spectra, as the colors (or wavelengths) of the dark lines change depending on the motion of the star.

If the space object goes away from the earth, from us, the vertical dark lines on the spectrum seem to have shifted to the right side. This is called red shift. If the object comes nearer to the earth, the vertical dark lines on the spectrum seem to have shifted to the left side. This is called blue shift. Both these shifts are known in physics as the Doppler effect or the Doppler shift.<sup>43</sup>

Such various spectra are available for black-holes, white holes or white dwarfs and neutron stars also. Through their study, scientists determine the velocity of these objects. Among the signals coming from distant space objects, especially from black-holes and received through radio-telescopes, two signals coming from the same object, have some duration of time between them. The greater the velocity of objects which have a greater velocity than that of light, the longer the time duration between two signals and the lesser the velocity, the lesser the duration of time between two signals. The time duration between two signals received from some objects which have been transformed into black-holes varies from 0.3 second to 1.5 seconds.<sup>44</sup> According to my calculations, these black-holes go away from the earth at a velocity which is greater than that of light. The velocity of a black-hole which has a time duration of 0.3 second, can be 3,90,000 km/sec. whereas the velocity of a black-hole which has a time duration of 1.5 seconds can be

7,50,000 kms/second. With the change of velocity, there can be more or fewer red shifts in the spectrum received from the object.

Here I have theoretically represented only my views in a descriptive form only in accordance with the doctrines of Jain philosophy. I conclude this article with the hope that Jain scholars of physics will help me in future to do more research work mathematically, precisely in this subject.

Date : 16.11.96,

Bhavnagar.

References :

1. Each new advance poses still more questions, sometimes making the universe more puzzling, not less.

[*'Black Holes, Quasars And The Universe'* by Harry L. Shipman, Houghton Mifflin Company, Boston, U.S.A., p.14].

2. If we cannot see a black-hole, how do we tell what it looks like? The pencil and paper calculations of the theoretical physicists help us here. [Ibidem, p.14].

3. The radius is numerically equal to 2.95 kilometres times of the mass of the hole in solar masses. Our ten-solar-mass hole is thus 30 kilometres in radius or 60 kilometres across. [Ibidem, p.71].

4. On Phobos the force of gravity is so small that men's arm would be strong enough to put a small stone into orbit around it, or even send it into orbit about Mars itself, some 9000 kilometres away.

The escape velocity is only 5 m/s for Phobos ..... [Black Holes, by Jean-Pierre Luminet, Cambridge University Press, U.K., p. 6, 7].

5. To put a satellite into orbit, the rocket launcher has to reach a certain altitude, incline itself to be parallel to the Earth's surface and then increase its velocity to at least 8 km/s. At this velocity the centrifugal force (directed into space) balances the gravitational force (directed towards the centre of the Earth). [Ibidem, p. 6].

6. This critical velocity - identical for a pebble or a rocket - is called the escape velocity. On the Earth's surface it is 11.2 km/s, and it can easily be calculated for any planet, star or other celestial body. [Ibidem, p.7].

7. The escape velocity is only 5 m/s for Phobos and 2.4 km/s for the moon, but 620 km/s for the Sun. From a more dense star, such as a white dwarf, it reaches several thousands kilometres per second. [Ibidem, p.7].

8. The greater the mass, the greater the escape velocity, and for a given mass



the escape velocity will increase as the radius of the star decreases.

[Ibidem, p.7].

9. The notion of a black-hole ultimately derives from the simple concept of escape velocity. The velocity of light has been known to be about 3,00,000 km/s since Olais Roemer's observations of Jupiter's moon in 1676. It is easy to imagine the existence of stars so massive that the escape velocity from their surface is greater than the velocity of light. [Ibidem, p.7].

10. In an article read to Royal Society in 1783 and published later in Philosophical Transactions, John Michell wrote : "If the semidiameter of a sphere of the same density with the Sun were to exceed that of the sun in proportion of 500 to 1, a body falling from an infinite height towards it, would have acquired at its surface a greater velocity than light, and consequently, supposing light to be attracted by the same force in proportion to its vis inertiae, with other bodies, all light emitted from such a body would be made to return towards it, by its own proper gravity." A little later, in 1796, the mathematician and astronomer Pierre Simon, Marquis de Laplace, the prince of celestial mechanics, made similar remarks in his Exposition du systeme du monde. [Ibidem, p.7].

11. In 1911, while he was working at the University of Prague, Einstein calculated for the first time the deviation of light in a gravitational field. His results were to have been verified during the 1914 eclipse, but war was declared and the project abandoned. This was fortunate for Einstein, as his theory was not quite mature and his prediction would have been in error. [Ibidem, p.56].

12. Einstein perfected his General Relativity equations in November 1915 and published the results in the Berliner Berichte in the numbers dated 4, 11, 18 and 25 November. [Ibidem, p.56].

13. The deviation of light ray passing close to the Sun was measured during the solar eclipse on 29 May, 1919 at Sobral (Brazil). [Ibidem, p.56].

14. In December, 1915, a month after Einstein published his equations of General Relativity, the German physicist Karl Schwarzschild discovered the solution which described the gravitational field surrounding a sphere in a vacuum. [Ibidem p.119]

15. In a famous article in 1931, he (Indian astro-physicist Subramanyam Chandrashekhar) proved that white dwarfs had a maximum allowed mass, and calculated this to be  $1.4 M_{\odot}$ . [Ibidem p. 75]

16. White dwarf compact much of the mass of the star into a volume of the size of the Earth, while neutron stars are smaller still only 20 kilometres across.

[Black Holes, Quasars and The Universe by Harry L. Shipman, p.25].

17. Some investigators believe that the maximum mass of neutron stars is quite small about  $0.7 M_{\odot}$ . Others with different ideas of how neutrons interact, believe that the limiting mass is higher about  $2.2 M_{\odot}$ .

The crucial question now becomes. Are there any stars that leave remnant with more mass than the magic figure of three solar masses? (The maximum mass of a neutron star is probably less than this, but I stick with the figure three because it is certain that no evolved star can have more mass than that and remain stable). [Ibidem, p.60].

18. A black-hole is not shown because the star would have to be over  $3M_{\odot}$  initially before it could become a black-hole. Its final size would be similar to that of neutron star. ['Black Holes', by J.P.Luminet, p.103]

19. During the night of 23-24 February, 1987, the Canadian astronomer, Ian Shelton, working at the Las Campanas Observatory in Chile, had the extraordinary good fortune to be the first 'professional' to discover a supernova (a night assistant had just noticed it with the naked eye as a 4th magnitude star). The Large Magellanic Cloud, in which the supernova occurred, is an irregular galaxy. A telegram was sent urgently to the Bureau of the International Astronomical Union, and caused an immediate sensation in the astronomical community.

[Ibidem, p.94].

20. The density varies from  $1 \text{ tonne/cm}^3$  to  $4,00,000 \text{ tonnes/cm}^3$ .

[Ibidem, p.110].

21. A  $10 M_{\odot}$  spherical black-hole has an area of 5650 square kilometres comparable to the size of a country. Similarly the surface gravity is inversely proportional to the mass. A  $10M_{\odot}$  spherical black-hole has a surface gravity 150 billion times that of the Earth. [Ibidem, p. 196 ]

22. A typical mini black-hole of  $10^{15}$  grams, the size of a proton, has a temperature of trillion K. [Ibidem, p.210].

23. Sthāṅgasūtravṛtti P.432-433 (Sūtra-623)

24. Cosmological Truths Of Ancient Indian Religions, Jainism And Hinduism by Niranjana Vakharia, Chapter XXVI, p.234, 235.

25. 'Jainism : Through Science' (English version) by Muni Nandighoshvijay, p.13.
26. अजीवकाया धर्माधर्माकाशपुद्गलाः ॥१॥ द्रव्याणि जीवाश्च ॥२॥ कालश्चेत्येके ॥३९॥  
*ajīvakāyā dharmādharmākāśapudgalāḥ ..1.. dravyāṇi jīvāśca ..2.. kālaścētyēkē ..39..* (Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter V)
27. आऽऽकाशादेकद्रव्याणि ॥५॥ गतिस्थित्युपग्रहो धर्माधर्मयोरुपकारः ॥१७॥ *ā''kāśādēkadravyaṇi ..5.. gatisthityupagrahō dharmādharmayōrupakārah ..17..* (Ibidem, Chapter V).
28. निष्क्रियाणि च ॥६॥ *niṣkriyāṇi ca ..6..* (Ibidem, Chapter V).
29. कालश्चेत्येके ॥३९॥ *kālaścētyēkē ..39..* (Ibidem, Chapter V).
30. परमाणुरप्रदेशः ॥ *paramāṇurapradēśaḥ* . (Lectures on Nandi Sūtra in Gujarati by H. H. Ācārya Śrīvijaya Nandanasūrijī Mahārāja).
31. शब्द-बन्ध-सौक्ष्म्य-स्थौल्य-संस्थान-भेद-तमश्छायाऽऽतपोद्योतवन्तश्च ॥२४॥ *śabda-bandha-saukṣmya-sthaulya-samsthāna-bhēda-tamaśchāyā''tapōdyōtavantaśca ..24..* (Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter V).
- 32, 33, 34. Jainism : Through Science (English version) by Muni Nandighoshvijay (p.4,5).
35. [ Ibidem, p.8]. 36. [ Ibidem, p.12]. 37. [ Ibidem, p.13].
- 38,39. 'Black Holes, Quasars And The Universe' by Harry L. Shipman, p.4)
40. Tattvārtha Sūtra (Chapter V, sūtra No.40).
41.  $E=mc^2$ , Special Theory of Relativity, Mass-Energy Equivalence.
42. Introduction To Special Relativity by Robert Resnik, Willey Eastern Limited, 1988.
43. 'Black Holes, Quasars And The Universe', Harry L. Shipman (See Fig.5-3; 5-4).
44. *Brahmāṇḍanirṇ Cālaka : Gurutvākarṣaṇabala* by Paresch Vaidya, Navneet-Samarpana (Nove., 1996, p.213).



---

## 8. Jainistic And Scientific Analysis Of Extrasensory Perceptions Of Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt

Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt, who is a mechanical engineer in Bharat Heavy Electricals Limited, Noida, (Ghaziabad), can see the human aura. Not only that but he also can know the kinds of thoughts of men on the basis of its colours. With extrasensory perception he is able to see the colours of sound.

When someone spoke, Śrī Ashok Kumar saw a mass of variously glittering colourful particles. Besides, he saw various kinds of coloured particles emerging from living and nonliving objects. Also, he sometimes saw living objects absorbing coloured energy particles from the surrounding atmosphere. In his article 'The Secrets of the Alphabet and the Incantation-sound' in the October-December, 1992 issue of 'The Farbus Quarterly', he has narrated some of his experiences about sound. I was very much delighted to read that article. His experiences are much in keeping with the Jain view of reality. We shall analyse them later on. Let us first get acquainted with the belief of modern scientists regarding sound.

Generally, scientists believe that both sound and light are in the form of waves. Of course, some phenomena of light and especially the phenomenon of photo-electric-effect, can be explained only by accepting light in the form of particles. Scientists call these particles photons. They were first called 'quanta' by Einstein and the science that deals with them, is called quantum mechanics.

Light<sup>1</sup> is of two types: 1. Visible light and 2. Invisible light. Invisible light, i.e. the electromagnetic waves are also of two types (1) that which has less/low frequency and greater wave-length than visible light which is known as infrared waves and (2) that which has greater/high frequency and small wave-length than visible light and which is known as ultraviolet rays.<sup>2</sup>

The classification of sound is similar to that of light. Generally, the human ear can hear sounds with a frequency varying from 20 to 20,000. Sound is of

two types : 1. audible sound with a frequency varying from 20 to 20,000 and 2. inaudible sound which is also of two types : (1) Sound with a less/low frequency than 20, is known as infrasonic waves. The elephant can hear infrasonic sound. (2) Sound with a greater/higher frequency than 20,000 is called ultrasonic sound. With the help of sound waves of this type, the urine stone can be reduced to powder and removed without a surgical operation. In short, the scientists of today believe that sound is entirely in the form of waves. They believe that electromagnetic waves behave like waves in certain circumstances and in other circumstances they behave like particles. Thus modern science and scientists accept the dual nature of light.

On the other hand, the extrasensory perceptions of Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt prove that light, the electromagnetic field which is called aura of objects, mind, thoughts and sound – all these are in the form of matter i.e. pudgal – the most micro atoms/particles and this fully supports the Jain philosophical view.

According to Jain philosophy, there are only six kinds of fundamental substances in the whole universe. They are 1. soul, 2. matter, 3. space, 4. time, 5. the medium for motion (dharma) and 6. the medium for rest (adharma). Some Jain philosophers regard time as a substance and some do not.<sup>3</sup> Of all these substances, five substances except matter are formless. Only the matter (pudgal) has form.<sup>4</sup> In combination with element matter, the element soul seems to have a form. Jain philosophers mention that the matter has the characteristics namely colour, smell, taste and touch.<sup>5</sup> The subtlest part or atom of an element matter, which by any instrument, could never be divided in the past, can never be divided in the present and is never going to be possible to be divided in the future, is called an atom. Though in modern physics, the subtlest indivisible part of a substance is called an atom, it is now divided into sub-atomic particles namely electrons, protons, neutrons, quarks etc. It is, therefore, not proper to call it a paramāṇu (atom).

An atom (paramāṇu) has a colour, a smell, a taste and two touches.<sup>6</sup> It means that it has a form. But it is so subtle that it cannot be seen with the naked eyes, nor can it be seen with any instrument such as an ultramodern electron-microscope. It can be seen with the eyes or an instrument only after infinite atoms have gathered up in a mass.

Grouping of infinite atoms have been classified by Jain philosophers into

eight types. Their names and uses are as under :

1. The Audārika types of grouping i.e. Vargaṇā.

Every unit of this type of Vargaṇā (grouping)<sup>7</sup> has infinite atoms. Bodies of all living beings in the whole visible universe are made of it, except the bodies of hell beings and divine beings. According to Jainism earth, water, fire and wind are also living being and, their bodies are also made up of this type of Vargaṇā.

2. The Vaikriya Vargaṇā

Every unit of this type of Vargaṇā has also infinite atoms (paramāṇus). But unit of this type of Vargaṇā has many more numbers of atoms than the number of atoms in the former type of Vargaṇā. Similarly every unit of later type of Vargaṇā has an increasingly larger number of paramāṇus (atoms), which are more and more subtle in form. Bodies of gods and goddesses i. e. divine beings and hellish beings are made of this type of paramāṇu-units (Vargaṇā). Even human beings sometimes make another body of this type of paramāṇu-units (Vargaṇā).

3. The Āhāraka Vargaṇā.

Jain monks who have attained a specific level of deep learning, use the paramāṇu-units of this type of grouping (Vargaṇā) to make a crystalline body of the size of a close-fisted hand.

4. The Taijas Vargaṇā.

With the paramāṇu-units of this Vargaṇā (grouping), a subtle called taijas (vital) body is formed by every living being. Food is digested with its help.

5. The Bhāṣā Vargaṇā.

All living beings varying from those with two senses to those with five senses, celestial, human and hellish beings absorb the paramāṇu-units of this Vargaṇā, and transform them into distinct or indistinct sound and release them in the atmosphere.

6. The Śvāsōcchvāsa Vargaṇā.

Every living being inhales and exhales with the paramāṇu-units of this Vargaṇā.

### 7. The Manō Vargaṇā.

The minds of all gross five-sensed living beings (celestial, human, hellish and animals) are made of this type of paramāṇu-units (Vargaṇā). Moreover they are used in various processes of thinking.

### 8. The Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā.

The paramāṇu-units of this type of Vargaṇā get transformed as auspicious or inauspicious karma and stick to the soul. They make a special type of subtle body named the Kārmaṇa body.

In both of his articles, Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt shows that the groups of coloured energy particles are chiefly of the three colours - red, yellow and blue. But in the description of the element pudgala i.e. matter, Jain philosophers show that they have five colours - white, red, yellow, blue and black. As far as drawing is concerned, there are only three colours, red, yellow and blue.<sup>8</sup> The rest of the colours are made by mixing these colours. In the printing of coloured pictures, red, yellow, blue and black colours are used.

There are two types of smell : 1. good smell and 2. bad smell.

There are five types of taste : 1. bitter, 2. pungent, 3. astringent, 4. sour, 5. sweet. The saltish taste is not taken into account here but it is accepted as sixth taste in other Jain works.<sup>9</sup>

There are eight types of touch : 1. heavy, 2. light, 3. soft, 4. hard, 5. cold, 6. hot, 7. smooth, Snigdha स्निग्ध 8. rough Rukṣa रुक्ष <sup>10</sup>

A single solitary atom has two types of touch : 1. cold or hot and 2. smooth or rough (Snigdha स्निग्ध or Rukṣa रुक्ष). Some paramāṇu-units made of infinite atoms have sometimes four touches. Some have all the eight touches. The first four of the eight types of Vargaṇās shown above have all the eight types of touch. The last four Vargaṇās of the eight types of Vargaṇās shown above, have four types of touch.

Having got this background information of the pudgala (matter) we, shall now analyse the experiences or extrasensory perceptions of Śrī Dutt.

Chiefly blue particles seem to emerge from the sound of a conch-shell. It is customary to make sound of a conch-shell at the time of evening prayer in Hindu temples. It is said that the sound of a conch-shell removes turbidity/

impurity and inauspiciousness of atmosphere and this is proved by Śrī Dutt's experience mentioned above. Similarly, blue particles emerge from the sound of temple bell which is of the shape of a pyramid. At the one-third of the height of pyramids, domed temples and buildings of the shape of a pyramid, under the apex, objects store blue energy-particles. They have probably the highest energy and that is why fruits, flower kept in the pyramid at one-third of its height just under its apex remain fresh for a long time and then they dehydrate but do not decay. A lot of research work has been done on this in the west and a number of books have been written on this subject.<sup>11</sup> Śrī Dutt's extrasensory perception of pyramid substantiates this statement.

Defining the word pudgala (पुद्गल) (i.e. matter), Jain philosophers say that a pudgala is something in which the processes of fusion and fission are constantly going on.<sup>12</sup> पूरयन्ति गलयन्ति इति पुद्गलाः (*pūrayanti galayanti iti pudgalāḥ*) Śrī Dutt's extrasensory perceptions show that red, yellow and blue particles constantly emerge from all living and non-living objects in the whole universe. It means that with a special aptitude or power of his eyes he has seen the process of fission taking place in non-living pudgalic (material) objects, the process of disintegration of atoms of an object. He saw the process of fission with his eyes because it is greater than the process of fusion in the non-living objects. But when the same objects are placed in a pyramid, a refrigerator or a special type of atmosphere, the process of fission becomes slower and the process of fusion which absorbs blue energy particles, becomes faster. The processes of fusion and fission are constantly going on in the human body too <sup>13</sup> and it is clearly experienced by Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt. This perfectly substantiates the doctrines laid down by Jain philosophers.

According to Śrī Dutt, the red particles are the least energetic. Modern science also accepts this. When a sun ray passes through a prism, it is divided into seven colours and in the colour spectrum, that is formed, the red rays - particles have least frequency and the violet rays/particles have the highest frequency. And according to the law of physics, the higher the frequency of rays/particles, the higher the energy of rays/particles. Rays with a low frequency than the frequency of red light i.e. electromagnetic waves having low frequency cannot be grasped by our eyes. They are called infrared rays. Similarly, rays with a higher frequency than the frequency of violet rays or electromagnetic waves are called ultraviolet rays and they can also be not



grasped by our eyes.

Śrī Dutt says that between non-living things and living, there is a intermediate state of things. The non-living body after the death, flowers and leaves fallen from trees and plants belong to this state. They first emit blue, then yellow and then red particles and then they decay.

Regarding food of monks and nuns of the svetambar idolatrous sect, there is a rule that they can accept ripe fruits etc. after 48 minutes after they have been cut and juice has been extracted from them. Śrī Dutt's experiences described above reveal the secret of this rule. Generally, we believe that ripe fruits become lifeless soon after they have been cut. But as long as all the blue particles have not been emitted, they are probably alive and during emission of yellow particles, they are lifeless but they do not contain bacteria. But bacteria have already entered them when red particles are emitted. That is why fruits are fit to be accepted by monks and nuns only when they are in the intermediate state between the two states.

Moreover, in cold places also, blue particles are more quantitative. The refrigerator is the best illustration of this. That is why fruits etc. in a refrigerator or in such places, remain fresh for a long time. They can remain alive there. In heat all fruit etc. decay and are soiled soon because in heat they quickly emit energy-particles. There are records of instances which show that dead bodies of human beings and animals buried under snow have remained fresh for thousands of years. That also substantiates this fact.

Śrī Dutt says from his experience that in nature, i.e. in places of natural beauty such as green vegetation, ponds, wells, river-banks etc., there are abundant blue particles near the bottom of the earth. Trees, plants etc. emit blue particles in the morning hours. They emit yellow and blue particles during the day time, and at night they emit red particles and absorb blue particles. They grasp red particles in the morning. Students of science, generally, know that during the day time; plants, trees etc. absorb carbon-dioxide and emit oxygen. At night plants, trees etc. absorb oxygen and emit carbon-dioxide. This shows that oxygen has blue molecules and carbon-dioxide has red molecules. And it is a scientifically proved fact that oxygen has energy for vital functions and that is why whoever controls breath or takes deep breaths i.e. Prāṇāyāma enjoys good health.

Of course, this is an inference based on the extrasensory perceptions of Śrī Dutt and it is in keeping with the contention of Jain philosophy and it is probably nearest to truth. All cannot have such experiences because this is a gift of nature. We should not, therefore, underestimate it.

Śrī Dutt proposes to study the body from two view- points : 1. the subtle body and 2. the Kāraṇa body. This will make it easy to understand the facts of colours.

According to the Jain scriptures, the body is of five types : 1. The Audārika body, 2. The Vaikriya body, 3. The Āhāraka body, 4. The Taijas body and 5. The Kārmaṇa body. All these five types of body have been mentioned earlier in the description of the forms of Vargaṇās i.e. groupings of paramāṇu-units. Since they have a special relevance here, they are mentioned here again. Every living being has at least three bodies. In certain circumstances, some highly developed men have four bodies but never has a living being five bodies at the same time. Generally, the living beings of physical world, namely, earth, water, fire, wind, plants etc. who have only one sense of touch and very small insects i.e. micro organisms and other creatures which are classified by the Jain biology into the two-sensed, three-sensed and four-sensed living beings, aquatic living beings such as fishes etc. beasts such as the cow, the horse, the elephant etc., the snake, the squirrel etc. and birds such as the sparrow, the crow, the parrot, etc. which are called five-sensed have only three bodies each : The Audārika body, the taijas body and the Kārmaṇa body. To their vaikriya body, they can give any form or shape, small or big. In the sense of modern science and scientists, it is called the desire body. Of all the living beings in the whole universe, only man can make a vaikriya body i.e. desire body, if he performs certain special type of penance or if he attains a certain special type of knowledge, he can make an Āhāraka body besides the Audārika body of bones, flesh and skin, that is visible to naked eyes. But never can he simultaneously makes both the types of body - the vaikriya body and the Āhāraka body.<sup>14</sup>

Of the five types of body, the types of body intended to be described here are the taijas body and the Kārmaṇa body. All living beings in the whole universe certainly have these two types of body. Of course, the living being who have emancipated from the bondage of all karmic particles has attained salvation and has got liberation from the eight types of karma, has none of the

five bodies and that is he is called unembodied. This taijas-Kārmaṇa body is called the vital body. The taijas body, which Śrī Dutt calls the subtle body, digests food and makes constituents of the gross body such as blood, flesh, fat, bones, marrow etc. The Kārmaṇa body which Śrī Dutt calls Kāraṇa body, determines various forms and structure of gross and subtle body. Both these types of body are very important.

In paintings of gods, an aura is painted behind their heads. It is a symbol of their divine quality. Really speaking, it is an effect of purity of their subtle / taijas body. Other living beings and human beings also have such a bright round shape around their bodies, which is called an aura. Really speaking this aura is a bio-electro-magnetic field. As every magnet has its magnetic field, so every living being has his field of effect. The aura of a human being depends on the purity of his taijas / subtle body and that again depends on the auspiciousness of material particles of Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā absorbed by the Kārmaṇa body and their colour, smell, taste and touch. The absorption of auspicious and inauspicious material particles depends upon auspicious and inauspicious thoughts conceived by the mind. As a result, the intensity and purity / impurity of the aura depends upon the thoughts created in the mind. Śrī Dutt calls the aura, the armour of energy. The mind which is now-a-days called the sixth sense, is made of constituent units of subtle particles.

Though Śrī Dutt is not a Jain, he seems to follow the contentions of Jain philosophy. On one hand, this fact justifies the Jain contentions and on the other hand, his extrasensory perceptions being true, convince the Jain community. Of course, an extensive analysis as well as classification and research of his experiences, seems to be necessary and his experiences and similar experiences of others may open up a new field of research.

One of his extra-sensory perceptions wonderfully reflects the Jain philosophy of karma. He says that particles are encompassed in the armour of energy i.e. bio - electromagnetic field. The subtle body absorbed them as food. It is necessary to analyse this statement from gross as well as subtle view points.

On a gross level, Jain philosophers classify food into four types : 1.Kavalāhāra, 2.Prakṣēpāhāra, 3.Lōmāhāra and 4.Ōjāhāra. 1. Eating with

mouth the cooked food in the form of morsels is called Kavalāhāra. 2. Giving energising substances or medicines directly into blood through injections or holes made in skin when it is not possible to take food through the mouth, is called Prakṣēpāhāra. 3. Absorbing subtle particles from the atmosphere through short and small hairs on the body, is called Lōmāhāra. 4. Sperm of father and blood of mother taken by a child in the womb as food, is called Ōjāhāra.

Speaking from a subtle point of view, according to the Jain theory, the soul grasps karma particles, i.e. paramāṇu-units of Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā from the space-points which are non - distant from the space-points in which he lives.<sup>15</sup> Then the soul incorporates them in his Kārmaṇa body. Thus, the soul somehow becomes inseparable from them.

Does the extrasensory perceptions of Śrī Dutt suggest Lōmāhāra ? Or does it suggest absorption of paramāṇu-units of Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā described from a subtle viewpoint ? This cannot be understood. Perhaps he did not think of making such a line of demarcation because it seems that it is impossible for him to make such analysis or classification of his experience without a full knowledge of the Jain theory of karma.

Regarding the armour of energy i.e. an aura, he says that the greater circumference of the aura, the greater its capacity for grasping the particles of energy and preventing them from being wasted or going away. It can perhaps be said that as the living beings develop spiritually, their energy-armour i.e. aura becomes larger and clearer. That is why the aura of divine beings, gods and goddesses and of Tīrthaṅkara is pure, clear and visible to the eyes. Non-living objects can also have such an aura. But it is not like the aura of living beings, which is stable and develops according to spiritual progress. Day by day, it becomes weaker and weaker and loses its lustre. When gods have six months of their life-span left, their aura begins to lose its lustre, their flower-garlands begin to wither and their body becomes dirty. But those gods who are Ēkāvatārī, i.e. who are to take the next birth as a human being and are then to attain the final liberation, are exempted from this rule. Their aura becomes more and more lustrous and their flower-garlands do not wither. The intensity of the energy-armour (aura) or bio-electromagnetic field, depends upon the capacity of mind and will-power. As the will-power of a living being becomes intense, his circle of aura becomes large and intense. Man

should, therefore, make his will-power intense by means of constant auspicious thoughts, prayers and worship of God.

In order to avoid unnecessary repetition, I will take up the analysis of Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt's extrasensory perceptions of sound and alphabet, along-with the analysis of his article entitled 'The Secrets Of Sanskrit Alphabet and Sound of Incantation.'

#### References :

1. Light is always in the form of electro-magnetic waves. Therefore 'light' here means electro-magnetic waves.

2. This is a general division or classification. More sub-divisions are described in the books on physics.

3. अजीवकाया धर्माधर्माकाशपुद्गलाः ॥१॥ द्रव्याणि जीवाश्च ॥२॥ कालश्चेत्येके ॥३॥

*ajīvākāyā dharmādharmākāśapudgalāḥ ..1.. dravyāṇi jīvāśca ..2..*

*kālaścētyēkē ..39.. (Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter V)*

4. रूपिणः पुद्गलाः ॥५॥ *nūpiṇaḥ pudgalāḥ ..5.. (Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter V)*

5-6. स्पर्श-रस-गन्ध-वर्णवन्तः पुद्गलाः ॥२८॥ *sparśa-rasa-gandha-varṇavantaḥ pudgalāḥ ..28.. (Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter-V)*

6. Commentary on the aphorism स्पर्श-रस-गन्ध-वर्णवन्तः पुद्गलाः ॥२८॥

*sparśa-rasa-gandha-varṇavantaḥ pudgalāḥ ..28.. by Siddhasena Gaṇi (Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter-V)*

7. *Vargaṇā* is a word of Jain terminology. It is used for groups of atoms/ *paramāṇus*.

8. Red, yellow and blue are the three original colours. All other colours are made by mixtures.

9. भावओ णं राइभोअणे तित्ते वा कडुए वा कसाये वा अंबिले वा महुरे वा लवणे वा ।

*bhāvaō ṇaṃ rāibhōaṇē tittē vā kaḍuē vā kasāyē vā aṃbilē vā mahurē vā lavaṇē vā. (Pakkhīsūtra- ālāpaka-6)*

10. ....वण्ण, किण्ह-नील-लोहिअ-हलिद्ध-सिया ॥४०॥

सुरहिदुरही रसा पण, तित्त-कडु-कसाय-अंबिला महुरा ।

फासा— गुरु-लघु-मिउ-खर-सी-उण्ह-सिणिद्ध-रुक्खट्ठा ॥४१॥

.....vaṇṇa, kiṇha-nīla-lōhia-halidda-siyā ..40..

*surahidurahi rasā paṇa, titta-kaḍu-kasāya-aṃbilā mahurā .  
phāsā-- guru-laghu-miū-khara-sī-uṇha-siṇiddha-rukhaṭṭhā ..41..*

(First Karmagrantha, gāthā 40-41)

11. Pyramid Power by Max Toth & Gerge Nielsen

12 . Commentary on the aphorism अजीवकाया धर्माधर्माकाशपुद्गलाः ॥१॥

*ajīvakāyā dharmādharmākāśapudgalāḥ ..1..* by Siddhasena Gaṇi

(Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter-V)

13. See. 'Science Discovers Eternal Wisdom' by Muni Śrī Amarendravijayji Mahārāja.

14. A detailed description of both these types of body, is found in Siddhasena Gaṇi's commentary on the Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter-2, Sūtra - 37 to 49.

15. एग पएसोगाढं निअ सव्वपएसो गहेइ जीओ ॥७९॥ *ēga paēsōgāḍham nia savvapaēsō gahēi jīō ..79..* (Fifth Karmagranth, gāthā-79)



THE NOTION THAT ALL SCIENTIFIC MODELS AND THE THEORIES ARE APPROXIMATE AND THAT THEIR VERBAL INTERPRETATIONS ALWAYS SUFFER FROM THE INACCURACY OF OUR LANGUAGE WAS ALREADY COMMONLY ACCEPTED BY SCIENTISTS AT THE BEGINNING OF THIS CENTURY, WHEN A NEW AND COMPLETELY UNEXPECTED DEVELOPMENT TOOK PLACE. THE STUDY OF THE WORLD OF ATOMS FORCED PHYSICISTS TO REALIZE THAT OUR COMMON LANGUAGE IS NOT ONLY INACCURATE, BUT TOTALLY INADEQUATE TO DESCRIBE THE ATOMIC AND SUBATOMIC REALITY.

FRIJOF CAPRA

---

---

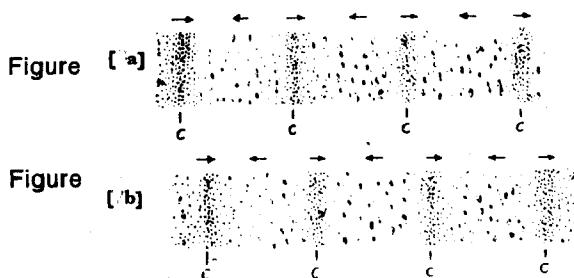
## 9. Colour : The Wonderful Characteristic Of Sound

**I**n the October- December, 1992, issue of 'The Quarterly' Of Farbus Gujarati Sabha, I read the articles - 'Colour : The Wonderful Characteristic Of Sound' written by Urmiben Desai and 'The Secrets Of the Sanskrit Alphabet And Incantation-Sound' written by Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt. I was greatly delighted and astonished to read them. Theoretically, the Jain philosophy regards sound as a form of pudgala (matter). Therefore, under no circumstances can the possibility that the sound has colour, can be ruled out. But the common man cannot grasp the colour of sound with his eyes. As I went on reading Śrī Dutt's article on his extrasensory perceptions, my faith in Jain Philosophy became stronger and stronger.

I think that the particle form of light must be accepted for explaining the phenomenon of photo-electric-effect of light and ultraviolet rays and the wave-form of light must be accepted for explaining the fact i.e. phenomenon of interference of light. Similarly, the sound which is fully accepted in the wave form by scientists, is really in the form of particles according to the Jain philosophy. And the extrasensory perceptions of Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt also prove that sound is in the form of particles. Therefore, in course of time, the dual nature of sound like that of light will have to be accepted. As the branch of quantum mechanics has developed in respect of light, a new type of quantum mechanics will emerge in respect of sound. An an electronic instrument is invented by scientists for protection against sound-pollution. With the help of it an anti-sound is produced against sound. The anti-sound goes towards the sound, dashes against it and destroys it. It works on the principle of destructive interference.' For this reason sound must be accepted to be in the form of waves. But scientists explain the propagation of sound with the help of particles existing in the medium of air. And it is shown as under :

When the sound wave passes, the particles in air seem to be pushed very near to one another in certain parts. These parts are called crests of sound waves and they are shown by 'c' in the figure. These crests move from the left to the right. Fig.(a) shows the condition of the first moment and Fig.(b)

shows the condition of the next moment. The portion which has a larger number of air particles i.e. greater density of medium, is called a crest of the wave or condensation. The portion which has a less/low density of medium, is called a trough of the wave or rarefaction. This description of propagation of sound shows that sound is in the form of particles. Jain scriptures also show this method of propagation of sound. The only difference is that the particles of medium are replaced there by constituent paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā.



The ancient Jain philosophical literature<sup>2</sup> and the science of mysticism<sup>3</sup> accept sound only in the form of particles. They also show its colours. In the modern western literature there is a mention/reference that two or three western scientists have seen colours of sound.<sup>4</sup> People like Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt who have a natural gift of this sort of extrasensory perception, even today, are able to see the colours of sound.<sup>5</sup>

The Jain philosophy believes that sound is produced by paramāṇu-units of a matter i.e. Bhāṣā Vargaṇā. Every characteristic of an atom i.e. paramāṇu is, therefore, present in sound in a subtle form. The Tattvārtha Sūtra which is acceptable to all sects of Jains, clearly states that as a pudgala (matter) has colour, smell, taste and touch, so its smallest indivisible part called atom i.e. paramāṇu also has colour, smell, taste and touch.<sup>6</sup> Therefore as a man with extrasensory perception can see that colour of sound, so other people, having different type of extrasensory power, can perhaps experience taste and smell. Everyone experiences the touch of sound. The tap-recorder, the gramophone record etc. are useful only because sound can be picked by these instruments very clearly, we do experience the touch of a very big sound. It is, therefore, not necessary to elaborate on this.

The ancient Jain tradition shows that some distinguished ascetics



attained such type of extraordinary or extrasensory powers by virtue of their penance. In Jain literature, such extrasensory power is known as a 'labdhi'. The book of rituals entitled 'Siddhacakra Mahāpūjana' and 'Sūrimantra' etc. mention the names of various 48 types of labdhis. Amongst them, there is a special type of labdhi called 'Sambhinnasrōtas.'<sup>7</sup> Whoever attains this labdhi, can get through any one of his senses, the knowledge which can be obtained by other senses. e.g. through the sense of touch, he can see, smell, hear and taste. Of course, the attainment of such extrasensory power i.e. labdhi seems to be improbable/impossible in the present day world. Some people, therefore, may not believe it, but for this reason it is not proper to make the statement that such extrasensory powers cannot be there.

Therefore, the power of direct experience of the colour of sound attained by Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt, must be some special type of labdhi. According to the Jain theory of karma, this extrasensory power of Śrī Dutt, must have been obtained by eradication-cum-mitigation of Matijñānāvaraṇīya karma because this type of karma covers the knowledge received through the five senses and mind. This kind of karma obstructs the direct knowledge received through sense - organs. When the cover of this type of karma is removed, one naturally receives direct knowledge through sense-organs.

Śrī Dutt's extrasensory perception of the colours of Sanskrit letters and the colours of Sanskrit letters shown in the books of ancient tantric/mystic science are not in agreement at many places. Moreover, even in the books on tantric/mystic science the descriptions of the colours of Sanskrit letters are not in mutual agreement.<sup>8</sup> But these references certainly prove that ancient sages and distinguished tantrikas experienced colours of sound.

Śrī Dutt is an engineer in 'Bharat Heavy Electricals Limited.' He has, therefore, attempted to analyse his extrasensory perceptions according to scientific methods. He has taken pains to determine the colour of every letter. He has also tested his experiences of colour of sound by comparing them to the rules of sandhi (euphonic coalition of letters) and dissolution of sandhi in grammar of the Sanskrit language. He has also shown the graphic method of showing wonderful power of various mantras and names by well-arranged tables through knowing the different colours of each letter (a vowel or a consonant) of the Sanskrit alphabet and its glitter and intensity.

According to him, assemblages of coloured particles produced by sound united with one another and underwent a transformation into an assemblage of particles of a different colour. They perhaps followed the rules of sandhi (combination of letters) of the Sanskrit language. In his article, he has given illustrations of this transformation. On the basis of his experiences he says that the Sanskrit language is very scientific.

Really speaking in languages of the world other than Sanskrit, pronunciations do not agree with the letters of a word. While in the Sanskrit language pronunciation is in complete agreement with the letters of a word. e.g. The English language has the words - know, now and no. The pronunciation of the word 'know' is in complete variance with the letters of the word. The letter 'k' is unpronounced (silent). The letter 'w' is also silent. In the word 'now', 'o' is pronounced as 'a', that does not agree with the letters. The pronunciation of the word 'no' is in accordance with its letters. But when the letters of the word 'no' are pronounced separately, they are pronounced as 'en', 'o'. Thus the sound form of its letters is different from its combined sound form. In the English language, pronunciations differ from speaker to speaker. Some pronounce 'the' as 'DHEE' (दी) and some pronounce it as 'DHA' (घ), while Hindi speaking people pronounce it also as 'DA' (द). None of these pronunciations agree with the letters - T.H.E.

It is not so in the Sanskrit language. In Sanskrit language, words are pronounced as they are written. No consonant or vowel is silent in the pronunciation. Of course the vowels and the consonants join according to the rules of sandhi and they change their form. But the words are pronounced as they are written. Not a single letter, vowel or consonant remains unpronounced e.g. रामः अत्र उपविशति Rāmaḥ Atra Upaviśati. This sentence is pronounced according to the letters. But when the words are joined by the rules of sandhi, the sentence is pronounced as : रामोऽत्रोपविशति. Rāmō'trō'paviśati. In this sentence. अ of म is followed by the visrga (:) and both are changed into ओ because both are followed by a vowel अ. Same way अ of त्र and उ of उपविशति, both are changed into ओ. Both the ओ are to be surely pronounced, while the vowel अ of अत्र disappears by the rules of sandhi, so it is not pronounced. Such strict observance of rules is not known in any other language. Of course, the languages derived from the Sanskrit language retain to keep these rules and therefore for a systematic and scientific study of colours of sound, the Sanskrit language is the best medium.

Illustrations form the Gujarati language, given by Smt. Umiben Desai are as under : शेख + चल्ली = शेक्चल्ली, हाथ + कडी = हात्कडी, शोध + ता = शोत्ता, सूँघ + ता = सूँक्ता, मग+खाधा=मक्खाधा, कूद + को = कूत्को, डूब + तो = डूप्तो, नाग + पुर = नाक्पुर *śēkha + callī = śēkcallī, hātha + kaḍī = hātkaḍī, śōdha + tā = śōttā, sūṅgha + tā = sūṅktā, maga + khādhā = makkhādhā, kūda + kō = kūtkō, ḍūba + tō = ḍūptō, nāga + pura = nākpura* show that the transformation in the coloured particles of energy, follows the pronunciations and not the letters of words of language.

It is a special feature of the pure Sanskrit language that its pronunciations /sounds fully follow the letters (alphabet). That is why the rules of sandhi and dissolution of sandhi of the Sanskrit grammar apply or can be applied to coloured energy particles of sounds of Sanskrit language. If there is a hyphen farness between Sanskrit letters or words, sandhi is not permissible. Similarly, if sounds of Sanskrit letters or words, are separated, the colour, glitter etc. of coloured energy particles do not undergo transformations. e.g. If तत् 'Tat' and श्रुत् 'Śrutam' are spoken separately, they will not be united by alphabetical sandhi and consequently the coloured energy particles of the तत् 'Tat' and श्रुत् 'Śrutam' will not undergo any transformation. In short it should be accepted that colours of sound of any sort, follow the pronunciation and not the letters of alphabet.

The English language is quite unfit for the study of colours of sounds because the pronunciations of its alphabets/letters except A, E and O, have two or more letters. Moreover, the pronunciations of words are not at all in accordance with its letters. e.g. The letter 'a' is sometimes pronounced as 'ē' as in 'above'. Sometimes as 'ā' in 'car' and sometimes as 'ai' as in 'parent'. This is probably in the case of every letters of English alphabet. The importance of the Sanskrit language that Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt explains on the ground of his experience is, therefore, real. It is on account of its strict observance rules that it is accepted as the best computer language.

Regarding the word 'Rāma', Śrī Dutt writes in his article : "In graphio method the words 'Rāma' and 'Marā' are of equal magnitude and, therefore, there is no difference between their energies." But according to me, this statement is not proper. The energy of sound or word does not depend only on the magnitude of its graphic form or written form. There are several ways of writing. The sequential order of writing letters in the word 'Marā' is reverse to the sequential of writing letters in the word 'Rāma'. Though the energy of

the word 'Marā' is equal to the energy of the word 'Rāma', it is of the negative type. This is my guess. In the science of incantation (मन्त्रविज्ञान), there are different ways of reciting mantras/incantations. e. g. If recited according to the right sequence (पूर्वानुपूर्वी) the Namaskāra Mahāmantra नमस्कार महामन्त्र gives spiritual reward but if it is recited according to the reverse order (पश्चानुपूर्वी) it gives material rewards.<sup>9</sup>

Thus on the one hand, Śrī Dutt's experiences of sound strongly support the sound form described in Jain philosophy and on the other hand they raise a question mark about the wave theory of modern science.

In conclusion I hope that the scientists of our country will help me in carrying on research in this branch of study.

#### References :

1. See: 'Abhiyāna' of April 6, 1992, Page No.7, 8. by Nagendra Vijay
2. सद्धयार उज्जोअ पभा छायाऽऽतवे हि य । वण्ण गंध रसा फासा पुग्गलाणं लक्खणम् ।  
*saddandhayāra ujjōa pabhā chāyā'tavē hi ya .*  
*vaṇṇa gandha rasā phāsā puggalāṇaṃ lakkaṇaṃ* (Navatattava Gāthā-11)
- 3-4-5. See. 'The Quarterly' of Farbus Gujarati Sabha, Octo.-Dece. 1992 Bombay page 276 to 288.
6. स्पर्श-रस-गन्ध-वर्णवन्तः पुद्गलाः ॥२८॥ *sparsā-rasa-gandha-varṇavantaḥ pudgalāḥ* ..28..( Tattvārtha Sūtra, Chapter-V)
7. See : Śrī Siddhacakra Mahāpūjana, Labdhipadapūjana
8. See. 'The Quarterly' of Farbus Gujarati Sabha, Octo.-Dece. 1992 Bombay page 276 to 288.
9. See: 'Yantra' by Madhu Khanna, p.48 and 'Sūrimantra kalpa samuccaya' part-II, p.360-361.



---

## 10. Limitations Of Mathematics In Jain Philosophy And Modern Physics

*"One of the famous aphorisms of Einstein conveys the same idea - 'As far as the laws of mathematics refer to reality, they are not certain and as far as they are certain, they do not refer to reality.'*

*Because of this critical limitation of science leading to gross error in perception of reality, one of the main aims of eastern mysticism is to rid us of this confusion and to aim at the direct experience of reality which transcends the intellectual thinking."*

—D.K. Satsangi

( Bulletin of Theosophy Science Study Group, India, December, 1988,  
Vol. 26, No. 6, p. 63 )

**E**ver since the beginning of human civilization, mathematics in some form or other has been in use in the society. But in modern times, its use has assumed great importance. But for the use of mathematics, researches leading to human welfare and multiplication of production of things useful to the human race, would never have been possible even with the help of advanced mechanics. The advancement in mechanics, basically depends on the use of mathematics.<sup>1</sup> It is, therefore, essential to study mathematics for understanding of modern science.

While we think of mathematics, a number of questions arise. Is mathematics an art or a science? Is mathematics a game of various symbols? Is it still a language? Is it still the 'Queen' of sciences or it has now been enslaved as their 'servant'? Wherein resides the soul of mathematics? Is it really a spinal cord of science? What is the motive behind mathematical creations? Like poetry and music how far does it give artistic amusement to people?

All these questions can be answered from various viewpoints. All the same, mathematics is only a sort of game of imaginary symbols. But this

game can play and does play a very important role in our day-to-day life. Mathematics is related to the quantitative aspects of every object. We use objects in all our activities. Since life consists all activities, various objects are no doubt useful in everyman's life and there is nothing in the world which has no quantitative aspect. It follows, therefore, that there can be no life without mathematics.<sup>2</sup> Of course, the type and use of mathematics differ in everyman's life according to his own understanding.

Mathematics in its modern form differs little from science. The only noteworthy difference is that mathematics uses 'proof' in place of 'observation'.<sup>3</sup> Mathematics is a basic requirement of modern physics and modern physics explains and tries to explain almost all natural laws and phenomena through mathematics, but as far as physics is concerned, it has failed to explain all physical phenomena through mathematics or to put in mathematical formulae all the laws that cause the phenomena. The laws are true only within a certain limit. Beyond the limit all mathematical formulae prove to be false. They cannot be applied there.

Before discussing these limitations of mathematics, let us examine the origin, development and history of uses of mathematics.

### *Types and Uses of Numbers*

Pythagoras accepted the so called natural numbers 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11,.....etc. as gifts from gods and he showed no curiosity to know when and how they came into hands of men.<sup>4</sup> These natural numbers have certain properties :

1. These natural numbers are mainly of two types : Odd numbers and even numbers. The distinction between odd and even numbers is untraceably ancient. The ancient general belief that odd numbers are lucky and even numbers are unlucky, is widely prevalent in the society even today. Similarly, there is a very ancient belief that odd numbers are masculine and divine or heavenly and even numbers are feminine and human or earthy.<sup>5</sup>

2. The sum of two even numbers is always an even number. Similarly, the sum of two odd numbers is also an even number.

3. The sum of odd numbers in sequential order beginning with 1 is always a square.<sup>6</sup> e.g.  $1+3=4=2^2$ ;  $1+3+5=9=3^2$ ;  $1+3+5+7=16=4^2$ ;  $1+3+5+7+9=25=5^2$ .

4. The sum of two natural numbers is always in the form of a different natural number. ( Zero is not regarded as a natural number because counting always begins with 1 and never with zero.) The modern mathematics expresses this thus -- "The set of natural numbers is closed with respect to addition"

The concepts of addition of natural numbers was later symbolised as  $+$ . And that was the first arithmetical operation on them. It has the noteworthy property that the sum of two natural numbers is also a natural number greater than each of the two natural number.

At initial stages the concept of subtraction implied the removal of smaller natural number from the bigger ones. The reverse could not be conceived of for a long time. But some one appears to have hit upon the idea of proceeding the other way round. He showed this with a practical example. Suppose a man has five coins of his own and he has to pay seven coins to some one else. He can pay seven coins to other person only after taking a loan of two coins from a third person. Thus  $5 - 7 = -2$ , Here 5 stands for the number of coins that the man possesses as his own.  $-7$  stands for the number of coins that he has to pay to someone as a loan.  $-2$  stands for the number of coins that the man takes as a loan from the third person. Thus the negative (-ve) numbers denote debt.<sup>8</sup> In short, the new process of subtracting a big number from a small number produced a category of negative (-ve) numbers. Compared to the natural numbers, they were unreal and imaginary. They were denoted by putting the negative (-ve) sign before natural numbers. These imaginary integers in the form of negative natural numbers came to be recognized as a set of negative integers and the real natural numbers in the form of positive numbers along with zero came to be recognised as a set of positive integers.<sup>9</sup> These numbers can be arranged in an ascending order as under :

(.....-1000,.....-900,.....-100,.....-90,.....-50,.....-10,.....-9,.....-7,.....-4,.....-1,.....0,.....1,.....5,.....9,.....10,.....60,.....100,.....1000,.....)

Natural numbers are also called positive (+ve) integers.

A very important point emerges from the similarity of positive and negative integers. Every number on the right in the sequence is 1 more than the immediately preceding left one.<sup>10</sup>

According to the research scholars of modern age, the development of civilization induced the use of continually increasing big numbers in social transactions. The operation of addition was found to be too cumbersome to tackle the complicated problems involving large numbers arising out of expanding business and commerce. The concept of multiplication emerged out of the process of giving a short form to the operation of addition. It was symbolized as  $\times$

In the single set of aforementioned two groups of numbers (positive and negative integers) the product of two numbers of the either group belong to the same group. <sup>11</sup>

The product of a positive (+ve) number and a negative (-ve) number is always a negative number. In practice, this operation is used to show a quantity of debt. e.g.  $5 \times (-4) = -20$ . This equation implies that a loan of 4 coins was taken five times. If -4 is added to -4 five times, the summation will be -20. The total loan will amount<sup>12</sup> to 20.

The method of multiplication was invented as a shortcut to the process of addition for a large scale counting of articles, so the method of division was invented and popularized as a shortcut to the process of subtraction as the joint family system gave way to the system of divided family and it became necessary to separate thing of the parental house into divisions. Application of division method to the set of integers proved creative. It induced the following concepts regarding to other types of numbers :

1. The numbers that could be divided by two, came to be called even numbers. e.g. 2, 4, 6, 8, 10, 12 etc.

2. The numbers that could not be divided by two, came to be called odd numbers. 1, 3, 5, 7, 9, 11 etc.

Same way numbers that were divisible by 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 etc. and those that were not divisible by them created various classes of numbers.

A new class of natural numbers was discovered. None of its members could be divided by any natural number other than 1 and itself. These numbers are called prime numbers. e.g. 1, 2, 3, 5, 7, 11, 13, 17, 19, 23 etc.<sup>13</sup>

The division method created a new set of numbers called fractional numbers e.g. On dividing 1 by 2, 3, 4, 5 etc. one gets  $1/2$ ,  $1/3$ ,  $1/4$ ,  $1/5$ ,



etc. Fractional numbers also show the ratio of the divisor to the dividend e.g.  $2/4 = 1/2$ ;  $20/4 = 5/1$ ..... etc. They are, therefore, called rational numbers.<sup>14</sup>

Rational numbers are innumerable. Even between two consequent integers, there are innumerable rational numbers. Besides, there can be innumerable rational numbers even between two rational numbers. No two fractional or rational numbers can therefore be said to be quite adjacent. This class of rational numbers is, therefore, extremely dense.<sup>15</sup> Since all integers are divisible by 1, they are also called rational numbers. Regarding fractional rational numbers, it should, however, be noted that the divisor is not zero.

The idea of square-root emerges from the so called Pythagoras theorem. 'So called' because Indian mathematicians had detailed practical knowledge of this theorem centuries before the birth of Pythagoras.<sup>16</sup> It is believed that among the forty-five Jain canonical scriptures *Sūryaprajñapti*, *Caṃdraprajñapti*, *Jambūdvīpaprajñapti* etc. relating to mathematics, were orally communicated by Lord Mahāvīra during the period between 557 B.C. to 527 B.C. There square-root is named as *Karaṇaprakriyā* and it has been widely used. Moreover  $\sqrt{10}$  was widely used as gross value of  $\pi$  pi.<sup>17</sup> A Jain Ācārya named Ācārya Vīrasēna used 355/113 instead of  $\pi$  pi. Śrīnivāsa Rāmānujan, the modern mathematician found out this as late as in the nineteenth century.<sup>18</sup>

If two sides of a right-angled triangle have the length of one unit of measurement, the length of its diagonal is  $\sqrt{2}$ . A number of attempts have been made to find the exact value of  $\sqrt{2}$  but in vain. Similarly, the exact values of  $\sqrt{3}$ ,  $\sqrt{5}$ ,  $\sqrt{6}$ ,  $\sqrt{7}$  etc. can also not be found. Nor can these numbers be shown by the ratio of two natural numbers. These numbers are, therefore, called irrational numbers. Like the numbers shown above  $\sqrt[3]{2}$ ,  $\sqrt[3]{3}$ ,  $\sqrt[4]{2}$ ,  $\sqrt[4]{3}$ , etc. are also called irrational numbers.<sup>19</sup> A number of attempts have been made to find out an estimated approximate value of these irrational numbers. These irrational numbers fall somewhere between two rational numbers. Only this can be determined.<sup>20</sup> All these rational and irrational numbers are collectively commonly called Real numbers.<sup>21</sup>

Proceeding further, we come across yet another class of numbers, called complex Numbers. Square roots, forth-roots etc. of negative numbers are very useful in these complex numbers. Really speaking the square-roots, the fourth roots or sixth-roots of negative numbers have imaginary existence. Mahāvīracarya, the Jain mathematician of the ninth century of A.D., was the first to call them imaginary.<sup>22</sup> Later on in the year 1545 A.D. the mathematician named Cardon also called them imaginary. Of course, these numbers are used in mathematics in the following way : e.g.  $40 = 25 + 15 = 5^2 - (\sqrt{-15})^2 = (5 + \sqrt{-15})(5 - \sqrt{-15})$

Here  $(5 + \sqrt{-15})$  and  $(5 - \sqrt{-15})$  are called complex numbers. Since there is no real number in mathematics whose square can be a negative number, it is not possible to find out the real value of  $\sqrt{-15}$ , and therefore, it is called, imaginary.

### *Zero - The Eternal Enigma*

Zero is a unique gift of Indian mathematicians to the world. Of course, who invented zero? How? All this cannot be definitely decided. But we can make inferences.

We make a dual use of zero- as a symbol and as a number. In the initial stage, zero was used as a symbol. Zero is used to show total absence of a thing. Formerly, Indian writers used words and letters to indicate numbers and figures. Then figures 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, etc. were used as symbols for those words. Along with the words, these figures i.e. numbers were also written between brackets e.g.(3, 5, 6, 1, .....etc.) But when total absence of a thing was to be shown, a point was put between brackets along with the word standing for sky. (.) This is what some believe.<sup>24</sup> This symbol (.) showed a null set or null vector.<sup>25</sup> As time passed by, the point, it is inferred dropped out of the brackets and only brackets were used. Which people wrote the symbol of brackets hurriedly, they perhaps joined the brackets together. And this is how today's form of zero came into being. It is my inference that zero was thus created. It showed total absence of a thing. Then after a very long period of time, it was accepted in the form of number. After acceptance of zero as a number, it was again a question to place zero in the order of numbers. Generally, in computers and typewriters zero is placed after 1, 2, 3, 4, 5,

6, 7, 8, 9. Here we can see that if we count the numbers from 1 to 9, from left each consecutive number to the right is greater by 1. Though zero was placed after nine, it is not greater than nine. Therefore, in an arithmetical series, zero is placed before 1 and after -1.

There is a book of Pingala on prosody. It was written perhaps in the second century B.C. It was found in that book that zero was for the first time used as a symbol. Also in the book of Jain Ācārya named Jinabhadrasūrijī, zero is used as a symbol of emptiness.<sup>26</sup>

### *Mathematics In Ancient India*

Like the top crown of the peacock, like the valuable pearl or the mountain peak, mathematics occupied the most, superior status in the Vēdāngas.<sup>27</sup>

- Vēdānga Jyōtiṣa

The most significant source of information regarding the ancient Indian culture is the four Vēdas. Of course, European researchers and Indian researchers are not all of the same opinion regarding the time of composition of Vēdas.<sup>28</sup> But all agree that Vēdas are more ancient than any of the Western civilizations and there is no doubt about it.

Archaeological relics of Mohan-Jo-Doro and Harappan etc. belong to what we call the Indus (Sindhu) valley civilization and that is the Hindu Civilization which is believed to be the most ancient. According to the researchers, Vedas appear to have been composed a little later than 3000 B.C. Vedas and other literary works were preserved for centuries in oral tradition, i.e. the tradition of listening and memorizing. They are, therefore, also called "Śrutis". Brahmin literature appears to have been composed in the vicinity of 200 B.C.

First glimpses of mathematics are visible in the Brahmin literature. Evolution of arithmetic, geometry and astronomy is discernible from them. Vēdāngas and mathematics relating to astronomy dealt with in Vēdāngas were composed during 2000 B.C. to 1500 B.C. In those days, there were mainly two divisions of knowledge :

1. Parā-Vidyā which fully dealt with spirituality and 2. Aparā-Vidyā which dealt with secular prescriptions, prohibitions and rituals. Mathematics and other sciences formed parts of Aparā-Vidyā and they were

considered to be helpful to spiritual knowledge.<sup>29</sup>

In discussions in Chāndōgya Upaniṣad mathematics was spoken of as Rāśividya (the knowledge of quantity) and astronomy was spoken of as Nakṣatravidyā (the knowledge of planets). Mathematics is their English name. The popular name of mathematics in India has continued to be 'Gaṇita' since ancient times.<sup>30</sup>

Researchers today believe that the familiar numerals including zero and the decimal system were invented, applied and put on solid foundation during 400 B.C. to 400 A.D.<sup>31</sup> In those days geometry was called field arithmetic and arithmetic was called 'Dhūli-Gaṇita', 'Dhūli-Karma' or 'Pāṭī-Gaṇita'.<sup>32</sup>

It is strange but true that from the beginning of their numerical thinking, ancient Indian mathematicians used ten as the base for counting. Even before the process of writing was invented, Indians used very large numbers with ten as base. These numbers are one (1), ten (10), hundred (100), thousand (1000), ten thousands (10,000) etc. upto a hundred thousand billions<sup>33</sup> (100,000,000,000,000,000).

In an ancient book entitled 'Lalita-Vistara', we find 100 fold series. The book was composed in about 100 B.C.<sup>34</sup>

In ancient times, almost all treatises written on mathematics as well as the literature on other subjects was written in verse. That is why letters of alphabets, symbolic words used in Sanskrit<sup>35</sup> or words directly used for numbers namely one, two, three etc.<sup>36</sup> are mentioned in verses.

The words sun, moon, Brahma, earth etc. were used for 1, Eyes, ears, nose, hands, feet were used for 2. Tenses, worlds, Guṇa etc. were used for 3. Similarly, different words were used for four, five, six, seven, eight, nine etc. Zero was represented by the sky and its different synonyms.. According to the rule अङ्कानां वामतो गतिः (aṅkānāṃ vāmatō gatiḥ) the number, 1230 can be shown in words by using the words kha(ख), guṇa(गुण), nētra(नेत्र), sūrya(सूर्य).(0,3,2,1)

Even today eulogical articles and documents and in the colophons of manuscripts written in Sanskrit prose or verse literature, the year of writing, the year of composition, the day of writing etc. are mentioned in this way.

According to references of the ancient available treatises the following books of 'Pāṭī-Gaṇita' are extant:<sup>37</sup>

1. Baksalī Manuscript	-	Second Century
2. Bhāskara-1`	Laghu-Bhāskariya, Mahā-Bhāskariya	sixth Century
3. Śrīdhara	Triṣaṣṭika	750 A.D.
4. Mahāvīra	Gaṇitasārasaṅgraha	850 A.D.
5. Śrīpati	Gaṇita Tilaka	1039 A.D.
6. Bhāskara-2	Līlāvātī	1150 A.D.
7. Nārāyaṇa	Gaṇita Kaumudī	1356 A.D.
8. Munīśvara	Pāṭīsāra	1658 A.D.

Moreover, the following books on Astronomy or Astrology containing one or more chapters on Pāṭī-Gaṇita are extant :<sup>38</sup>

1. Sūryasiddhānta	-	300 A.D.
2. Āryabhaṭṭa-1	Āryabhaṭṭīya	499 A.D.
3. Varāha Mihīra	Pañcasiddhāntaṭīkā -	505 A.D.
4. Brahmagupta	Brahma-Sphuṭa-Siddhānta	628 A.D.
5. Āryabhaṭṭa-2	Mahā-Siddhānta	950 A.D.
6. Śrīpati	Siddhānta-Śekhara	1039 A.D.
7. Kamalākara	Siddhānta Tattva Vivēka	1658 A.D.

### Jain Canonical Scriptures and Mathematics

Every religion irrespective of its name, is divisible into two distinct and distinguishable aspects of its manifestations (1) the spiritual aspect and (2) the aspect of worship of karma. Almost all spiritual doctrines can be abstractly traced in the properties of mathematical concepts of zero and infinity, signifying respectively the beginning and the end of all creations.<sup>39</sup> The following verse of the Īśāvāsyōpaniṣad reflects the concept of spiritual perfection as well as the concept of infinity.

ॐ पूर्णमदः पूर्णमिदं, पूर्णात् पूर्णमुदच्यते । पूर्णस्य पूर्णमादाय पूर्णमेवावशिष्यते ॥

OM pūrṇamadaḥ pūrṇamidaṁ, pūrṇāt pūrṇamudacyatē .

pūrṇasya pūrṇamādāya pūrṇamēvāvaśiṣyatē ..

(This is a whole. That is whole. Whole can be obtained from whole and if whole is completely taken out of a whole, only a whole remains.)

The concepts of innumerable and the infinite in Jain mathematics also represent this same concept. Innumerable numbers have innumerable types or divisions. If an innumerable number is subtracted from an innumerable number, what remains is an innumerable number. Similarly, if an infinite number is subtracted from an infinite number, what remains is an infinite number because an infinite number has infinite types or divisions.

Bhagavān Mahāvīra and Gautama Buddha respectively founded the Jain religion and the Buddhist religion before 527 B.C., gave their sermons and propagated their religious doctrines.

Jain canonical literature is divided into four sections :

1. Dravyānuyōga
2. Gaṇitānuyōga
3. Carāṇakaraṇānuyōga
4. Dharmakathānuyōga

Jambūdvīpaprajñapti, Sūryaprajñapti, Candraprajñapti, Dvīpasāgaraprajñapti etc. Jain Āgamas and other treatises like Laghuḥkṣētrasamāsa Brhatkṣētrasamāsa Laghusaṅgrahaṇī Brhatsaṅgrahaṇī and Jyōtiṣakaraṇḍaka etc. belong to the Gaṇitanuyoga section. Jain Ganita i.e. Jain Mathematics of those days can be divided into two sections.<sup>40</sup>

1. Gaṇitānuyōga :- Mathematical Doctrines
2. Saṅkhayāna :- Science of Numbers

Similarly, mathematics found in the Buddhist literature can be divided into three sections :-

1. Mudrā - i.e. Arithmetic of Finger
2. Gaṇana - i.e. Mental Arithmetic and
3. Saṅkhayāna - i.e. Higher Arithmetic.<sup>41</sup>

The Jain canonical scriptures entitled "Jambūdvīpaprajñapti" shows a numeral of Jain arithmetic. Of course, it has base of ten. After the

numbers 84 lakhs, Jain literature shows the base of 84 lakhs along with base of 10 and there are 36 numerals with the base of 84,00,000. Transforming the number into one with a base of ten, we get a number of 250 digits. In Jain scriptures this number is called a 'Śīrṣaprahēlikā'.<sup>42</sup>

2500 years ago, Jain scripturists showed this large number. We cannot even imagine it. Even the modern simple computers take nearly as long as two hours to arrive at the 70 digits of  $84^{36}$ . In ancient times, omniscient beings of the status of Bhagavān Mahāvīra mentioned such a large number very naturally and without any mistake. It is noteworthy here that such a large number was preserved unmistakably in the oral tradition for 980 years from the times of Lord Mahāvīra to the times of Śrī Dēvavarddhigaṇi Kṣamāśramaṇa. Later on, when Jain canonical scriptures came to be written in scripts, this number also found its place in them.

In short, modern researchers and historians believe that zero and the decimal system were invented during 200-100 B.C.<sup>43</sup> but according to the statement of Upādhyāya Śrī Vinayavijayajī, the commentator of the Kalpasūtra, when Bhagavān Rṣabhadēva taught the practical custom of a householder, he also taught mathematics.<sup>44</sup> Therefore, mathematics of Indian tradition is billions-billions of years old. Similarly it is believed that the set theory was invented by George Cantor. But on seeing the references in the Prakrit scriptures of Jainism one clearly finds that the set theory was originally used in the Jain tradition by Jain writers for their understanding and explanation of Karma theory.<sup>45</sup>

The Jambūdvīpaprājñapti, the Sūryaprājñapti, the Candraprājñapti, the Dvīpasāgaraprājñapti and other Jain canonical scriptures show the methods of finding out the volume of mountains etc. along with the simple methods of finding out the circumference and area of the Jambūdvīpa with its diameter. Thus we also find field arithmetic i.e. geometry in Jain canonical scriptures. Of course, this geometry is of the kind of plane geometry of Euclid.

Jain numerical system divides numbers into three divisions :- 1. Numerable 2. Innumerable and 3. Infinite. Of numerable numbers there are three subdivisions :

(1) the lowest numerable (2) the intermediate numerable and (3) the highest numerable. In Jain tradition, one is not regarded as a numerable

number. Counting begins with number two.<sup>46</sup> Therefore, two is called the lowest numeral. Then the numbers from three onwards to the number which is less than the lowest innumerable number by two are called intermediate numeral numbers. The number which is less than the lowest innumerable number by one is called the highest numerable number. We can know the highest numerable number, if we know the lowest innumerable number. It is very difficult to know which and how many digits the lowest innumerable number has. Jain canonical scriptures show one method for this. But with the help of it nobody has yet arrived at the number of digits. But the number must be much larger than one Śīrṣaprahēlikā which consists of 250 digits. One Śīrṣaprahēlikā =  $(84,00,000)^{36}$  = 187,955,179,550,112,595,419,009,699,813,430,770,797,465,494,261,977,747,657,257,345,718,6816  $\times 10^{180}$ . We cannot even imagine the digits of the lowest innumerable number.

Innumerable numbers are of nine kinds : (1) the lowest Paritta Asaṅkhyāta, (2) the intermediate Paritta Asaṅkhyāta (3) the highest Paritta Asaṅkhyāta (4) lowest Yukta Asaṅkhyāta, (5) the intermediate Yukta Asaṅkhyāta (6) the highest Yukta Asaṅkhyāta (7) the lowest Asaṅkhyāta Asaṅkhyāta (8) the intermediate Asaṅkhyāta Asaṅkhyāta (9) the highest Asaṅkhyāta Asaṅkhyāta.<sup>47</sup>

Similarly, infinite numbers are of nine kinds. They are as follows: (1) the lowest Paritta Ananta (2) the intermediate Paritta Ananta (3) the highest Paritta Ananta (4) the lowest Yukta Ananta (5) the intermediate Yukta Ananta (6) the highest Yukta Ananta (7) the lowest Ananta Ananta (8) the intermediate Ananta Ananta (9) the highest Ananta Ananta.<sup>48</sup>

Regarding Jain mathematics Sarju Tiwari writes :- "The Jain philosophy of ahiṃsā (nonviolence) was totally opposed to the sacrificial cult of the Hindus. They developed geometrical concepts in their own way. The Jain cosmography conceived the shape of the universe, the mountains and the continents as trapezia. They used simple and short mathematical methods. Their assumption of the circular orbits of the heavenly bodies such as the Sun, the Moon, the Mars etc. and the circular shape of the earth, led them to study the property of circles and parallelograms. Their studies enabled them to evaluate the value<sup>49</sup> of  $\pi$  as  $\sqrt{10}$ ."

The book written in English by Śrī Śaṅkarācāryaji entitled 'The Vaidic



Mathematics' gives 16 formulae in Sanskrit based on ancient Vēdas. These formulae are very significant. If the sūtras are very well understood and properly used, they can be very easily used for solving problems of any branch of mathematics.

References to these formulae or sūtras shown in 'The Vaidic mathematics' are also found in ancient Jain scriptures. In the commentary on the Jain Āgama entitled 'Śrī Nandisūtra', the functions of these sūtras are described as 'parikarma'. The context of the scripture is as under:

" सूत्रादि-पूर्वगतानुयोगसूत्रार्थग्रहणयोगतासम्पादनसमर्थानि परिकर्माणि यथा गणितशास्त्रे-  
सङ्कलनादीन्याद्यानि षोडश परिकर्माणि, शेषगणितसूत्रार्थग्रहणे योग्यतासम्पादनसमर्थानि  
यथा गणितशास्त्रे गणितशास्त्रगताद्यषोडशपरिकर्मगृहीतसूत्रार्थः सन् शेषगणितशास्त्रग्रहणयोग्यो  
भवति, नान्यथा, तथागृहीतविवक्षितपरिकर्मसूत्रार्थः सन् शेषसूत्रादिरूपदृष्टिवादश्रुतग्रहणयोग्यो  
भवति, नेतरथा, तथा चोक्तं चूर्णो-

परिकर्मेति योग्यताकरण - जहा गणियरस सोलस परिकम्मा, तग्गहियसुत्तत्थो सेसगणियरस  
जोगो भवइ एवं गहियपरिकम्मसुत्तत्थो सेससुत्ताइ दिट्ठिवायस्स जोगो भवइ ति ।"

"sūtrādi-pūrvagatānuयोगsūtrārthagrahaṇayōgtāsampādanasamarthāni  
parikarmāṇi yathā gaṇitāśāstrē – saṅkalanādīnyādyāni ṣoḍaśa parikarmāṇi,  
śeṣagaṇitasūtrārthagrahaṇē yōgyatāsampādanasamarthāni yathā gaṇitāśāstrē  
gaṇitāśāstragatādya ṣoḍaśaparikarmagrhitasūtrārthaḥ san  
śeṣagaṇitāśāstragrahaṇayōgyō bhavati, nānyathā, tathāgrhita-  
vivakṣitaparikarmasūtrārthaḥ san śeṣasūtrādirūpa dṛṣṭivādasrutagrahaṇayōgyō  
bhavati, nētarathā, tathā cōktaṃ cūrṇau-

parikarmēti yōgyatākaraṇa - jahā gaṇiyassa sōlasa parikammā, taggahiyasuttatthō  
sēsagaṇiyassa jōgō bhavai ēvaṃ gahiyaparikammasuttatthō sēsasuttāi  
diṭṭhivāyassa jōgō bhavai tti . "

(Commentary on Nandīsūtra by Malayagiri published by Āgamōdaya Samiti, Surat, p.238)

Also in the Nandīsūtra Cūrṇi (in the Prakrit language) which was written earlier than the aforementioned commentary on the Nandīsūtra, these references are found. This means that ancient Jain Ācāryas were well-versed in various branches of mathematics. It will be pertinent here to note that these sūtras are said to belong to the Vaidic mathematics not simply because they are found in Vēdas but it should be accepted that

these doctrines of pure mathematics, which were more ancient even than the Vēdas, were profusely used in the Vēdas. This means that this kind of mathematics had fully developed in India before it took birth in the culture of western countries or civilizations.

According to the belief of Śrī Śaṅkarācārya of Kanchi, the author of Vedic Mathematics, the functional use of the sūtras was not limited only to arithmetic i.e. multiplication, division, addition or subtraction but they were equally useful in algebra, geometry, trigonometry, calculus etc. According to the opinion of Dr P. C. Vaidya this is only a statement. There is not any reference about the use of these sūtras regarding to various branches of mathematics.

### *Limitations of Mathematics In Jain Philosophy*

Though mathematics is essentially an imaginary subject, it was invented and developed to satisfy human needs. The chief aim of Jain philosophy is to explain the nature of the universe and Saṃsāra i.e. birth-death cycle and mathematics is used as a practical means of doing it.

The universe has a limit. But what is the limit? How many things and what kinds of things does it contain? Mathematics is the shortest way of expressing all this. In the universe, there are infinite atoms (paramāṇus) and objects. In order to show the number and real nature of them mathematically, 'Śīrṣaprahēlikā' a number of as many as 250 digits, is used. As shown in Jain Āgama entitled 'Jambūdvīpaprājñapti' 'Śīrṣaprahēlikā' has two different sets of digits according to two different traditions. According to the tradition of the convocation of learned Jainācāryas and monks held in Mathurā i.e. Māthurīvācanā, there are 194 digits, consisting of 54 different figures and 140 zeroes. But according to the Vallabhīvācanā, there are 250 digits consisting of 70 different digits and 180 zeroes. According to the Māthurīvācanā 'Śīrṣaprahēlikā' has  $(84,00,000)^{28} = 758,263,253,073,010,241,157,973,569,975,696,406,218,966,848,080,183,296, \times 10^{140}$  digits. But according to the Vallabhīvācanā 'Śīrṣaprahēlikā' has  $(84,00,000)^{36} = 187,955,179,550,112,595,419,009,699,813,430,770,797,465,494,261,977,747,657,257,345,790,6816 \times 10^{180}$  digits. Since it is not possible to mention the number of all the substances of the universe even with this number, Jain scripturists have shown various kinds of innumerable and infinite numbers. An 'Āvalikā' has as many 'Samayas'



as the quantitative value of the lowest yukta Asaṅkhyāta number.<sup>50</sup>

According to Jain philosophy a "Samaya" is the most micro unit of time. "Āvalikā" is also a unit of time. In a Muhūrta i.e. in 48 minutes, 1,67,77,216 Āvalikās pass by.<sup>51</sup> In one Āvalikā i.e. 0.000171661 seconds as many as the lowest yukta Asaṅkhyāta i.e.

(the lowest paritta Asaṅkhyāta) the lowest paritta Asaṅkhyāta number of Samayas pass by. Samaya is the so subtle that even great souls possessing a high degree of Avadhijñāna (extra sensory knowledge) cannot know it. Along with the subtlest measure i.e. unit of time, Jain scripturists also have given the highest measure i.e. unit of time. Since the highest unit of time is also outside the limit of mathematics of Jain scripturists, it can be explained only through comparisons.

Of these, important greater units of time the smallest is 'Palyōpama'. It consists of an innumerable number of years. 10 Kōḍākōḍī means 10 crore-crore i.e.  $10^{15}$  Palyōpama years equal to a Sāgarōpama years and 10 kōḍākōḍī i.e.  $10^{15}$  Sāgarōpama years are equal to an Utsarpiṇīkāla or an Avasarpiṇīkāla. Utsarpiṇīkāla and Avasarpiṇīkāla together make a Kālacakra i.e. time-cycle.<sup>52</sup> Infinite time-cycles passed by in the past and infinite time-cycles will pass by in the future. The Palyōpama, the Sāgarōpama and the time-cycle have a fixed number of years. But since it is not possible to show it mathematically, the word "Asaṅkhyāta" i.e. innumerable is used.

As a Samaya is the smallest unit of time, so a space-point is the smallest unit of length. A space-point is a division of space, occupied by an independent paramāṇu i.e. atom which is the indivisible most micro-particle of matter. In short, the size of an independent paramāṇu, is a unit of length, breadth or thickness. Innumerable such paramāṇus joining together grossly make a unit of the most micro sub-atomic particle, accepted by the modern science. But the longest/largest unit of length is a Rajju or Rājālōka. A Rājālōka is equal to innumerable Yōjanas and one Yōjana is equal to 3200 miles or 5120 kilometres. Though the measurement of a Rājālōka is limited and definite, it is so big that it cannot be represented through numbers or mathematical equations and therefore, the word Asaṅkhyāta i.e. innumerable is used to represent it.

It is a special characteristic of Jain mathematics that negative numbers

are not at all used. Since Jain scriptures describe real objects, which are all existent, positive numbers are used for them. Dr P.C. Vaidya says that since modern mathematics is logically constituted and developed, the negative numbers in it, are real and there are also some references to show that they were first used in India during the years 400 A.D to 600 A.D. They are used to mention imaginary matters and objects.

### *Limitations of Mathematics In Modern Physics*

#### *(1) Limitations of imaginary doctrines of mathematics*

Mathematics is the basic and fundamental necessity of modern physics because modern physics explains or tries to explain all natural laws and phenomena through the medium of mathematics. But to the recent period, physics fails to explain fully through mathematical equations all physical phenomena and the laws that cause the phenomena. The mathematical equations that it gives, are true only to a certain limit. Beyond the limit, all the mathematical equations seem to be untrue and useless.

Regarding this Dr P.C. Vaidya gives his criticism that since mathematics is a branch of knowledge based on logic, there is no question whether the mathematical equations are true or not. There is only a question regarding to mathematical equations whether they can usefully or effectively indicate the laws of all natural phenomena.

The reason for this is that though mathematics is no doubt true, the man who uses it, has only a limited imaginations and though some of the assumptions that he makes, are mathematically true, prove to be untrue and unreal in practical life. They are creations of the world of imagination.

In modern mathematics, negative numbers, their multiplications, divisions and all that is imaginary. e.g.  $-4/-4 = 1$  and  $(-5) \times (-5) = 25$ . Though mathematically, they are true, they have no practical utility. A product of a positive (+ve) number and a negative (-ve) number is always a negative number. This appears to have come from practical experience. It shows the total amount of loan. e.g.  $5 \times (-4)$  means that a loan of four coins was taken five times. This amounts to a total loan of 20 coins. If -4 is added to it self five times, the result will be -20. It means that the total loan is 20 coins.

Similarly, the product of two negative (-ve) numbers is always positive (+ve). Cardon H. (1501-1576) stated this rule in 1545 A. D. <sup>53</sup> The origin or source of this rule can be traced back perhaps to the rules of Sanskrit grammar. The rules of Sanskrit grammar are called Nyāyas. In the book written in the Vikram samvat 1515 i.e. 1459 A. D. and entitled 'Nyāya-Saṅgraha', a collection of some rules from Siddhahēma sanskrit grammar, Upādhyāya Śrī Hēmahansa Gaṇi, the author gives the rule, द्वौ नञौ प्रकृतमर्थं गमयतः ॥ *dvau nañau prakṛtamārthaṁ gamayataḥ* .. (Two negatives make one positive). 'If in a sentence, two negatives are used together, they give a positive meaning.' <sup>54</sup>

The mathematical rule regarding the product or division of two negative numbers, makes it very clear that it is not necessary that mathematics should be tied down to social transactions. Really speaking, mathematical imagination creates concepts beyond practical requirements of time. But it is certainly true that such pure creations of mathematical minds have no practical use in the beginning. It often happens that for centuries such creations of imaginative mind remain on paper like dry rules. <sup>55</sup> In the early seventh century, Brahmagupta stated some rules of signs. They became common in India in the ninth century A.D. after their restatement by the mathematician named Mahāvīracarya. <sup>56</sup> However, no free use of negative numbers was made until the seventeenth century. Even Cardon had called them 'fictitious.' <sup>57</sup>

## (2) Limitations of Zero

As a symbol, zero denotes total absence of objects but when it came to be used as a number, ancient mathematicians made some rules. Especially, the position and value of zero were determined in additions, subtractions, multiplications, divisions and denotation of numbers. Generally, zero as the first figure on the right has no value. But if a number other than zero is placed before zero. It is not without a value. If a number other than zero is placed before it, in the place of tens, the value of zero is tenfold. Similarly, if a number other than zero is placed before it, zero in the place of hundreds, thousands etc., its value rises ten-ten times. Similarly, the value of zero after a decimal point, if it is followed by a number other than zero, reduces tenth-tenth times. It means that zero has no definite value. Its value depends on its place in a number.

In additions and subtractions, too, zero has no value. If zero is added to or subtracted from any number, the original number remains quite unchanged. But in multiplications and divisions, the rules of zero are very strange. If zero is multiplied by any number or any number is multiplied by zero, the product is always zero. Similarly, If zero is multiplied by zero, the product is only zero.

The strangest fact about the operation of division is that if any number is divided by zero, the result is infinity but if zero is divided by any number, the result is zero. If any number is divided by itself, the result is one (1). What would be the result if zero is divided by zero? Zero, one or infinity? Mathematicians have not been able to answer this question. They show that the operation of dividing zero by zero is indeterminate.

Similarly, a number raised to degrees namely, square, cube, fourth degree, fifth degree etc. and similarity, reduced to roots namely square root, cube-root, fourth root, fifth root of zero, it is always zero. i.e.  $0^2, 0^3, 0^4, 0^5 \dots 0^n = 0$  and  $\sqrt{0}, \sqrt[3]{0}, \sqrt[4]{0}, \sqrt[5]{0} \dots \sqrt[n]{0} = 0$ . Any number raised to zero degree is always 1. e.g.  $1^0, 2^0, 3^0, 4^0, \dots a^0 = 1$

What would be the result if zero is raised to zero degree? Zero or one? This question has also remained unanswered by mathematicians and they say that zero raised to zero is indeterminate. Really speaking  $a^0$  i.e. Zero degree of any number means any number is divided by itself and that is why the result is always 1 and  $0^0$  is indeterminate and all mathematicians accept this result.

There is a strange fact about zero, with the help of which any two unequal numbers can be proved to be equal. e.g.  $3 \times 0 = 0$  and  $5 \times 0 = 0$

$$3 \times 0 = 5 \times 0 \quad \dots (I)$$

or

$$3/5 = 0/0 \quad \dots (II)$$

But it is a strange fact that we can also deduce that

$$0/0 = 5/3 \quad \dots (III)$$

From II and III we obtain  $3/5 = 5/3$  i.e.  $9=25$

If  $0/0=1$ , from II and III, we can deduce that  $3/5 = 1$  and  $5/3 = 1$ ,

$$\therefore 5 = 3$$

Of course, all these are mathematical funs. In practical life the mean nothing.

As shown above the uses of zero also has a limit. Beyond the limit, it is useless or misleading.

### *(3) Limitations Of Mathematics In The Equations Of Modern Physics*

Mathematics is the chief base of modern physics. All the rules of physics have been mathematically transformed and the scientists today are also accustomed to talk in the language of mathematics. No new research is accepted at the international level unless it is mathematically transformed, explained or proved. Sometimes it also happens that mathematical research is made and its proof is given and later on after many years, its practical proof is obtained. Still however, on account of limits of mathematics itself, it has become necessary to make changes in mathematical equations of rules explaining various phenomena of physics, happening in the world every year. First among them are Newton's laws of dynamics and laws of gravitation.

Newton's laws of dynamics and gravitational force are quite true, when applied to objects on the earth. But when they are applied to astrophysics, the results are found to be wrong. Einstein corrected the mistakes by applying his Special Theory of Relativity and General Theory of Relativity. But as later researches show, perfectly true results were not achieved even then.

Though gifted with sharp intelligence and extraordinary imagination, Einstein was after all a man. In the days when aeroplanes were only invented and they could fly at the speed of only 80 or 100 miles/ hr., Einstein imagined that these physical objects were capable of flying at the speed of light and this was really astonishing. Today, there are supersonic planes in the world. They and spaceships travel at the speed of 25 to 30 kms per second at the most. This speed is ten thousandth part of the speed of light. Some of the sub-atomic particles travel at the speed of 150 kms/sec. Their speed is 2000th part of the speed of light. Of course, the subtle Beta particles can travel at the speed of 0.99 c i.e. 297000 kms/sec.<sup>58</sup>



It must be admitted that Einstein had a wonderful imagination but as far as the physics is concerned, the equations of mass, length and time for the moving objects and addition of vectors depending on his Special Theory of Relativity are true only to a certain limit. Beyond the limit, the equations prove to be untrue or they are not applicable or useless. The equations are as under<sup>59</sup> :

$$(1) m_v = \frac{m_o}{\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}}$$

$$(2) \Delta T = \Delta t \sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2}$$

$$(3) L = L'(\sqrt{1 - v^2 / c^2})$$

$$(4) \vec{V} = \frac{\vec{V}_1 + \vec{V}_2}{1 + \frac{\vec{V}_1 \times \vec{V}_2}{C^2}}$$

The postulates of Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity are as under:

1. The velocity of the object which produces light has no effect on the velocity of its own light. In that sense, the velocity of light is constant.
2. No object in the world can attain more velocity than the velocity of light.<sup>60</sup>

Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity, General Relativity and other inventions are based on these two postulates. The aforementioned formulae cannot be applied to objects which have greater velocity than light because here  $v$  is greater than  $c$  and therefore, the value of  $v^2/c^2$  is greater than 1 and  $1 - v^2/c^2$  has a negative(-ve) value. Therefore, the value of  $\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}$  given in the formula mentioned above cannot be obtained or it is only imaginary. In the fourth formula even if  $V_1$  and  $V_2$  are greater than  $c$ , their addition is always less than  $c$ .

Regarding Newton's laws of gravitation, there is a formula  $F = G \frac{m_1 \bullet m_2}{d^2}$

where  $F$  stands for the force of gravitation,  $m_1$  is the mass of object No.1,  $m_2$  is the mass of object No.2 and  $d$  is distance between the two objects. The gravitational force between any two objects in the universe is directly proportional to the product of their masses and inversely proportional to the square of the distance between them. Supposing that the distance between the two objects is reduced to zero, the gravitational force

between them would be infinity. But in practical experience, even if the distance between two objects is reduced to zero, the gravitational force between them does not rise to infinity.

Thus every mathematical equation in physics can give satisfactory solution only to a certain limit. Thereafter, equations cannot be used.

What was called field arithmetic in ancient times, is now called geometry. Since childhood, we know Euclid's geometry which is known as plane geometry. Still however, its propositions do not accord with our perceptions of touch or sight. The parallel straight lines of Euclid's geometry, never meet. Their existence can be proved by prolonging them on both sides as far as possible. They do not accord with what we see with our eyes. We can never see such parallel straight lines. Though rails of a railway are parallel, they seem to meet after a very long distance in both directions. Similarly, parallel straight lines seem to meet at the point of intersection of the lines of our eye-sight. Euclid's straight lines simultaneously meet at only one point but not at more than one point. Euclid's definitions and meanings of straight lines and parallel lines cannot be applied to visual geometry. All these difficulties were remedied by initiation of a new geometry, the projective geometry through new mathematical concepts.<sup>61</sup>

It was finally established after the publication of Einstein's General Theory of Relativity (1915) that many results of Euclidean geometry considered by past generations as eternal truths, were not fully correct. These could be at best described as approximately correct.

Curved space on all sides of celestial bodies which have a strong gravitational force according to Einstein's General Theory of Relativity, initiated quite a new kind of geometry, Riemannian geometry which was quite different from Euclidean geometry.<sup>62</sup>

Thus the rules of arithmetic, algebra, geometry and mathematics are not only imaginative or symbolic but also they are very useful in day-to-day life. Still however, they have not been able to explain the true reality of the universe. That is why Einstein, the talented physicist said, "As far as the laws of mathematics refer to reality, they are not certain and as far as they are certain, they do not refer to reality." It means that if we think of mathematical laws in the context of reality, the rules are not definite

or perfectly true and if we accept the mathematical rules as perfectly true, they do not accord with reality. It means that they cannot be applied everywhere in the world of reality.

In short there are many phenomena of the physical world which openly violate the rules of physics represented in the mathematical formulations. Besides, some physical, material and all spiritual phenomena are also beyond the laws of physics interpreted through mathematics. Let us wish and hope to be capable of representing all the physical, material and spiritual phenomena through a single mathematical law which is beyond the limits of time, space and matter.

2nd December, 1997  
Parulnagar, Sola Road  
Ahmedabad -380061

#### References :

1. Mathematics In History, Culture, Philosophy and Science by Sarju Tiwari, Forward by J. B. Ganguly, Vice-chancellor, Tripura Uni. p .VIII

( Mittal publication, New Delhi, 1992)

02. Ibid P.13
03. Ibid P.49
04. Ibid P.98
05. Ibid P.97
06. Ibid P.99
07. Ibid P.108
08. Ibid P.108
09. Ibid P.104
10. Ibid P.103
11. Ibid P.104
12. Ibid P.104
13. Ibid P.105
14. Ibid P.106
15. Ibid P.106
16. Ibid P.107
17. Basic Mathematics by L.C. Jain P. 47
18. Basic Mathematics by L. C. Jain P. 33

Jainism : Through Science by Muni Nandighoshvijay

( Gujarati section) P.98 ( Mahāvīra Jain Vidyālaya, Bombay, 1995)

19. Mathematics In History, Culture, Philosophy and Science by Sarju

Tiwari P.107

20. Ibid P.108

21. Ibid P.108

22. Ibid P.104

23. Ibid P.104

24. Ibid P.121

25. Ibid P.18

26. Ibid P.89

27. Ibid P.79

28. Ibid P.80

29. Ibid P.81

30. Ibid P.81

31. Ibid P.81

32. Ibid P.82

33. Ibid P.82

34. Ibid P.83

35. Ibid P.87

36. Ibid P.87

37. Ibid P.90

38. Ibid P.90

39. Ibid P.5-6

40. Ibid P.81

41. Ibid P.81

42. Jambūdvīpaprājñapti (Paper manuscript) Folio 69A

43. Mathematics In History, Culture, Philosophy and Science by Sarju

Tiwari P.121

44. Kalpasūtra, Commentary by Śrī Vinayavijayajī 7th part.

45. The Tao of Jain Sciences by L.C. Jain P. 4

46. 4th Karmagranth. verse No.72

47. Ibid verse No. 78 to 82

48. Ibid verse No. 79 to 85

49. Mathematics In History, Culture, Philosophy and Science by Sarju

Tiwari P. 92

50. 4th Karmagranth verse No. 78
51. Navatattva, verse No. 12
52. Bṛhat-Saṅgrahaṇī, verse No. 2-3 and its commerty
53. Mathematics In History, Culture, Philosophy and Science by Sarju Tiwari P.104
54. Nyāya-Saṅgraha by Śrī Hēmahansa Gaṇi, Nyāya No. 117
- 55-56-57 Mathematics In History, Culture, Philosophy And Science by Sarju Tiwari P. 104
58. Jainism :Through Science by Muni Nandighoshvijay (English Section ) P. 17
59. Ibid P. 4-5
60. Ibid P 16
61. Mathematics In history, Culture, Philosophy and Science by Sarju Tiwari P. 3-4
62. Ibid P. 174-51.



IF PHYSICS LEADS US TODAY TO A WORLD VIEW WHICH ESSENTIALLY MYSTICAL, IT RETURNS, IN A WAY, TO ITS BEGINNING, 2500 YEARS AGO. .... WESTERN SCIENCE IS FINALLY OVERCOMING THIS VIEW AND COMING BACK TO THOSE OF THE EARLY GREEK AND EASTERN PHILOSOPHIES. THIS TIME, HOWEVER, IT IS NOT ONLY BASED ON INTUITION, BUT ALSO ON EXPERIMENTS OF GREAT PRECISION AND SOPHISTICATION, AND ON A RIGOROUS AND CONSISTENT MATHEMATICAL FORMALISM.

FRITJOF CAPRA

---

## 11. The Value of $\pi$

No student of mathematics (geometry) is unfamiliar with the number  $\pi$  (pi). If asked, any student will say that its value is  $22/7$  or  $3.14$ . A brief history of  $\pi$  is presented here.

The ratio of the circumference and the diameter of a circle is always constant whether, the circle is small or big. This fact was known even in ancient times. Greek mathematicians developed mathematical proofs of this. This ratio which is generally denoted by the Greek letter  $\pi$  (pi) has an approximate value of three. For a very long time this value of  $\pi$  was in use.

$\pi$  is an irrational number. An irrational number is a number whose definite value can be denoted by indefinite /innumerable digits following the decimal point.  $\sqrt{2}$  is also an irrational number. Though  $\pi$  and  $\sqrt{2}$  are both irrational numbers, there is a basic difference between them. He who knows the method of finding the square root of a number, can find the value of  $\sqrt{2}$  to as many digits as he wishes or desires. The definite value of  $\pi$  cannot be found so easily. Great mathematicians have made many attempts to do it.

In ancient times Greek mathematicians presented the problem of transforming a circle, which is related to  $\pi$ , into a square. Its solution was found as late as the nineteenth century. This is how they presented the problem: "Only with the help of a foot-rule and a compass, a square of the area of a given circle should be drawn. It should be noted that the foot-rule should be used for drawing lines only. It should not be used for taking measurement and the compass should be used for only cutting the circle, its arc and lines."

In 1882 A.D., Lindemann, the German mathematician showed that it was really impossible to find a solution to this problem.<sup>1</sup> If this problem could be solved,  $\sqrt{2}$  and  $\pi$  would be considered the irrational numbers of the same sort. It should be noted here that a line of the definite length of  $\sqrt{2}$  can be drawn with only a foot-rule and a compass. But a line of the definite length of  $\pi$  cannot be drawn.

With the help of the outer exterior polygon touching the circumference of

a circle at several points and the inner exterior polygon mutually joining several points on the circumference of the circle, Archimedes, the Greek mathematician went on increasing the sides of both the polygons to the largest possible number and tried to find the ratio between the diameter and circumference of a circle. And he was very successful.<sup>2</sup>

Since Archimedes tried to find the exact value of  $\pi$ , a large number of mathematicians in Europe have been trying to find the value of  $\pi$ . They have given various formulae. The German mathematician and philosopher, G. Leibnitz, the Swiss mathematician L. Euler, the British mathematicians, J. Wallis and Lord Brounker are among them. The formulae given by these four mathematicians are respectively as under<sup>3</sup>:

$$(1) \quad \frac{\pi}{2} = 1 - \frac{1}{3} + \frac{1}{5} - \frac{1}{7} + \frac{1}{9} - \frac{1}{11} \text{ etc.}$$

$$(2) \quad \frac{\pi^2}{6} = \frac{1}{1^2} + \frac{1}{2^2} + \frac{1}{3^2} + \frac{1}{4^2} + \frac{1}{5^2} \text{ etc.}$$

$$(3) \quad \frac{\pi}{4} = \frac{2}{1} \times \frac{2}{3} \times \frac{4}{3} \times \frac{4}{5} \times \frac{6}{5} \times \frac{6}{7} \text{ etc.}$$

$$(4) \quad \frac{\pi}{4} = \frac{1}{1 + \frac{1^2}{2 + \frac{3^2}{3 + \frac{7^2}{9^2}}}} \text{ etc.}$$

In all the above four methods, there are infinite components. But we can make calculations only with a definite number of components. In this calculation, therefore, the larger the number of components that we use, the truer is the value.

During the last two or three centuries, there was a craze in Europe and other countries of the world to find a more and more exact value of  $\pi$ . A mathematician named D.Shanks found the value of  $\pi$  down to 700 digits subsequent to the decimal point. But again the calculation was made on a modern electronic computer and many errors were found in it.<sup>4</sup>

The needle problem which depended on the probability theory, was presented by the French scientist, Buffon. On the basis of it, some scientists in Europe, tried, in the 19th century, to find the value of  $\pi$  and the results are as follows.<sup>5</sup>

The scientist performing the experiment	Year	Number of needle interpolations	value of $\pi$
Wolf	1850	5000	3.1596
Smith	1855	3204	3.1553
Demorgan	1860	0600	3.137
Fox	1864	1030	3.1595
Lazzarini	1901	3408	3.141592

The values of  $\pi$  found now are as follows.<sup>6</sup>

(1) 3.1415 92 65 35 89 79

(2) 3.1415 92 65 35 89 79 32 38 46 26 43 38 32 79

Mathematicians of ancient India also very well knew the value of  $\pi$ . Āryabhaṭṭa very often used the equation<sup>7</sup>  $\pi = 3.1416$ .

Scholars of the Jain tradition also have shown various values of  $\pi$ . Though the word  $\pi$  (pi) is not found in Jain scriptures, following the calculations of area and circumference of circular objects, they used definite figures/numbers in place of  $\pi$ . In some Jain scriptures,<sup>8</sup> the value of  $\pi$  is generally shown, in a very gross manner, to be 3. But where the circumference and area of a very large/vast circular area like Jambūdvīpa, are to be found, the formula  $\pi = \sqrt{10}$  is used.<sup>9</sup> Everywhere in ancient India, this value of  $\pi$  was accepted and it was a



little greater than the correct value of  $\pi$  (down to two numbers /figures, following the decimal point). In Jain scriptures we also find<sup>10</sup>  $\pi = 16^2/9^2$  i.e. 256/81. There is not much difference between this value of  $\pi$  and  $\sqrt{10}$ . Moreover, showing the method of finding the circumference from the diameter of the circle, the Ācārya named Vīrasēna said that the circumference of the circle can be got by multiplying the diameter by 16 and dividing the product by 113 and adding to the result thrice the diameter. The value of  $\pi$  thus<sup>11</sup> obtained is 355/113. It is a real surprise that it is entirely correct down to six digits subsequent to the decimal point. It is very surprising that in the solution to the problem of squaring the circle, found by Śrīnivāsa Rāmānujan, an Indian mathematician this value of  $\pi$  is found. If the area of a circle is 140,000 square miles, the length of a side of its related square is only one inch larger than its definite mathematical length.<sup>12</sup> This value of  $\pi$  was familiar in China also. Possibly, it went to China with the Chinese travellers/visitors Hu-en-sang, Fahyan etc. after the times of King Ashoka.

13

The Indian mathematician, Śrīnivāsa Rāmānujan has also given new formulae regarding the value of  $\pi$ <sup>14</sup>:

$$(1) \quad \pi = \frac{63}{25} \times \frac{17 + 15\sqrt{5}}{07 + 15\sqrt{5}}$$

$$(2) \quad \pi = \sqrt[4]{9^2 + \frac{19^2}{22}} = 3.14159265262.$$

The first of these two values is true down to nine digits after the decimal point, whereas the second value is true down to eight digits after the decimal point.

Recently, two years ago, a scientist has found on computer the definite value of  $\pi$  down to 170 hundred thousand digits after the decimal point.<sup>15</sup> It is a matter of pride for India that formula of Śrīnivāsa Rāmānujan, the famous mathematician of India, was used in this calculation.

## References:

1. See : Science Reporter, 1987 p. 471.
2. Ibid p. 471.
3. Ibid p. 472.
4. Ibid p. 472.
5. Ibid p. 472.
6. Ibid p. 473.
7. Ibid p. 471.
8. See: Basic Mathematics by Prof. L.C.Jain p. 47.
9. Ibid p. 47.
10. Ibid p. 47.
11. Ibid p. 33.
12. See: Science Reporter, December 1987 p. 640.
13. See: Basic Mathematics by Prof. L.C.Jain p. 33.
14. See: Science Reporter, September, 1987 p. 472.
15. See: Science Reporter, December, 1987 p. 628.



जे एगं जाणइ से सव्वं जाणइ, जे सव्वं जाणइ से एगं जाणइ

आचारंगसूत्र

JĒ ĒGAṂ JĀṆAI SĒ SAVVAṂ JĀṆAI,  
JĒ SAVVAṂ JĀṆAI SĒ ĒGAṂ JĀṆAI

"ONE, BY KNOWING WHICH ALL IS KNOWN,  
ALL, BY KNOWING WHICH ONE IS KNOWN"

Ācārāṅgasūtra

## 12. Mathematical Form of Paramāṇu-units (Vargaṇā)

According to Ācārāṅga sūtra

**V**argaṇā is nothing but a type of paramāṇu-units, possessing the same number of paramāṇus.

The first Vargaṇā means individual paramāṇus which have separate existence in the universe from each other. A second Vargaṇā means all paramāṇu-units throughout the universe which have only two paramāṇus. In the same way, there are other Vargaṇās possessing paramāṇu-units having 3, 4, 5, ... innumerable paramāṇus.

But these Vargaṇās are not useful for Audārika bodies. Even the paramāṇu-units having infinite paramāṇus are not useful for Audārika bodies. Suppose this infinite number is denoted as  $a_1'$ . After these infinite numbers of Vargaṇās, there are some useful Vargaṇās possessing the paramāṇu-units having the number of paramāṇus  $a_1+1, a_1+2, a_1+3, \dots, a_1+a_1'$ , where  $a_1 > a_1'$ , but  $a_1'$  is also infinite. These Vargaṇās are useful for Audārika bodies and they are also called Audārika Vargaṇā.

After  $a_1+a_1'$ , there are many useless Vargaṇās, e.g.  $a_1+a_1'+1, a_1+a_1'+2, a_1+a_1'+3, \dots, a_1+a_1'+a_1''$ . Here  $a_1'' > a_1+a_1'$ . All these are not useful for Audārika bodies due to greater number of paramāṇus, and also not useful for Vaikriya bodies due to greater size of paramāṇus.

Now we assume that  $a_1+a_1'+a_1'' = a_2$ , then  $a_2+1, a_2+2, a_2+3, \dots, a_2+a_2'$  Vargaṇās are useful for Vaikriya bodies, where  $a_2 > a_2'$ . Vargaṇās  $a_2+a_2'+1, a_2+a_2'+2, a_2+a_2'+3, \dots, a_2+a_2'+a_2''$  are useless for Vaikriya bodies due to their greater number of paramāṇus and also useless for Āhāraka bodies due to their greater size of the paramāṇus. Here also  $a_2'' > a_2+a_2'$ .

Now we will take  $a_2+a_2'+a_2'' = a_3$  is useless Vargaṇā for Vaikriya and Āhāraka bodies. Then  $a_3+1, a_3+2, a_3+3, \dots, a_3+a_3'$  are useful Vargaṇās for Āhāraka bodies (here  $a_3 > a_3'$ ). And  $a_3+a_3'+1, a_3+a_3'+2, a_3+a_3'+3, \dots, a_3+a_3'+a_3''$  are useless for Āhāraka bodies due to their smaller size of paramāṇus and

also useless for Taijas bodies due to their greater size of paramāṇus. Here also  $a'_3 > a_1 + a'_1$ .

Now we take  $a_4 = a_3 + a'_3 + a''_3$ . Therefore  $a_4 + 1, a_4 + 2, a_4 + 3, \dots a_4 + a'_4$  are useful paramāṇu-units for Taijas Vargaṇā. Here,  $a_4 > a'_4$ .  $a_4 + a'_4 + 1, a_4 + a'_4 + 2, a_4 + a'_4 + 3, \dots a_4 + a'_4 + a''_4$  are useless paramāṇu-units for Taijas bodies due to their smaller size and useless for Bhāṣā Vargaṇā for voice of living being due to their greater size of the paramāṇus. Here  $a''_4 > a_1 + a'_1$ .

We will take  $a_4 + a'_4 + a''_4 = a_5$ . So  $a_5 + 1, a_5 + 2, a_5 + 3, \dots a_5 + a'_5$  Vargaṇās are useful for Bhāṣā Vargaṇā, i.e. voice of living animals, Here also  $a_5 > a'_5$ .

Now  $a_5 + a'_5 + 1, a_5 + a'_5 + 2, a_5 + a'_5 + 3, \dots a_5 + a'_5 + a''_5$  are useless for Bhāṣā Vargaṇā due to their smaller size of paramāṇus and also useless for respiration of living bodies due to their greater size of the paramāṇus. Here  $a''_5 > a_1 + a'_1$ . Now if we take  $a_5 + a'_5 + a''_5 = a_6$ , then,  $a_6 + 1, a_6 + 2, a_6 + 3, \dots a_6 + a'_6$  are useful paramāṇu-units for respiration of living organisms. They are called Śvāsōcchvāsa Vargaṇā. Here also  $a_6 > a'_6$ .

Now  $a_6 + a'_6 + 1, a_6 + a'_6 + 2, a_6 + a'_6 + 3, \dots a_6 + a'_6 + a''_6$  are useless paramāṇu-units for respiration of living bodies and also useless for thinking or thoughts of animals having mind and five senses, men and divine beings and also hell beings. Here  $a''_6 > a_1 + a'_1$ .

Suppose  $a_6 + a'_6 + a''_6 = a_7$ , then  $a_7 + 1, a_7 + 2, a_7 + 3, \dots a_7 + a'_7$  are useful paramāṇu-units for thinking of human beings, divine beings, beings of hell and animals having mind and five senses. They are called Manō -Vargaṇā.

Now  $a_7 + a'_7 + 1, a_7 + a'_7 + 2, a_7 + a'_7 + 3, \dots a_7 + a'_7 + a''_7$  are useless paramāṇu-units for Manō -Vargaṇā (thoughts) due to their smaller size of paramāṇus and also useless for Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā due to their greater size of paramāṇus.

If we take  $a_7 + a'_7 + a''_7 = a_8$ , then  $a_8 + 1, a_8 + 2, a_8 + 3, \dots a_8 + a'_8$  are useful paramāṇu-units for Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā which are completely used by every living being in a form of bondage of Karma and also using at a present moment.

The Kārmaṇa body (vital body) of every living being has been formed by these units of Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā and they are connected with soul upto liberation (mōkṣa) of living being. This is a final type useful paramāṇu-units, i.e. Vargaṇās. Beyond these units, none is useful for living being though they

exists and they can be denoted as  $a_0+1, a_0+2, a_0+3, \dots, a_0+a'_0+a''_0$  and so on.

One thing is to note here that all 'a' mentioned above are type of paramāṇu-units having infinite numbers of paramāṇus, but they are not equal; and generally in all the series  $a > a'$  and  $a'' > a+a'$ .

(Arhat Vacana, Vol. 8, No.-2, April, 1996 39-40 )



IT IS PROBABLY TRUE, QUITE GENERALLY, THAT IN THE HISTORY OF HUMAN THINKING THE MOST FRUITFUL DEVELOPMENTS FREQUENTLY TAKE PLACE AT THOSE POINTS WHERE TWO DIFFERENT LINES OF THOUGHT MEET. THESE LINES MAY HAVE THEIR ROOTS IN QUITE DIFFERENT PARTS OF HUMAN CULTURE, IN DIFFERENT TIMES OR DIFFERENT CULTURAL ENVIRONMENTS OR DIFFERENT RELIGIOUS TRADITIONS: HENCE IF THEY ACTUALLY MEET, THAT IS, IF THEY ARE AT LEAST SO MUCH RELATED TO EACH OTHER THAT A REAL INTERACTION CAN TAKE PLACE, THEN ONE MAY HOPE THAT NEW AND INTERESTING DEVELOPMENTS MAY FOLLOW.

WERNER HEISENBERG

---

## 13. The Jambūdvīpa Laghusaṅgrahaṇī And The Modern Science

*"Science is a series of approximations to truth; at no stage do we claim to have reached finality; any theory is liable to revision in the light of new facts.....This is both the joy and inspiration of science that there appears to be no end to new knowledge with its interest. Each advance yields a more farreaching and interesting picture of the physical world, while at the same time opening up fresh views in the shape of new problems awaiting solutions."*

— A. W. Barton

**M**an's curiosity is irrepressible. It inspired man to make various new inventions and thus science came into existence. This curiosity has been inhabiting the human mind since beginningless time. Sometimes it becomes ardent and sometimes it becomes very mild. But when it becomes ardent, it makes efforts to find the secret of the order of the self-governed of the universe. In order to get the secret, generally two paths are adopted — the path of spirituality and the path of physics or science.

Spirituality being at the basis of Indian civilisation, the ancient sages of all traditions adopted the subjective path of spirituality in order to know and understand the secrets of the universe. In ancient time, the people of India were also very eager to know the secrets of the universe and they were in no way inferior to the people of any other civilisation. Regarding this, the French researcher Mrs. Collet Caillat says in the book, 'The Jain Cosmology' :

*"The civilisation of India, no less than other civilisations, has not failed to ask questions about the place which man occupies in the world and the location of both the human and the animal kingdoms in space and time. To these questions, for more than 3000 years, the different religious circles and the principal schools of thought in India have striven unceasingly to supply answers." ( P. No.9 )*

Those who want to adopt the path of science, should have necessary qualifications for it. Similarly, those who want to take the path of spirituality, should have certain physical, mental and intellectual merits. If a man without these

merits, adopts the path of spirituality, he either totally fails or does not get expected success. On the other hand, the path of science is also not so easy. For knowing the secrets of nature, even the ultramodern instruments of science, prove to be very dwarfish.

Though in the modern age of science, scientific instruments are available in plenty, they cannot stand in comparison with spiritual instruments. But in the present time, it is very difficult to get spiritual merits and instruments. So neither of the two paths, can be fully useful to us. Therefore, there is only one way open to us for satisfying our curiosity. We should study and present to other curious people of the world the secrets of nature that the ancient sages attained on the spiritual path and passed over to us.

The Jambūdvīpa Laghusaṅgrahaṇī gives the description of the earth i. e. Jambūdvīpa and the objects contained in it as presented by our ancient sages. One sees a great difference between descriptions of objects found in these ancient books and the descriptions of objects found in books of modern science and astronomy. It is very necessary to find out the real reason for this difference.

Generally speaking, Jain Āgamas are the speeches of Śramaṇa Bhagavān Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmī, the sermons that he gave after attaining omniscience. The eleven prime disciples, Gaṇadharas, put the sermons in the book-form. There are 12 such sacred books which are referred as Dvādaśāṅgī. In ancient time, the Dvādaśāṅgī was kept on the tip of tongue and every monk learnt it by heart. The tradition of learning it by heart, continued nearly till the times of Śrutakēvalī Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmī. During twelve year famine in his times, some scriptural knowledge was forgotten by monks as a result of inadequate nutrition and weak memory. After 980 years of nirvāṇa of Lord Mahāvīra i.e. about the year 510 of the Vikram era in the Vallabhī Conference (vācanā) Śrī Dēvarddhigaṇi Kṣamāśramaṇa Mahārāja got all Āgama scriptures, put into written form, much of the scriptural knowledge was forgotten and whatever was available contained some doubtful text. Almost all the palm-leaf manuscripts of Āgama scriptures, which are available today, belong to the eleventh century of the Vikram era or a later time. It means that not a single palm-leaf manuscript dictated by Śrī Dēvarddhigaṇi Kṣamāśramaṇa Mahārāja is available today. During these 500 - 600 years, perhaps there have been many other changes in the texts of Āgamas and

the knowledge of Āgamas with variations in the text has come down to us. On the basis of this knowledge of Āgamas, the later great Ācāryas wrote many treatises.

This book entitled 'The Laghusaṅgrahaṇī' or 'The Jambūdvīpa Saṅgrahaṇī' is probably a work of Yākinīmahattarāsūnu Bhagavān Śrī Haribhadrasūrijī Mahārāja.<sup>2</sup> This book gives a brief description of Jambūdvīpa and the objects in it.

### *The location of Jambūdvīpa*

According to the tradition, the cosmos (Lōka) has three divisions : the upper part called Urdhvalōka, the middle part called Tircchālōka and the lower part called Adhōlōka. The Urdhvalōka is also called Dēvalōka and Vaimānika gods- goddesses live there. In the Adhōlōka there are seven hellish regions and hellish beings live there. In a certain part of the first Ratnaprabhā hell, gods and goddesses of the type of Bhavanapati live. In the middle 800 Yōjanas of the upper most 1000 Yōjanas, gods and goddesses of the Vyantara type live. In the 80 Yōjanas of the upper most 100 Yōjanas, gods and goddesses of Vāṇavyantara type live.<sup>3</sup>

In Tircchālōka, there are innumerable islands and oceans. In the centre of it there is Jambūdvīpa of circular shape.<sup>4</sup> Its east-west and north-south length is 1,00,000 Yōjanas. In the centre of it, there is Mt. Mēru of the height of 1,00,000 Yōjanas and the expanse of 10,000 Yōjanas at bottom.

To the south of Mt. Mēru in Jambūdvīpa, there is Bharataksētra which is of the north-south expanse of 190th part of 1,00,000 Yōjanas i.e. 526 Yōjanas and 6 Kalās and the east-west expanse of more than 14,471 Yōjanas. To the north of it there is Mt. Laghu-himavant with north-south expanse which is double that of Bharataksētra. To the north of it, there is Himavantsētra with its double expanse. To the north of it, there is Mt. Mahāhimvanta with an expanse which double that of Himavantsētra. To the north of it, there is Harivarṣaksētra of its double expanse. To the north of it, there is Mt. Niṣadha whose expanse is double that of Harivarṣaksētra. To the north of it and in the centre of Jambūdvīpa, there is Mahāvidēhaksētra which has 64 times as much expanse as that of Bharataksētra. Respectively to the north of Mahāvidēhaksētra, there are Mt. Nīlavanta, Ramyakaksētra, Mt. Rukmi,



Hairanyavatksētra, Mt. Śikharī and Airavataksētra of half the north-south expanse of each former mountain or ksētra.

Mt. Niṣadha and Mt. Nīlavanta are of equal expanse and form. Similarly, Mt. Mahāhimavant and Mt. Rukmi; Himavantksētra and Hairanyavatksētra; Mt. Laghuhimavanta and Mt. Śikharī; and Bharataksētra and Airavataksētra are mutually of equal expanse and form.

Mahāvidēhaksētra which is at the middle of Jambūdīvīpa is the most noteworthy. Having an expanse of 33,680 Yōjanas and 4 Kalā s, it is 64 times as big as Bharataksētra. There is Mt. Mēru at the centre of it. Uttarakuruksētra to the north of it and Dēvakuruksētra to the south of it are each of the shape of half-moon. Their east-west length towards Mt. Nīlavanta and Mt. Niṣadha, is 53,000 Yōjanas. To the east and west of Uttarakuruksētra and Dēvakuruksētra, there are 16-16 Vijayas of Mahāvidēhaksētra. The form of most of the objects there is similar to that of objects of Bharataksētra.

Dēvakuru and Uttarakuru; Himavanta and Harivarṣa; and Ramyaka and Hairanyavat are called Yugalika ksētra, where men and women are born as twins. Their detailed information is in the commentary on Jambūdīvīpasāṅgrahaṇī. Similarly, the information of Mahāvidēha can also be seen in the commentary on Jambūdīvīpasāṅgrahaṇī. the commentator states according to the Jain doctrine that the objects described in this book are mostly eternal. The reason for this is that in Jambūdīvīpa, non-eternal objects are infinite and it is not possible to describe them all. Also, they undergo great changes under effect of time and place. It is difficult to put all this in words. Therefore, those objects are described in this book which are eternal and of a beginningless and endless state and which do not undergo any change under effect of time and place.

There is Mt. Vaitāḍhya of east-west length in the middle of Bharataksētra of the half-moon shape near Lavaṇasamudra to the south of Mt. Mēru. This mountain divides Bharataksētra in two parts, towards the Mt. Mēru, is called the north-half of Bharata and the part towards Lavaṇasamudra is called the south-half of Bharata. The rivers Gaṅgā and Sindhu coming down from Padmasarōvara i.e.lake named Padma which is on the Mt. Himavant, divides both these parts in three parts each. Thus Bharataksētra is divided into six Khaṇḍas (sections). Every Cakravartī conquers all these six Khaṇḍas

(sections). The city of Ayodhya is at a distance of 113 Yōjanas and 3 Kālās to the south of Mt. Vaitāḍhya in the middle Khaṇḍa of the south-half of Bharata. Near the delta of the river Gaṅgā, there is a place called Tīrtha Māgadhā. Similarly, near the delta of the river Sindhu, there is a place called Prabhāṣā Tīrtha. Between these two Tīrthas, there is a Tīrtha named Varadāma.

To the farthest north of Mt. Mēru, there is Airavataḥśētra which is similar in form to Bharataḥśētra. In the place of Gaṅgā and Sindhu rivers, there are two chief rivers named Raktā and Raktavatī. This is a very brief discription of Jambūdvīpa.

It is natural that on reading this discription, not a single man of today will be able to accept it. Today man has plenty of scientific instruments and he believes that with these instruments he can do what he wishes to do. Modern science has very big telescopes and observatories. It has many kilometres vast radio-telescopes, too. With these radio-telescopes, he can see and know what happens in any corner of the universe, can directly or indirectly visit the planets - the moon, the mars, the jupiter, the saturn etc., and can show its wonderful sights on the television.

The difficulty is that with the help of these instruments, we see the sky but we do not see other parts of Jambūdvīpa or some strong obstacle stop the working of the instruments. But all these are matters of astronomy. As far as the earth is concerned, scientists accept only the present world, the world that we can see, know and visit with aeroplanes etc. and shows that the earth is round like a ball but the possibility that there is living world in other places (planets) inhabited by more intelligent human beings, cannot be ruled out. According to them there are many other suns like the sun in our solar system. There are other solar systems including planets and the earth among them, are inhabited by human beings.

The Jain philosophy also accepts the existence of many suns with their own groups of planets. According to the Jain philosophical belief with every sun and moon have 88-88 planets and  $66975 \times 10^{14}$  stars.

But researches made till now do not support this and researches that are made, are only theoretical and rely on some inferences of the past. On the basis of the descriptions given in Jain scriptures, some practical research work needs to be done.

Now almost all accept that the Jain philosophy is very ancient. Many people believe that the doctrines given in the ancient treatises of Jain philosophy are systematic, well-arranged and logical. Regarding this Śrī Nemichandji Jain, the editor of 'Tīrthaṅkara' writes :

*" The philosophical aspect of Jain philosophy is logical and no one can refute it and there is no question about it but when it comes to geography, astronomy and food restrictions, many questions arose because these are the subjects that suffered discents from time to time."*<sup>5</sup>

It is, therefore, necessary to discuss these subjects properly in the context of today. Is the present visible earth really round like a ball? Does it really move? These two questions against the Jain geography are really important. According to the Jain doctrine, the earth is motionless and the Sun, the moon, planets, constellations, stars etc. move in space around Mt. Mēru in a round strip at the height of 790 to 900 Yōjanas from the level surface of the earth. Jain scriptures show very minute calculations of motion and change of place of the Sun and the moon. The tradition of making paintings, showing the real nature of the objects of geography and astronomy in Jain manuscripts is at least a thousand years old and it prevails even today.<sup>6</sup>

When science had not at all developed in the west and when Western civilisation had no knowledge of astronomy. Jainācāryas had given minute and detailed information about astronomy and geography in Indian civilization and especially in Jain philosophical tradition. The later Jainācāryas have collected the information in some treatises and their commentaries.

But along with the description of eternal objects of Jambūdīvīpa, they have not given even the slightest description of the earth of their times, its shape etc. Nothing is, therefore, known about opinions and beliefs of the common man of those days, regarding the shape of the earth. On the other hand, geography and astronomy have so much developed today that with various instruments they have shown its shape and located the place of the earth in the solar system. On the one hand, ancient Jainācāryas are completely silent on this point and on the other hand, the present day Jain scholars or Jainācāryas cannot give correct information about the real shape of the earth and its location. One finds no reference to it in Jain literature

available today. According to those books, Bharatakṣētra has the length of more than 14471 Yōjanas and width of 526 Yōjanas and 6 Kalā s. The present-day Bhārata i.e. India, cannot be said Bharatakṣētra. The description of Bharatakṣētra given in Jain scriptures does not at all coincide with the present-day situation of Bhārata. That is why present-day Jain scholars and Ācāryas believe that the earth of today is a portion of middle section (khaṇḍa) of the southern part of Bharatakṣētra.

Rev. Pannyāsa Śrī Abhayasāgarajī has made tremendous efforts to show that the earth is not round.

1. In order to prove that the earth is round, present-day scientists give the example of boat, sailing on the sea. They say that as the boat, ship or steamer goes farther, its bottom, then the upper part and the top part disappears because roundness of the earth obstructs. But this is not true. As the steamer goes farther, it looks smaller. But one can see it and see it as a whole. If not the whole steamer but its upper part is seen with the naked eyes, on account of Earth's roundness, it would not be possible to see the whole steamer through a telescope. But practically, when the steamer goes out of the naked eyesight, the whole steamer can be seen with the help of a telescope.

Really speaking, the structure of our eye is such that as the object goes farther, its image on the retina becomes smaller and when the object goes extremely far away, its image on the retina becomes so small that optical nerves cannot grasp it. This also happens to aeroplanes etc. flying high in the sky. These facts prove that the earth is not round.

2. In America, the light-house of Heterash is seen from a distance of 40 miles. What is the reason? If the earth is round, the curve of the earth at forty miles, would be 900 feet but the light-house is only 300 feet high.

3. The Suez canal is built on the principle that the earth is not round and it was built by French engineers. This is mentioned in the law of British parliament.

4. In 1838 Captain J. Ras went on a voyage with Captain Freshier towards the south pole. They sailed in a ship as far as it was possible. Then they came across a strong snow-wall which was 450 to 1000 feet high. On it they walked continuously for four years and travelled a distance of 40,000

miles but did not reach the end of the snow-carpet.

The circumference of the earth at the degree of latitude of the place where the snow-carpet was found is only 10,700 miles. If the earth is round, they would have come to the place four times. But instead of that, they had to come back and they took two and half years to come back. This fact also proves that the earth is not round.

5. The distance between two longitudes changes with the latitude. As we go northward or southward from equator, the distance between two longitudes decreases. The distance between two longitudes in the north at 23.5 latitudes is 40 miles. If the earth were round like a ball, the distance between two longitudes at 23.5 latitudes even in the south would be 40 miles, that distance is found to be 25 miles, and south below, the distance increases instead of decreasing and at some place the distance is found to be of 103 miles. If this is so, how can the principle that the earth is round like a ball, stand?

6. According to the scientific belief the earth moves round the Sun with its axis bent at  $23.5^{\circ}$ . Its north pole is, therefore, always in front of the pole star. The pole star appears in the middle of the sky over the head of man on the north pole and man on the equator see the pole star on the horizon. The pole star can never be seen to the south of the equator. But Captain Mill saw the pole star to  $30^{\circ}$  latitude in the south. What can be the reason for it?

7. The longest day on Shetland island on  $70^{\circ}$  latitude in southern hemisphere is only of 16 hours and 53 minutes. But the longest day in Norway on  $70^{\circ}$  latitude in the north is of three months. If the earth is round like a ball, how can this happen? <sup>7</sup>

All these evidences only prove that the earth is not round like a ball. But what is the shape of the present day earth? It cannot be known. In order to prove that the earth is not round, the arguments of scientists have been refuted. Similarly, in order to prove that the earth does not move or rotate Rev. Śrī Abhayasāgarajī and other researchers also have adopted negative approach. They should adopt a constructive approach, strengthen the faith of people and make experiments according to the principles shown in Jain scriptures. As long as we do not give practical proofs, nobody will accept what we say.

### **Concept of Time**

On one hand, there is a great difference between principles of Jain geography and astronomy and those of the modern geography and astronomy and many questions have been raised against Jain scriptures but on the other hand, the principles mentioned by Jain scripturists in the field of physics, have proved to be entirely true. There is a wonderful similarity between the principles regarding time, space and matter given in Jain scriptures and the principles of modern science.

Ancient great sages and modern great scientists have given serious and elaborate thought to the concept of time. In Jain philosophy, much has been written about time, space and pudgala (matter). Similarly, in modern physics, western scientists have written a lot and even today new researches as being made. We shall compare here the beliefs accepted in the Jain philosophical tradition and in modern physics.

The relativity of time according Jain scriptures, shown by Śrī Vijaya Udayasūrijī while commenting on the word समयखित्तमि 'samayakhittammi' in the verse ' savvē vi pavvayavarā सव्वे वि पव्वयवरा ' (verse No. 29 ) of 'Jambūdvīpasaṅgrahaṇī ' sūtra and the relativity of time shown by Einstein, the great scientist of the present century, have a wonderful similarity.

The Jain philosophy shows two types of time : (1) relative time and (2) absolute time.

Einstein says that time-practical time i.e. relative time, day and night etc. are only on the earth because day and night are caused by daily motion of the earth i.e. rotation of the earth on its axis. Jain scripturists say that day and night are only in the two and a half islands ( samayakṣētra ) where the sun, the moon, planets, constellations, stars etc. move around Mt. Mēru. Such divisions of time as day and night are caused only by rotation of the sun and the moon. <sup>8</sup>

Einstein says that there is nothing like day and night in space. Jain scriptures say that outside the two and a half continents where the sun, the moon etc. are motionless, there is nothing like day and night.

Still however, the life-span of living beings outside the two and a half continents and of the celestial and hellish beings is calculated according to

The Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika systems of thought also accept Kāla (time) as a separable material cause. They also believe that time is a substance.

लोयायासपदेसे इक्किक्के जे ठिया ह इक्किक्का । रयणाणं रासी इव ते कालाणू असंखदव्याणि ।।

rayanānam rāsī iva tē kālānū asaṅkhadavvāṇi ..

Jain scriptures believe that time, the non-spatial continuum pervades the whole cosmos (Lōka) because it is related to various transformations of substances and the living element (soul) and the element pudgala i.e. matter pervade the whole cosmos, all the fourteen Rājalōka. Einstein explains this with time-space continuum. A simple illustration can be given as under:

www.jainelibrary.org

•<=====30 lakh kms.=====>•<=====30 lakh kms.=====>•

A

B

C

Suppose there is flash of light on point A. This flash of light will be seen on point B after 10 seconds. Then for point A, the place of its origin, at that time the flash of light will be a matter of the past and for point C, it will be a matter of the future. Thus time is a distance between space points. It is, therefore, necessary to mention with all that happens in space, the time of its happening. As the time-space continuum is important in the modern physics, so it is regarded as very important in ancient Jain scriptures. The real time can be divided into (1) the relative and (2) the non-relative and this can be included in the relative real time.

On studying the following citations<sup>9</sup> of modern science regarding time, one can see that there is a great similarity between concepts of science regarding time and Jain philosophical beliefs.

1. The speed of space-point relative to its surrounding points is the fundamental aspect incorporated in the design of the universal space and from this basic phenomenon of "changing positions or space-point" arises the very "concept of time".

2. Since the dynamic state of space is eternal, time, too, is basically eternal.

3. Since all the material phenomena originate from space, the time related with changes in our material environment is also a product from the primary time inherent in the dynamic substratum of space. Time is real since space and its motion are real. Time is absolute since space is absolute.

All these three citations reflect the definition of real time of Jain philosophy.

4. The 'time' of our day-to-day experience emerges from the changes in the position of material bodies and also changes in their structure due to the inevitable field interactions causing assembly, decay and disintegration.

According to Jain philosophy, space is a single indivisible and inactive substance but pudgala i.e. matter is active or mobile and pervades the whole cosmos. Therefore, if the word 'space' is replaced by 'pudgala' i.e. matter



in the above mentioned scientific concepts, all these concepts will be acceptable to Jain philosophy.

Thus the present-day scientific researches regarding time largely substantiate the concept of Jain philosophy.

### ***Mathematics in Laghusaṅgrahaṇīsūtra***

Jambūdvīpasaṅgrahaṇīsūtra does not make any special use of mathematics. It only shows how to find the circumference and area of Jambūdvīpa which has a diameter of 1,00,000 Yōjanas.

The circumference of Jambūdvīpa can be obtained by multiplying the square of its diameter by 10 and the finding square-root of the result. It can be shown in a formula as under :

$$\text{Circumference} = \sqrt{10} (\text{diameter})^2 \dots\dots\dots \text{I}$$

The modern mathematics uses the following formula to find the circumference of a circle :

$$\text{Circumference} = 2 \pi \text{ radius} \dots\dots\dots \text{II}$$

Comparing formulae (I) and (II) we get  $\pi = \sqrt{10}$  i. e.

$\pi = 3.1622776$  approximately.

The area of Jambūdvīpa can be obtained by multiplying the circumference of Jambūdvīpa by one forth of its diameter i.e. one half of its radius. It can be shown in a formula as under :

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Area of a circle} &= \text{circumference} \frac{\text{diameter}}{4} \\ &= \sqrt{10}(\text{diameter})^2 \times \frac{\text{diameter}}{4} \\ &= \sqrt{10} \frac{\text{diameter} \bullet \text{diameter}}{4} \\ &= \sqrt{10} \frac{2\text{radius} \bullet 2\text{radius}}{4} \\ &= \sqrt{10} \text{ radius}^2 \end{aligned}$$

The modern geometry also uses the following formula to find the area of a circle :

$$\text{Area of a circle} = \pi (\text{radius})^2. \text{ Here also } \pi = \sqrt{10}.$$

Almost everywhere in śvētāmbara tradition  $\pi = \sqrt{10}$ . But various values of  $\pi$  are found in Digambar tradition. In the Trilōkasāra <sup>10</sup>  $\pi = 16^2 / 8^2$  i. e. 256 / 81

Here  $\pi = 3.1604938271.....$  The Trilōkasāra also shows 3 and  $\sqrt{10}$  to be the value of  $\pi$  but they are very gross.<sup>11</sup> Moreover, Ācārya Vīrasēna shows quite a different value of  $\pi$ . Showing the method of finding the circumference of a circle, he says, : " Multiply the diameter by three and then add to it what you get by dividing by 113 the diameter multiplied by 16. You will then get the circumference of the circle. It can be shown in a formula as under :

$$\text{Circumference} = 3 (\text{diameter}) + 16(\text{diameter}) / 113$$

$$\text{By simplification, we get circumference} = 355/113 \text{ diameter}$$

Comparing this formula with the well-known formula of today i. e. circumference = 2  $\pi$  radius, we get<sup>12</sup>  $\pi = 355/113$ . Here  $\pi = 3.1415929$

This value of  $\pi$  was well-known in China also. Possibly, they took the value of  $\pi$  from Indian tradition. Perhaps, Buddhist monks who went to China from India made it popular.<sup>13</sup>

In short, four different values of  $\pi$  are found in the ancient Jain tradition.

$$\pi = 3.....I$$

$$\pi = \sqrt{10} = 3.1622776.....II$$

$$\pi = 256 / 81 = 3.1604938271.....III$$

$$\pi = 355 / 113 = 3.1415929.....IV$$

The first of these values is very gross and it is not accepted now-a-days. This value is shown in the book the Trilōkasāra. The second value is also found in the Trilōkasāra. It is accepted everywhere in śvētāmbara tradition also. The third value is also shown in the Trilōkasāra. But the fourth value is shown by Śrī Vīrasēnācārya.

According to modern mathematics  $\pi = 3.141592653....$  This shows that the value of  $\pi$  shown by Vīrasēnācārya is true upto six digits after the decimal point.

There is no special reason why, in the Jain tradition, there are different values of  $\pi$  and different methods of finding the circumference and the area of a circle.

Really speaking, the Jain philosophy is spiritualistic and its ultimate aim is salvation. In Jain scriptures we find the description of the form, shape etc. of the cosmos (Lōka) because they help in spiritual development. The form of Lōka, i.e. universe, the form of the hell, the form of gods, the human world - the two and a half islands (dvīpas) - the Jambūdvīpa etc. are shown in order to enable us to know where and in what condition our soul is at present, in what condition it was in the past, and what condition it can have in the future.

It is not inconsistent to believe that since the common people had no other use of this knowledge that at different times, with different sorts of people in view, these different methods were used in order to impart this knowledge to common people in simple way. This is why one finds different values of  $\pi$  in various Jain scriptures which are available today.

Ācārya Śrī Vīrasēna shows that  $\pi = 355 / 113$ . The Indian mathematician Śrī Ramanujan shows this value of  $\pi$  in a different way. He solved the problem of squaring the circle, the problem suggested by Greek mathematicians. As a result he got 355/113 as a value of  $\pi$ .

This article is accompanied by a brief article on various values of  $\pi$ . On reading it, one can pretty well understand the perplexity of  $\pi$ .

### *Jain Time-cycle and Cosmic Calendar*

In the commentry on Laghusaṅgrahaṇīsūtra, Ācārya Śrī has given a detailed discription of the seven kṣētras (regions) such as Bharata etc. as well as the time-cycle constituted 12 ārās exprienced in Bharata-kṣētra and Airavata-kṣētra. It is possible that some may doubt whether the time-cycle is real. We shall, therefore, here think of it from the view-point of modern science. Let us first understand the divisions (ārās) of the time-cycle.

The time-cycle has two chief divisions--Utsarpiṇīkālā and Avasarpiṇīkālā.

In Utsarpiṇīkāla the height, life-span, physical capacities etc. of human beings and animals develop, spiritual blemishes (kaṣāyas) such as attachment, aversion, anger etc. diminish and inauspicious tendencies also diminish gradually. Thus, few spiritual blemishes of men and women, birds and beasts, rise.

In Avasarpiṇīkāla, the development is contrary to this. In the beginning, the height, life-span etc. of human beings and beasts etc. are the utmost. But as time passes, they diminish. In the beginning inauspicious tendencies, jealousy, illusion, attach, aversion, anger etc. of human beings are very slight but then as time passes, they increase.

Both Utsarpiṇīkāla and Avasarpiṇīkāla have six ārās ( spokes of the wheel of time ) each. Twenty-four Tīrthaṅkaras are born in each half of the time-cycle. The joint duration of both is 20 kōḍākōḍī i.e.  $20 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas (10 kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas of Utsarpiṇīkāla and 10 kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas of Avasarpiṇīkāla). The present time belongs to Avasarpiṇīkāla. So, we shall first think of it. Utsarpiṇīkāla is contrastive to it.

The first ārā (spoke of the wheel of time) in Avasarpiṇīkāla is of duration of four kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas; the second ārā is of three kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas; the third ārā is of two kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas, the fourth ārā is of one kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas less by 42000 years and the fifth and the sixth ārās of 21,000 years each. By the end of the third ārā, the first Tīrthaṅkara is born. The fourth ārā begins shortly after nirvāṇa of the first Tīrthaṅkara. The rest twenty-three Tīrthaṅkaras of this group of twenty-four Tīrthaṅkaras are born in this fourth ārā. Shortly after nirvāṇa of the twenty-fourth Tīrthaṅkara, the fourth ārā comes to an end.

According to Jain scriptures, human beings and birds and beasts in the beginning of the first ārā, are yugalik or twins and they have a height of 3 Gāus and a life-span three palyōpamas.<sup>14</sup> Height, life-span of living beings gradually decrease and in the beginning of the second ārā, their height is of two Gāus and life-span is of two palyōpamas. In the beginning of the third ārā, the decreasing height and life-span of twin human beings and beasts etc. are one Gāu and one palyōpamas respectively. At the end of the third ārā, the life-span of the human beings is of 84 hundred thousand pūrva years<sup>15</sup> and their height of 500 Dhanuṣyas. Half-way in the fourth ārā, man

has a height of 450 Dhanuṣyas and a life-span of nearly 72 hundred thousand pūrvas. In the beginning of the fifth ārā, their height is of 7 hands and their life-span is of 72 years approximately. At the end of the fifth ārā, his height is of only one hand and its life-span is only of 20 years. As time passes, life-span and height go on decreasing, though not in a specific ratio. It is definite that as time passes in Avasarpinīkāla, the rate of reduction in life-span and height, is higher and higher.

A well known scientist Mr. Carl Segan has made a cosmic calendar. It gives dates of cosmic incidents. The chart given in Darwin's world-famous book, 'Origin Of Species' also gives dates of cosmic events. Leave alone the names of the events, the ratio of time intervals between the events shown in them is very similar to time intervals between the incidents in Avasarpinīkāla of the time-cycle shown in Jain scriptures.

The scientists of today may think that there is an exaggeration about the life-span and height etc. of the first Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Ṛṣabhadēva. But if the Jain time-cycle and the cosmic calendar are minutely studied, it does not at all seem to be improbable or impossible. Among the fossilized ruins of giant animals found now-a-days on the earth, the fossilized ruins of the dinosaur are chief. The ruins show that the dinosaur was 150 feet long and according to the chart of Darwin, it belonged to the masozoic period. This time is believed to be earlier than nearly seventy million years.

According to the Jain time-cycle, this time was later than that of Śrī Vāsupūjyasvāmi, the twelfth Tīrthaṅkara and earlier than that of Śrī Śāntinātha, the sixteenth Tīrthaṅkara. A comparison with the ratio of time duration according to the cosmic calendar shows nearly the same. Someone may raise the question that the calculation of scientists of today shows that this was the time prior to only seventy million years while according to Jain time-cycle this was the time prior to the time between forty-seven Sāgarōpamas and three and a half Sāgarōpamas. According to Jain calculation of time, ten kōḍākōḍī palyōpamas make one Sāgarōpama and one palyōpama contains innumerable years. What accounts for this great difference?

In order to determine the date of fossils, scientists use isotopes of carbon-14 and determine their ancientness i.e. date of its existence on the basis of the ratio of radiation of radio-active rays emerging from the fossils.

But scientists themselves have admitted that this method is faulty and leads to a difference, not of hundreds or thousands of years but of millions of years. Therefore, an object which is 70 or 80 million years old according their calculation, may be a thousand million years old or perhaps still older. The principle of the method adopted by scientists being faulty, their calculations are not true and their conclusions are only inferential and, therefore, they are not at all reliable.

Regarding this, Max Toth and Greg Nielsen, the authors of the book 'Pyramid Power' write :

*" It should be noted here that to determine the date of an archaeological find, excavators all over the world have been using the analysis of radioactive carbon, the isotope C-14.*

*Unfortunately, it now appears that the dates obtained through the use of this method are highly questionable, since contamination from present-day organic materials could substantially affect the process. Archaeologists now believe that most of the sites dated with carbon-14 are older than the dating process showed that they were. There is currently an enormous controversy ranging in archaeological circles over the claim of some archaeologists that carbon-14 dating is incorrect by thousands of years, not hundreds as was previously thought." ( Pp. 20 )*

Regarding this Dr Narendra Bhandari (Chairman, Solar system, Space unit, PRL, Ahmadabad) mentions that Carbon-14 method works only for a period below 50,000 years. For older fossils other methods are used. According to his opinion, Carbon-14 dating process is useful only for the fossils that possess carbon.

The present day scientists fear that if the developed and developing countries make excessive use of the space shuttles to launch satellites in space often and to make experiments in space, the ozone layer of atmosphere which stands against the ultraviolet rays of the sun which are harmful to human beings and the living world, will be used up and ultraviolet rays of the sun will destroy the living world. The sun will pour fire and the earth will be utterly destroyed.

The description of the sixth āra in Jain scriptures is similar. They state that there will be a very poisonous rain of fire, salt etc. and there will be a

widespread lamenation. Thus the earth will be utterly destroyed. During the day-time human beings etc. will live in caves of Mt. Vaitāḍhya. They will come out only at night. All will be non-vegetarian.

In short, the fear of scientists is true. Lord Mahāvīra forecast it more than 2500 years ago.

Thus the ruins which are the evidences of Darwin's theory of evolution can serve as evidences of Avasarpinīkāla of the Jain religion. What is needed is more research work in the field.

According to Jambūdvīpasaṅgrahaṇīsūtra, it is a universal truth that the earth is neither round nor mobile nor it rotates. We shall have to prove it with scientific experiments. If the earth were perfectly round like ball, the perfectly north-south circumambulation around it would be possible like the east-west circumambulation. As an aeroplane can fly over the north pole, it should be able to fly over the south pole. But Trans World Airlines and Pan-American Airways have informed on inquiry that no such air-flight is available.

Information about the orbit of satellites and of satellites of fully north-south orbit, was sought from the ISRO, the famous space-science institution of India and from the observatory. There is no reply from the ISRO at that time. Now, it is available. We, therefore, to think of it. The reply from the observatory contained information irrelevant to the answer.

In conclusion, if anything discordant with scriptures is written in the preface to this book, written with a broad scientific out look, I pray forgiveness. I stop here.

[Adopted from the preface to the book, Jambūdvīpasaṅgrahaṇīsūtra]

References:

1. A. W. Barton [ Introduction, ' Cosmology : Old And New ' by G. R. Jain]
2. Though it is difficult to say whether this work is of Yākinīmahattarāsūnu Ācārya Haribhadrāsūrijī Mahārāja or some other Ācārya named Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī, this statement is made according to the current tradition and the statement of Rev. Ācārya Śrī Vijaya Udayasūrijī, the author of the commentry. But it is stated on page No.50 in the book, ' Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī ' written by Prof. Hiralal Rasikdas Kapadia and published in Sayaji Granthamala -- " The name of Yākinīmahattarāsūnu Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī as the author of

Jambūdvīpasaṅgrahaṇī, is mentioned by Peterson, M. K. Mehta, M. N. Doshi, Pandit Hargovindadas, Panniyas Kalyanavijay, Pandit Bechardas Doshi etc., but on the page No.48 of the same book, the list of works of Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī Mahārāja is given according to bruhadvṛtti i.e. sanskrit commentary written in Vikram era 1295 by Śrī Sumatigani on verse No. 55 of Gaṇaharasaddhasayaga i.e. Gaṇadharasārdhaśataka; it includes 'saṅgrahaṇīvṛtti' but not 'Jambūdvīpasaṅgrahaṇī'. It is not clear which 'saṅgrahaṇī' is meant by the word 'saṅgrahaṇī' in 'saṅgrahaṇīvṛtti'. In short, no strong ancient evidence is available to show that Yākinīmahattarāsūnu Haribhadrāsūrijī is the author of this Laghusaṅgrahaṇī (Jambūdvīpasaṅgrahaṇī).

3. People of today may find these statements about god to be untrue. The E.S.P. researchers find during experiments that some people describe their past birth. And their description is fully in full agreement with the description given in Jain scriptures. Please, see 'Science Discover Eternal Wisdom' by Muni Śrī Amarendravijayī Mahārāja.

4. जम्बूद्वीपलवणादयः शुभनामानो द्वीपसमुद्राः । ७ । द्विद्विष्वक्म्भाः पूर्वपूर्वपरिक्षेपिणो वलयाकृतयः । १८ ।  
jambūdvīpalavaṇādayaḥ śubhanāmānō dvīpasamudrāḥ ..7.. dvirdvirviṣkambhāḥ  
pūrvapūrvaparikṣēpiṇō valayākṛtayaḥ ..8.. (Tattvārtha Sūtraa, Adhyay-2)

5. Tīrthaṅkara ( A Hindi magazine ), May, 1987 P. No.5

6. Jain cosmology has inspired many descriptions of this kind. There is also a tradition of manuscript illustration more than 1000 years old, which despite its age remains amazingly fresh. (Jain Cosmology-cover page - 2)

7. '1-2-3-4-5-6-7' The Tattvajñāna Smārikā, Part IV, P. 27 by Ashish Maneklal Shah

8. तन्मध्ये मेरुर्नाभिवृत्तो योजनशतसहस्रविष्कम्भो जम्बूद्वीपः । ११ । सूर्याश्चन्द्रमसो ग्रहनक्षत्रप्रकीर्णतारकश्च । १२ । मेरुप्रदक्षिणागतयो नृलोके । १४ । तत्कृतः कालविभागः । १५ ।

tanmadhyē mēurnābhivṛttō yōjanaśatasahasraviṣkambhō jambūdvīpaḥ ..9..  
sūryāścandramasō grahanakṣatraprakīrṇatārakaśca ..13.. mērupradakṣiṇāgatayō  
nṛlōkē ..14. tatkrtaḥ kālavibhāgaḥ ..15..

(Tattvārtha Sūtra,

Adhyay-4, sūtra No.13,14,15)

9. 1-2-3-4, BEYOND MATTER by Paramahansa Tewari P. 87-88



10.  $r = 9/16$  (side of square equal area) or  $p = (16/9)^2$  .....(V. 18)

[ Basic Mathematics by Prof. L. C. Jain, P. 47 ]

11. 1,  $p(\text{gross}) = 3d$  .....(V-311). 2,  $p(\text{subtle}) = \sqrt{10} d$ .....(V- 311)

[ Ibid P.47 ]

12. Ibid. P. 33

13. Ibid. P. 33

14. In a palyōpama, there are innumerable years.

15. A pūrva year consist of 70,56,000,00,00,000 years.



WHAT IS SOUNDLESS, TOUCHLESS, FORMLESS, IMPERISHABLE,  
 LIKEWISE TASTELESS, CONSTANT, ODOURLESS,  
 WITHOUT BEGINNING, WITHOUT END, HIGHER THAN THE GREAT,  
 STABLE —

BY DISCERNING THAT, ONE IS LIBERATED FROM THE MOUTH OF  
 DEATH. KATHOPNISHAD – 3.15

KNOWLEDGE, WHICH COMES FROM SUCH AN EXPERIENCE, IS  
 CALLED 'ABSOLUTE KNOWLEDGE'.

---

---

## 14. The Jain Time-Cycle And The Cosmic Calendar

**S**ince the development of his thinking faculty, man has been tirelessly trying to find solutions to the questions of the form and origin of the universe. Whether the attempts are spiritual or scientific, everyone ultimately wants to know the laws and secrets that governs the universe. It is difficult to know the secrets with scientific methods. The great sages of the past, have known them with spiritual methods and have put them before us. But under the influence of the present times and the western civilization, we hesitate to believe as to be true. The absolute truth is out of bounds of time and space. Time does not make even a scratch on it, let alone a deep mark. On the contrary, backed in the oven of time, absolute truth becomes very ripe. Such are the doctrines of Jainism, ripened by being backed in the oven of time. They have passed through various tests.

Since the origin of the branch of atomic physics and the branches establishing relations of time, space, matter and its energy among various branches of science and since decades prior to it, the question of origin and destruction of the universe, and mass-accumulation of the universe has always been confusing and various theories have been put forth for them. Of all these theories, the Big Bang Theory has got the greatest acceptance. Though the Jain religion partially believes in the Big-Bang theory, it does not believe in the presentation that scientists make of it.

There is a great similarity between the duration of time of the origin of the sun, of the earth, of the living world, of human beings etc. following Big-Bang, as described by Carl Segen according to the belief of scientists and the time-cycle mentioned in Jain scriptures. Though the durations are almost equal, the differences of incidents and circumstances are great. According to the Jain doctrine the sun, the earth, the living world or living beings and the human-world or beings are not originated from nothing i.e. they are not newly created.

But the modern science believes that they are born a new and in the evolution of the universe, first unicellular micro-organisms then multicellular organisms and gradually other higher insects, the monkey and then the man was evolved. This is completely an illusion and untrue.

First of all, let us see the cosmic calendar of Carl Segan. Mr. Carl Segan divided the time between Big-Bang and the moment of destruction of the whole universe (pralayakāla) into 12 months and 365 days. The Big Bang occurred on the first day of January and Carl Segan gives as under the account of incidents that followed.

1. The Big-Bang - January, 1.
2. The formation of the milky way - May, 1.
3. The creation of the Sun - September, 9.
4. The creation of the earth - September, 14.
5. The beginning of life on the earth - September, 25
6. The oldest rock formed on the earth - October, 2.
7. Fossils formed - October, 9.
8. Formation of sex organs of generation among micro-organisms  
-November, 1.
9. Development of living cells - November, 15.
10. Oxygen in atmosphere on the earth - December, 1.
11. Ditches at high temperature on the Mars were formed -  
December, 5.
12. Insects were born - December, 16
13. Fishes were born - December, 19.
14. Birds were born - December, 27.
15. Gigantic mammals were born - December, 30.
16. Man was born - December, 31.

Now follows the interesting account. After man was born on December 31, the time of incidents is shown in hours, minutes and seconds as under :-

17. Man was born at 10.30. p.m.
18. Stone instruments and weapons began to be used at 11.00 p.m.
19. Farming invention at 11 hours, 50 minutes and 20 seconds
20. Buddha was born at night at 11.59.55
21. Jesus was born at night at 11.59.56
22. Invention of Zero in India at 11.59.57

23. The renaissance in Europe and the experimental method in science, originated at night at 11.59.59.
24. The progress of technology, the invention of weapons to kill mankind, the beginning of the universal civilization and the beginning of space flight - now and at the first second of the new year.

This is the ultra-modern cosmic calendar, made by Dr. Carl Segan, the top-rank scientist of the world and approved by other high rank scientists.

According to the chart given in the book 'Origin Of Species' written by Charles Darwin and published recently in 1979 A.D. 'cosmological' incidents can be shown as under :

1. Nearly 5 thousands million years ago - The Big-Bang and separation of the earth.
2. Nearly 4.6 thousand million years ago - The crust of the earth was formed.
3. Nearly 3.5 thousand million years ago - Life began and bacteria were produced
4. Nearly 1.7 thousand million years ago - Oxygen was produced in the atmosphere
5. Nearly 70 crore years ago - Production of multicellular living beings, earth-worms and their fossils.
6. Nearly 57 crore years ago - Production of fossils of many kinds of invertebrate animals for the first time.
7. Nearly 52.5 crore years ago - Production of fishes.
8. Nearly 38 crore years ago - Production of insects.
9. Nearly 36 crore years ago - Production of frogs etc. i.e. amphibians i.e. animals moving on earth and in water.
10. Nearly 28 crore years ago - Production of reptiles etc. i.e. snakes etc.
11. Nearly 22 crore years ago - High level and final-stage development of reptiles and production of dinosaurs
12. Nearly 21 crore years ago - Production of mammals
13. Nearly 13 crore years ago - Control of dinosaurs i.e. Dinosaurs as a dominant and prominent animal.
14. Nearly 7 crore years ago - Utter destruction of dinosaurs.
15. Nearly 5 crore years ago - Development of mammals.
16. Nearly 1 crore years ago - Production of hominids for the first time.

Such durations of time as are mentioned above are shown in Jain

cosmology. These are described in ancient Āgamas i.e. Jain canonical scriptures and other treatises. They are as under:

According to Jain doctrine the time-cycle has two main divisions called Utsarpiṇīkālā and Avasarpiṇīkālā in Jain-terminology. The Avasarpiṇīkālā is the time of our modern cosmic calendar. The Avasarpiṇīkālā has six sub-divisions called ārās, spokes of the wheel of time i.e. era or epoch. According to Kalpasūtra, a Jain canonical scripture, the first spoke (ārā) is called suṣama-suṣama and its duration is of four kōḍākōḍī ( $4 \times 10,00,00,00 \times 10,00,00,00$ ) i.e.  $4 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas (ocean-measured periods of time). One Sāgarōpama is equal to  $10^{15}$  palyōpamas (glass measured periods of time). In short the duration of time of the first suṣama-suṣama ārā is equal to  $4 \times 10^{29}$  palyōpama years. Palyōpama is the smallest of the big units of time. The number of years in a palyōpama is certain but not clearly expressed and cannot be shown in figures. Even Āgamas and other scriptures say that a palyōpama has innumerable years. This is, therefore, a matter for further research. The second ārā (Spoke of time-wheel) is called suṣama. Its duration is of  $3 \times 10^{29}$  palyōpamas. The third ārā is called suṣama-duḥṣama and it has  $2 \times 10^{29}$  palyōpama years. The fourth ārā is duḥṣama-suṣama. It has a duration of 42000 years less  $1 \times 10^{29}$  palyōpama years. The fifth ārā is called duḥṣama. It has only 21000 years. The sixth ārā is called duḥṣama-duḥṣama. It also has 21000 years. Thus, the total duration of Avasarpiṇīkālā is of  $10^{30}$  palyōpama years.

Reverse is the order of Utsarpiṇīkālā. Both together make time-cycle of  $2 \times 10^{30}$  palyōpama years.

Non-Jain books of Indian culture also give a similar description of time. The Manusmṛiti and its commentators divide the life-time of the cosmos i.e. universe into four divisions, namely, Kṛta, Trētā, Dvāpara and kali. There is Sandhyā in the beginning and Sandhyāṃśa at the end of every epoch.

Kṛta - Sandhyā- 400 years, the main division-4000 years, Sandhyāṃśa-400 years.

Trētā - Sandhyā- 300 years, the main division-3000 years, Sandhyāṃśa-300 years.

Dvāpara - Sandhyā- 200 years, the main division-2000 years, Sandhyāṃśa-200 years.

Kali - Sandhyā 100 years, the main division-1000 years, Sandhyāṃśa-100 years.

According to the commentators, this number is of heavenly years and each

year in heaven is as long as 360 years of man (human years/years on earth). All these four epoches make a Dēvayuga and 1000 Dēvayugas make a Brahmā's day.

The calculation of Jain doctrine and the calculation of the first chapter of the Manusmṛti, shown above are both almost alike. The only difference is that the total number of years of the fourth, the fifth and the sixth ārās, counted jointly are 1 kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas. The number of years of Kaliyuga is equal to 100 years of Sandhyā, 1000 years of main division, and 100 years of Sandhyāṃśa.

According to the Jain religion there are 63 excellent men. Their life history has been written and are available even today. Their birth-time etc. are important for Jain scriptures. Of them 24 Tīrthaṅkaras are chief. Their birth, death etc. occur at definite intervals of time. The importance is, therefore, given to their birth etc. in Jain scriptures. We shall, therefore, regard them as illustrations for the purpose of time durations of incidents in the time-cycle and with reference to the length of the body, life-span etc. of contemporary men. Out of these 24 Tīrthaṅkaras, 23 Tīrthaṅkaras were born in the last and first 1 x<sup>14</sup> Sāgarōpamas of the avsarpiṇi and Utsarpiṇīkāla respectively, while the first Tīrthaṅkara in Avasarpiṇīkāla, and last Tīrthaṅkara in Utsarpiṇīkāla were born before and after some crore years from them.

A circle has 360 degrees, in all. The time-circle also has 360 degrees. Each degree is divided into 60 minutes. Again 1 minute is divided into 60 seconds, further second is also divided into subseconds, microseconds etc. and incidents are shown with reference to the time of their occurrence. First 180 degrees of time-cycle mention Utsarpiṇīkāla and later 180 degrees of time-cycle mention Avasarpiṇīkāla.

00°-00'-00"-01"- Very difficult circumstances of life, underground residence of human beings and animals, gradually obtained slight improvement in auspicious colour, smell, taste and expansion in life-span and construction of bone-joints (Saṅghayaṇa), fully non-vegetarian human beings. The first spoke (epoch) of time-wheel.

00°-00'-00"-45"- Generally miserable life, continuous rain of water, milk and nectar for the first seven-seven days, creation of proper atmosphere, production of plant life, coming out of human beings and animals from their underground residence, human beings becoming vegetarian, end

of the first āra and beginning of the second āra.

- 00°-00'-01"-00"-End of the second āra, intellectual development of people, gradual expansion of body and life-span.
- 00°-00'-02"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation (śāsanakāla) of the first, second, third, fourth and fifth Tīrthaṅkaras.
- 00°-00'-03"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the sixth and seventh Tīrthaṅkaras.
- 00°-00'-04"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the eighth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-00'-05"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the ninth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-00'-07"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the tenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-00'-10"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the eleventh Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-00'-15"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the twelfth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-00'-30"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the thirteenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-00'-50"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the fourteenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-01'-30"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the fifteenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-03'-30"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the sixteenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-07'-00"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the seventeenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-15'-00"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the eighteenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 00°-30'-00"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the nineteenth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 01°-00'-00"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the twentieth Tīrthaṅkara.
- 03°-00'-00"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the twenty-first Tīrthaṅkara.
- 05°-00'-00"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the twenty-second Tīrthaṅkara.
- 09°-00'-00"-00"-Birth, nirvāṇa and duration of dispensation of the twenty-third Tīrthaṅkara.
- 18°-00'-00"-00"-01"-Birth of the twenty-fourth Tīrthaṅkara and beginning of the fourth āra of  $2 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas.
- 18°-00'-00"-00"-50"-Dīkṣā (initiation), attainment of omniscience, nirvāṇa and end of dispensation of the twenty-fourth Tīrthaṅkara and beginning of kulakaras.
- 18°-00'-00"-01"-00"-The end of kulakara-tradition and the beginning of the yugalika (twins) tradition.
- 54°-00'-00"-00"-The end of the fourth āra of  $2 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas and the beginning of the fifth āra of  $3 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas.
- 108°-00'-00"-00"-The end of the fifth āra of  $3 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas and the beginning of the sixth āra of  $4 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas.
- 180°-00'-00"-00"-The end of the last and sixth āra of Utsarpiṇīkāla and the beginning of the equally long (in time duration) first āra of Avasarpiṇīkāla.
- 252°-00'-00"-00"-The end of the first āra of  $4 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas of Avasarpiṇīkāla

and the beginning of the second āra of  $3 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas.

306°-00'-00"-00" - The end of the second āra of  $3 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas and the beginning of the third āra of  $2 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas.

341°-59'-59"-30" -Beginning of the tradition of kulakaras.

341°-59'-59"-59"-05" -Birth of Śrī Ādinātha, the first Tīrthaṅkara.

341°-59'-59"-59"-56" -The first Tīrthaṅkara's Dīkṣā (initiation) and attainment of omni science.

341°-59'-59"-59"-59" -The nirvāṇa (death) of the first Tīrthaṅkara, Śrī Ādinātha.

342°-00'-00'-00" -The end of the third āra and the beginning of the fourth āra.

350°-59'-59"-56" -Birth, Dīkṣā and omniscience of the second Tīrthaṅkara, Śrī Ajitanātha.

350°-59'-59"-59" -Nirvāṇa of the second Tīrthaṅkara.

354°-00'-00'-00" -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the third Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Sambhavanātha

356°-00'-00' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the fourth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Abhinandansvāmi

357°-10'-00' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the fifth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Sumatinātha

358°-05'-00' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the sixth Tīrthaṅkara Padmaprabhasvāmi

359°-00'-00' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the seventh Tīrthaṅkara

Śrī Supārśvanātha

359°-45'-00' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the eighth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Candraprabhasvāmi

359°-53'-00' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the ninth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Suvidhinātha

359°-56'-30' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the tenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Śīṭalanātha

359°-58'-30' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the eleventh Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Śrēyāṃsanātha

359°-59'-10' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the twelfth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Vāsūpūjyasvāmi

359°-59'-30' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the thirteenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Vimalanātha

359°-59'-45' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the fourteenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Anantanātha

359°-59'-50' -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the fifteenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Dharmanātha



- 359°-59'-53" -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the sixteenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Śāntinātha
- 359°-59'-54"-30" -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the seventeenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Kunthunātha
- 359°-59'-57"-00" -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the eighteenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Aranātha and the nineteenth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Mallinātha
- 359°-59'-58"-30" -Birth, Dīkṣā, omniscience and nirvāṇa of the 20th, 21st, 22nd, 23rd, 24th Tīrthaṅkaras.
- 359°-59'-58"-31" -Beginning the fifth ārā of 21000 years.
- 359°-59'-58"-40" -Origin, development and destruction of the modern science.
- 359°-59'-59"-30" -The end of the fifth ārā and the beginning of the sixth ārā. Disturbance in atmosphere. Falling of the Sun's ultraviolet rays directly on the earth. Human beings and animals going underground and destruction of plant life (kingdom). Extremely difficult circumstances of life.
- 360°-00'-00"-00" (000°-00'-00"-00") -The end of the sixth ārā and again beginning of Utsarpiṇīkāla

By comparing the two tables given above, one can see that the beginning of the evolutionary period of Darwin's theory marks the beginning of the first ārā of the Avasarpiṇīkāla part of the time-cycle of the Jain scriptures. The beginning of formation of the crust of the earth marks the beginning of the second ārā. The time of beginning of life and production of bacteria marks the beginning of the third ārā and the production of oxygen in the atmosphere marks the beginning of the fourth ārā of  $1 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas.

Modern science does not believe that life existed on the earth before the time mentioned above because the lowest of the layers of fossils and other fossils discovered during excavations of the earth belong to a time subsequent to the time mentioned above. Rocks (fossils) of earlier times are not discovered. The reasons for this can be given as under on the basis of the Jain scriptures, the Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇī, the Kṣētrasamasa, the Pravacanasārōddhāra etc.

The human life and life of beasts on the earth during the first, second and third ārās of Avasarpiṇīkāla were quite independent of each other. Men and women among human beings and males and females among animals were born as twins, became young together, enjoyed together and gave birth to pair of twin (yugala). They brought up the twins (yugala) for a few days and then

made it free. They died together. They had only slight spiritual blemishes (Kaṣāyas) and only a slight desire of sexual pleasures. They were almost devoid of anger, pride, illusion, greed and infatuation. They never quarrelled or fought. They never died a premature death. Human beings and beasts had few needs which were supplied by kalpavṛkṣas (desire-yielding trees). For all these reasons, the sword (asi) i.e. war, ink (maśī) i.e. writing and farming (kṛṣi) had not come to be used. In those days nobody knew plants and no science of plants, history of plants, kinds and uses of plants existed. But it does not mean that plant kingdom and animal kingdom had not at all developed in those days. Also, natural calamities perhaps befell subsequently in the Avasarpiṇīkālā. Fossils in form of ruins were, therefore, perhaps formed subsequently.

In short, a fully natural life was lived during the first three ārās.

The cosmic calendar has only one division, which is called the period of evolution. In view of intellectual, physical and technological circumstances of the human society, it is called evolution, but the Jain-time-cycle has two chief divisions – Utsarpiṇīkālā and Avasarpiṇīkālā. The Jain scripture entitled Brhatsaṅgrahaṇī states that in Utsarpiṇīkālā, there is a gradual development of physical strength, height, life-span, spirituality etc. and bad tendencies of all living beings subside. Contrarily, in Avasarpiṇīkālā, physical strength, height, life-span etc. diminish and spirituality deteriorates. Bad qualities such as anger, jealousy, pride etc. come into power i.e. become prominent.

Modern science and its ecological and geological evidences support these observations. The ruins in form of fossils of dinosaurs of many years ago, bear witness of their gigantic size. The American Science magazine "Discover" states that the ruins in form of fossils of birds with the length of 11.5 feet and with wing of the expanse of 23 feet, have been discovered. According to the Jain terminology, this dinosaur is a one type of reptiles. The mongoose, the squirrel, the house-lizard etc. belong to this phylum of animals. As stated in the "Jīva vicāra Prakaraṇa" written by Ācārya Śrī Śāntisūrijī in the twelfth century of Vikram Era and in the "Jīvābhigama", the "Pannavanā" and other Jain canonical scriptures written earlier by the year 450 A.D., the largest size of these living beings is of the length 2 to 9 Gāus (1 Gāu = 3.2 kms.) It is estimated that this dinosaur is 80 feet in height and 150 to 175 feet in length. According to science, dinosaurs are of different kinds, different sizes and different peculiarities. They belong to the mesozoic period. According to the

present calculation, dinosaurs lived perhaps nearly seven crore years ago. But the Jain scriptures mention quite a different calculation. A Dhanuṣya (bow) is equal to six feet and the length of a dinosaur is nearly 25 Dhanuṣyas (bow). Supposing that the length of a dinosaur was equal to one-third of the height of man, when man was 75 Dhanuṣyas (bow) tall, the dinosaur was 25 Dhanuṣyas long. Man's height in the interim of the times of the eleventh Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Śrēyāṃsanātha and the twelfth Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Vāsupūjyasvāmi was nearly 75 Dhanuṣyas. Therefore, it can be said that the dinosaur belonged to that period.

According to another calculation, when man was 3 Gāus in height (1 Gāu=3.2 kms) the reptile was 2 Gāus in length. Therefore, when man was 1 Gāu tall, the reptile was 2/3 Gāu long and when man was 500 Dhanuṣyas tall in the times of Bhagavān Śrī Ādinātha, the reptile was 333 Dhanuṣyas long. This means that when the dinosaur was 25 Dhanuṣyas long, man was 37.5 Dhanuṣyas tall and man had this height in the interim of the times of Śrī Śāntinātha, the Sixteenth Tīrthaṅkara and Śrī Kunthunātha, the seventeenth Tīrthaṅkara. It, therefore, does not at all seem to be improbable or impossible that the existence of the dinosaur belongs to the period beginning before nearly 47 Sāgarōpamas and ending before nearly at least three Sāgarōpamas. According to the cosmic calendar, the gigantic dinosaur was born on the 30th December and the Jain-time-cycle shows nearly the same. It coincides with the 30th December of the modern cosmic calendar because 365 days of the cosmic calendar are equal to 180° (180°-00'-00"-01" to 360°-00'-00"-00") of Jain-time-cycle.

Moreover, the methods of modern scientists for deciding the life-span of archaeological objects is faulty according to the calculations of the Jain-time-cycle and it is natural to be because according to the Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇī, the speed of transformation of objects decreases as time passes in Utsarpiṇīkāla i.e. first half of the Jain-time-cycle, and the speed of transformation of objects increase as time passes in Avasarpiṇīkāla i.e. later half of the Jain-time-cycle. The Jain scriptures also give a theory for this. The life-span of human beings varies from 16 to 20 years and they are nearly 1 hand (1.5 feet) tall in the beginning of Utsarpiṇīkāla. When the first ārā of 21000 years and the second ārā of 21000 years come to an end, their height varies from 5 to 6 hands and their life-span is nearly of 80 years. As time passes, the transformation

becomes slower and slower. It is illustrated as under.

After a lapse of the first fifty million million Sāgarōpamas years of the Utsarpiṇīkāla, the life-span rises from 20 years to nearly 72 hundred thousand pūrva years ( $1 \text{ pūrva} = 7056000,00,00,000 = 70.56 \times 10^{12}$  years) and his height rises from 1 hand to 450 Dhanuṣyas (bow). But after lapse of the next 50 million million Sāgarōpama years, the life-span rises only to 84 hundred thousand pūrva years and the height rises from 450 Dhanuṣyas to 500 Dhanuṣyas. Similarly, at the end of the fourth āra having  $2 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpama years of Utsarpiṇīkāla, the life-span rises to nearly 1 palyōpama years and height rises to one Gāu, and at the end of the fifth āra of Utsarpiṇīkāla, the life-span rises to nearly 2 palyōpama years and height rises to two Gāus. The fifth āra is  $3 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpama years long. At the end of the sixth āra, having  $4 \times 4^{14}$  sagaropma years the life-span is of three palyōpama years and the height is of three Gāus. Jain scriptures mention that in each period (ara) of  $2 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpama,  $3 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpama years,  $4.0 \times 10^{14}$  Sāgarōpama years, life-span rises by one palyōpama years and height rises by one Gāu. Similarly, life-span and height decreases in Avasarpiṇīkāla, the later half of the Jain-time-cycle.

Today on the basis of radiation of radioactive element of archaeological objects, scientists can say how old the objects are. But according to what has been stated above, compared to the rate of radiation of radioactive element from those objects today, the rate of radiation of radioactive element from those objects was perhaps low a few years ago and it was perhaps extremely low many more years ago. But without taking this into account, we work out the time of radiation of the past and, therefore, there is all possibilities of errors. e.g. An archaeological object would perhaps have previously taken fifty years to emit as much radiation as it emitted during the last five years and it would have perhaps still previously taken 5000 years to emit as much radiation as it emitted during the fifty years. I, therefore, suggest that more research work should be done on this subject and on this method. Then we shall come nearer to reality.

The basic difference between the modern cosmic calendar and the Jain time-cycle is that in the cosmic calendar everything happens over again, anew or *de nova* after utter destruction of the universe and suddenly animals of gigantic size are created and bacteria and viruses are believed to be their

origins/sources. But according to the Jain time-cycle, all sorts of insects, animals and plants always exist and they develop in favourable circumstances. The size of their body increases in Utsarpiṇīkāla and decreases in Avasarpiṇīkāla. Plants are produced by plants and plants of a particular species produce plants of the same species. Unicellular plants produce unicellular plants and multicellular plants produce multicellular plants. There is no cross production between unicellular plants and multicellular plants.

At the time of destruction of the earth, animals and human beings are preserved underground in sleeping, oval and manifest forms. These animals and human beings cannot bear the temperature of the time of destruction of the earth. But later on when the atmosphere becomes normal and the temperature becomes tolerable, they come out from underground and begin to develop themselves. Animals procreate animals of their own species. We cannot, therefore, say that in course of development of one species of animals procreate other species of animals. Some scientists believe that animal-cells were produced from plant-cells and some other scientists believe that plant-cells were produced from animal-cells. But all these beliefs are ultimately based on inferences. It is possible that reality is quite different from all these inferences of scientists.

In short, Indian scientists belonging to different branches of science such as geology, physics, biology, atomic physics, geography, astronomy etc. should make a deep study of ancient Indian philosophical and other books and do research work on the basis of it. It is the need of the day. If this is done, India will be able to make a very valuable contribution in the field of science.

( Navneet-samarpana, a Gujarati magazine, September,'84 & Tulasī Prajñā, Vol.23 No. 4, Jan.-March,1998)

Note-1 :After five years of publication of this article, a context proving that this inference is true, has been found in the book, 'The Pyramid Power'. It has been stated in the article - 'The Jambūdvīpa Laghusaṅgrahaṇī and Modern Science'.  
p. 139



---

---

## 15. Is There An Origin Of Life?

**F**rom the days when man abandoned the natural life style to adopt the life style created by himself, man's intellectual power began to develop. Man made life style produced in man a sort of curiosity to know the secrets of life, the secrets of all natural phenomena and the factors controlling them. This curiosity and the needs of the new life style inspired him to make new inventions. That was the beginning of science and its inventions. This curiosity played a very important role in material development in human life.

Formerly, man with his small family lived in forests and lived on fruits etc. of trees growing in forests. In those days no man had any fear from another man or any woman and no woman had any fear from another woman or any man. In fact so much fearlessness prevailed that none was afraid of the so called violent birds and beasts. Man in those days lived unclad but the mutual sexual attraction was not strong. As time passed by, they changed. They found shortage of fruits etc. growing in forests and needs of people were not fulfilled. From those days, people began to quarrel, fight and attack. All struggled for their existence. Thus emerged a new life-style and a new social order. Gradually, people adopted the new social order. Man began to think of the natural and artificial phenomena occurring around him. That precisely was the beginning of man-made science, which has been continuously progressing.

Thus man's power of thinking laid the foundation of science and then man began to think of time of beginning of the universe and the great men of succeeding ages, with their powers of knowledge and logic, found answers to this and tried to explain them to other people of society. Religious leaders, original founders of various religions, saviours of religions, great men who redeemed religion made their best efforts and contributed to the solution of problem regarding to the origin of the universe and life. Bhagavān Mahāvīra presented a unique theory and solved many problems related to the universe. Most of the religious leaders believe that the whole universe is without a beginning and is endless. But scientists do not accept it. They believe that

the earth has both, a beginning and an end. The living world was created after crores of years of creation of the earth and it developed gradually. This is what the scientists have been believing. But according to the Jain philosophy, the world of living beings is never created. Since beginningless time the living world has been on the earth and will continue to be there for endless time. It has neither a beginning nor an end. It goes on ascending and descending. The periods of ascent and descent are respectively called Utsarpiṇīkāla and Avasarpiṇīkāla. The present time is Avasarpiṇīkāla. The geological fossils etc. which are the evidences of the famous theory of evolution by Charles Darwin can be evidences of the Avasarpiṇīkāla of the Jain philosophy and they can disprove the theory of evolution because even the Darwin's theory of evolution is ultimately based on inferences and not on direct proofs or evidences. In short the living world is neither created nor destroyed.

Before thinking of the origin of living organisms, according to the Jain philosophy, let us examine various theories presented by different scientists; the experiments made by them in order to prove their theories and their results and reasons for such results according to the doctrines of the Jain philosophy .

Since many centuries, the problem of the origin of the living organisms has been a headache to scientists and philosophers. In the beginning, philosophers believed that there was someone who created all kinds of animals, insects etc. i.e. all living beings and they called him a creator. But this theory of special creation is not acceptable to scientists nor is it acceptable to the Jain philosophy. A great question arises to it is that if the creator made all then there must be someone to make the creator. Who made the creator? Nobody can give a clear explanation to this.

Regarding the beginning of the living organisms, scientists believed that the first living thing perhaps came from a heavenly body i.e. celestial object or the most microorganisms came as cosmic dust. But this cosmozoic theory is also not acceptable to scientists because even on other planets there is no atmosphere conducive to life. The problem of existence of living organisms on other planets has not been yet solved. But according to the Jain geography and astronomy there are many regions which are vaster even than the earth and human beings, animals, plants, insects etc. all the living beings there,

but no object can come from there to this earth. All animals human beings, insects are confined to their region, out of which they cannot go. Even if one goes by supernatural power or help of a god or goddess, one cannot survive there and if one survives there by virtue of some divine power, it is regarded to be very miraculous. (see: The Kalpasūtra, The origin of the Harivaṃśakula). In short the Jain philosophy also does not believe in any such theory as cosmozoic theory.

According to the Jain philosophy, the whole universe (all the fourteen Rājālōkas) is inhabited by living beings. They take birth on this earth too. Their bodies are constituted of the substances existing here. The body structure of some micro-organisms takes shape first and then the life-element /soul comes into it. But in macro-organisms, the soul comes first and it develops its body and organs according to its capacity.

There is another theory which is called the theory of spontaneous generation. According to it, the living world originated on the earth, all of a sudden, accidentally and in a very short time. No external factor was necessary. It was produced casually. The Greek philosophers believed that the living organisms were produced from sea-slimes under the influence of the Sun, heat and atmosphere. Scientists accepted this belief of the Greek philosophers. But they did not accept the reasons that the Greek philosophers gave for creation of the living world. Down to the sixteenth century, some people believed that frogs were produced in the mud of water, scorpions were produced in the excretion of animals and rats, house-flies and earth worms were produced from soil or clay. But some experiments were made to know whether this was true or not. One such experiment was performed by the Italian physicist Francesco Redi and he proved that the theory of spontaneous generation was wrong. He showed that the maggots are produced only from eggs laid on rotten meat and fishes. When meat and fishes are kept in a closed glass vessel and kept away from house-flies, maggots did not develop in it. Ultimately he concluded that life originates from life and non-living beings can never give birth to life. This theory is called biogenesis. Later on Louis Pasteur went still further and proved that very minute micro-organisms can be produced from other germs of a kindred kind. Thus Redi and Pasteur proved that living organisms were not produced in surroundings similar to the present day surroundings. The question arises here whether it



is possible that the living organisms were formerly in different surroundings originated from nonliving substances. This is the idea in the background of abiogenesis and scientists try to prove that living organisms were originated from non-living substances.

In the book entitled, 'The Origin of Life' published in 1936 A.D. A. I. Oparin, a Russian biochemist said about the origin of living organisms that in the beginning of the earth, the atmosphere contained only hydrogen, water vapour, ammonia and methane. There was no free oxygen but there was a little quantity of Carbon-di-Oxide ( $\text{CO}_2$ ). The earth cooled down and then it rained. Rivers, ponds and seas came into existence. Ammonia ( $\text{NH}_3$ ), methane ( $\text{CH}_4$ ), hydrogen ( $\text{H}_2$ ), water vapour ( $\text{H}_2\text{O}$ ), salts, minerals etc. mixed with water. On account of ultraviolet rays, ozone and oxygen remained in the atmosphere. According to Oparin, these conditions brought about decomposition of gases and production of organic compounds, which were building blocks for living micro-organisms in the beginning. But can there be organic compounds in the form of such organic building blocks before the creation/origin of life? For solution of this question, a scientist named Stanley Miller made an instrument in 1953 A.D. and proved with experiments that with compounds of  $\text{H}_2$ ,  $\text{CH}_4$ ,  $\text{NH}_3$  and  $\text{H}_2\text{O}$  (vapour), amino acids only in the liquid form and some organic compounds, DNA and RNA which could be seen in living organisms, could be prepared within a week.

Another experiment proving the theory of A.I. Oparin was performed in 1964 A.D. by scientist named Sydney Fox. He heated a mixture of some amino acids. Then polypeptides were prepared after some chemical processes. They took form of small chains. They were called proteinoids because their nature resembled the nature of proteins. The proteinoids were put into hot water. When the hot water cooled, some subtle microspheroids took shape.

In the primitive initial surroundings conceived in the theory of A.I. Oparin, chains of long chemical reactions were made and such big atoms as polynucleotides, which contained DNA and RNA, were made.

Though the microspheres and polynucleotides were not like living cells, they were particles of organic substances which had acquired natural tendencies of elasticity etc. These particles and microspheres mixed with one another and made more complex substances which could not grow in

sea water. They were like DNA. They doubled themselves. It means that they could produce other substances, similar to them. They were like viruses. The cellular structure emerged from them. They lived on organic substances and gave out CO<sub>2</sub>. They were called heterotrophs. It is believed that as a result of some flaw in their development, simple photosynthetic cells were originated. Thus scientists believe that, first the primitive cells of living organisms of animal kingdom were originated and then the primitive cells of plant kingdom originated from them.

But the contention of the Jain philosophy is altogether contrary to this. Besides, the animal kingdom and the plant kingdom, there are also in cosmos, kingdoms of earth-bodied, water-bodied, fire-bodied and wind-bodies living beings. But that is irrelevant here. The Jain philosophy believes that the animal kingdom and the plant kingdom and even their all species had separate existence in the present and they will have separate existence in the future. They are produced and destroyed, their new kinds/species are developed and old kinds/species destroyed only according to changes in atmosphere, surroundings, mineral salts etc. The primitive cells of plant kingdom did not originate from the primitive cells of the animal kingdom.

According to the Jain philosophy, a living being is born in one of the three ways: (1) *Sammūrcchima Janma*: i.e. asexual production. Without male-female copulation, living beings are born in the place of their birth. As late as in the 18th and 19th centuries, scientists have discovered and showed that living beings can be reproduced and their families can be extended without a male-female copulation. It is called asexual reproduction. Reproduction means to produce a living being from a living being. But according to the Jain philosophy the living beings take birth according to the karma i.e. the deeds of their past births. And reproduction is a subsequent step. (2) *Garbhaja Janma* (sexual reproduction): After a male-female copulation, living beings are reproduced from spermatozoa and blood at the birth place i.e. *Yōni*. They then develop in different female organs for various periods of time. After their development, they come out of the embryo. They take birth through the female reproductive organs. Scientists call it sexual reproduction. (3) *Upapāta Janma*: (reproduction of celestial and hellish beings). Only celestial and hellish beings take *upapāta* birth. It is, therefore, not necessary to describe it here. But it is rather interesting to know how *upapāta* birth takes place. In

their celestial abodes, beds of celestial beings are spread. They are covered with bed-sheets. When a god takes birth in a bed, his whole body, with garments, ornaments, garlands etc. becomes ready in 48 minutes as if by a magician's magic. Then the god turns and twists the body to shake off idleness and gets up. This is how gods are born. For hellish beings, there are recesses in the walls. Hellish beings take their birth and make their bodies in the recesses of a wall. They get only body and no garments, ornaments, garlands etc. (For this see : The Tattvārtha Sūtra ch.2, Sūtra-31).

This is how living beings are reproduced and born. The reproduction and birth of living beings of asexual reproduction are identical i.e. same and one thing. In sexual reproduction, souls of the living beings first come in wombs and in the due course of time they take birth. They are of three kinds : (1) jarāyuja ( born with wrapper called placenta, (2) aṇḍaja (born through eggs) and (3) pōtaja (born without placenta). Living beings born with placenta containing blood are called jarāyuja. The man, the cow, the buffalo, the goat etc. are jarāyuja. Living beings born without placenta on their body are called pōtaja e.g. the elephant, the hare i.e. rabbit , the mongoose, the rat etc. The snake, the pigeon, the parrot, the hen, the sparrow etc. lay eggs. After incubation for a certain period, a babe comes out of it. This is called aṇḍaja garbhaja janma (sexual birth through eggs).

Before we proceed to talk about asexual reproduction let us talk about their birth places. In Jain terminology, they are called Yōnis. There are innumerable birth places (Yōnis) of living organisms or beings. But based on same colour, smell, taste and touch, there are 84 hundred thousand types of birth places (Yōnis). There may be innumerable birth places with similar colour etc. and these all are included in one type of Yōni. The number of types of birth-places for earth-bodied beings is seven hundred thousand types. Similarly, water-bodied beings are also born in the birth places of seven hundred thousand types. Fire-bodied living beings are also born in the birth-places of seven hundred thousand types. Wind-bodied living beings are also born in birth places of seven hundred thousand types. Pratyēka Vanaspatikāya (i.e. plants having a single soul in a single body ) are born in birth places of ten hundred thousand types. Pratyēka Vanaspatikāya means plants etc. that have different souls in the root, the seed, the leaf, the flower, the fruit, the stem and the skin and the whole tree also has one soul. Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya are plants with a single body containing infinite

souls that take birth, die, live and breathe together. They are born in birth-places of fourteen hundred thousand types. Two-sensed, three-sensed and four-sensed living beings are born in birth-places of two hundred thousand types each. Celestial, hellish and Tiryāṇca (living beings other than celestial, human and hellish beings) having five-senses are born in birth-places of four hundred thousand types each. Human beings are born in birth-places of fourteen hundred thousand types. Thus in the living world, there are eighty four hundred thousand types of birth-places for all types of living beings. Now we are thinking of asexual birth and asexual living beings. i.e. Sammūrcchima Janma and types of sammūrcchima living beings.

Sammūrcchima birth is birth without male-female copulation. Sammūrcchima birth takes place amongst one-sensed (non-moving) living beings and moving beings i.e. two-sensed, three-sensed, four-sensed, Tiryāṇca i.e. beasts and birds having five senses and also human beings (see: the Tattvārtha Sūtra, ch-2, Sūtras-32, 33, 34, 35 and 36). All sammūrcchima human beings are born in fourteen types of impurities or excretion. The impurities are as under: (1) faeces (2) urine (3) mucus (4) mucus (5) vomit (6) bile (7) pus (8) blood and flesh (9) semen (10) wetted particles of dried up semen (11) dead body (12) woman-man copulation (13) the city gutter and (14) all impure places. The sammūrcchima type of living organisms among the five non-moving, two-sensed, three-sensed, four-sensed and beasts and birds i.e. Tiryāṇca having five senses, living organisms can take birth at any time and place. Some of them need faeces, urine etc of their own species. Here the cosmozoic theory and the theory of spontaneous generation are refuted and disproved. Even scientists do not accept these theories.

Now let us think what Greek philosophers say. They might have seen living organisms being produced in water from sea-slime under the effect of heat, sun and atmosphere. On seeing the generation of sammūrcchima living organisms in sea water, they perhaps concluded that the living organisms were originated from sea slimes but they could not give reasons for their conclusion because it was only their inference and they were quite ignorant of the real fact.

Francesco Redi, the Italian physicist, performed an experiment. He took two jars. In both the jars, he put flesh and fishes. He closed one jar in an air

tight manner and kept the other jar open. After a few days, he found that maggots were produced in the jar that had been kept open and no maggots were produced in the jar that had been kept closed. He believed that maggots were produced in the open jar because house-flies etc. had laid eggs on flesh and fishes in it. And there was truth in it. On open flesh, fishes and edible things mix with excretion and chemical reaction takes place and when the mixture gets favourable atmosphere and temperature, sammūrcchima living beings are born in it. They grow by getting nutrition from flesh etc. Sometimes mould is produced on edible substances put in air tight jar. Mould is produced because of favourable atmosphere and constant moisture. All these productions of living beings are regarded as sammūrcchima births and all these places are among eighty four hundred thousand types of birth places (Yōnis) of production, stated in Jain scriptures.

As soon as flesh or blood of any type gets separated from the body, subtle sammūrcchima living organisms are produced in it. It is no wonder, then, that the experiments performed by Francesco Redi obtained such results in the conditions of his days.

As a result of experiments performed by himself, Louis Pasteur concluded that subtle living organisms can produce other subtle living organisms of their own kind and they are themselves also produced by germs of their own kind e.g. amoebae. According to Jain scriptures the reproduction of amoebae can be explained in the following manner. First, the size of amoebae expands. Then its nucleus grows big. When another soul comes into it, the nucleus gets divided. The two nuclei then go apart and try to keep their independence. As a result protoplasm gets divided and they both try to live an independent life. In short the subtle organism of Louis Pasteur's experiment were perhaps of the amoebae type and that is why his experiments led to this conclusion. Here the theory of biogenesis of Francesco Redi and Louis Pasteur comes to an end.

Before coming to the theory of abiogenesis, let us discuss biogenesis and abiogenesis of the Jain philosophy. Both are discussed in Jain scriptures. Both biogenesis and abiogenesis contribute to the production of sammūrcchima micro-organisms. Sometimes like amoebae, other micro-organisms are produced from the same microorganism. But sometimes even in the objects regarded to be lifeless, living micro-organisms are

produced after a long time, the duration of their lifeless existence. This is the abiogenesis of the Jainism. Even gods are born according to this abiogenesis theory. But the beasts and birds that reproduce through embryo, i.e. garbhaja animals, namely jarāyuja (born with a wrapper containing blood called placenta) pōtaja (born without placenta) and aṇḍaja (born through eggs) take birth by themselves, take birth certainly according to the theory of biogenesis. jarāyuja, aṇḍaja and pōtaja organisms are reproduced as a result of copulation of male and female and born through the female reproductive organ of animals.

Let us examine Oparin's belief of abiogenesis and the results of the experiments of Miller and Sidney Fox. Oparin only stated his belief and inference of how and in what circumstances the living organisms were originated. He did not perform any experiment about it. But Miller and Sidney Fox performed experiments to find out whether Oparin's belief was right or not. They mixed together  $H_2$ ,  $CH_4$ ,  $NH_3$ ,  $H_2O$ (vapour) and began to discharge them electrically. They did so for a week. Then they got some liquid. This liquid contained four amino-acids and some organic substances. They found that all these were non-living because gases, water etc. and remained hot. Jain scriptures also say that water molecules contain life i.e. they are living. Besides, water contains other micro living organisms. But when water boils, they become lifeless. But water particles and other subtle bodies of micro moving organisms regain life after a certain period. This time limit is nearly 12 hours in winter, nearly 15 hours in summer and nearly 9 hours in the rainy season, it regains life after above mentioned time limit. In short, Miller perhaps decomposed the solution of water,  $H_2$ ,  $CH_4$  and  $NH_3$  for a week, heated it and examined it within a time limit mentioned above and therefore found the substances to be lifeless. Had he examined them after the above mentioned time limit, he would certainly have found the substances contained life.

In his experiments Sidney Fox heated the mixture of amino acids and proteinoids were produced. The proteinoids were put into hot water which was then cooled. In the cold mixture he saw that the subtle spheres and big molecules were produced according to Oparin's belief. Both were mixed. Living cells were thus made. Here, too, polynucleotides were added perhaps after cooling down the mixture of hot water. Meanwhile living cells were perhaps produced and he probably saw the living organisms through a microscope. The results of the experiments of Sidney Fox is, therefore, not

surprising. Even if today experiments were made, as described above, the results would be the same.

In short, all various experiments about the origin of the living organisms, made on the basis of different hypotheses, will lead to the similar results on account of the production of sammūrcchima living organisms. As a result, the question of origin of living organisms will become more and more complex. It will be at last necessary for all living organisms and the whole universe to believe that they are beginningless and endless according to the Indian tradition.

(Navneet-Samarpana, Oct.'85 & Tulasī Prajñā, Jan.;2000)



WHEN THE EASTERN MYSTICS TELL US THAT THEY EXPERIENCE ALL THINGS AND EVENTS AS MANIFESTATIONS OF A BASIC ONENESS, THIS DOES NOT MEAN THAT THEY PRONOUNCE ALL THINGS TO BE EQUAL. THEY RECOGNIZE THE INDIVIDUALITY OF THINGS, BUT AT THE SAME TIME THEY ARE AWARE OF THAT ALL DIFFERENCES AND CONTRASTS ARE RELATIVE WITHIN AN ALL-EMBRACING UNITY. SINCE IN OUR NORMAL STATE OF CONSCIOUSNESS, THIS UNITY OF ALL CONTRASTS—AND ESPECIALLY THE UNITY OF OPPOSITES—IS EXTREMELY HARD TO ACCEPT, IT CONSTITUTES ONE OF THE MOST PUZZLING FEATURES OF EASTERN PHILOSOPHY.

FRTJOF CAPRA

---

## 16. Indian Classical Music And Its Scientific Significance

**T**his happened nearly 400 years ago. It is a wonderful and thrilling incident of the memorable meeting of Baijū Bāvarā, the supreme musician who holds a matchless position among accomplished musicians and Tānasēna, the court musician of the Mogul Emperor Akbar.

Under the pretext of beating the world as a musician, Tānasēna set out from Bāṅgōgaḍha (Rājasthāna) in search of Baijū Bāvarā, the senior disciple of his guru Haridāsa, went to various royal courts and defeated the musicians there. But nowhere did he find Baijū Bāvarā. At last Tānasēna reached Āgrā and challenged the court musicians of Akbar, the Mogul Emperor of Delhi. But the court musicians of Delhi had not the courage to compete with Tānasēna, who had natural talent, musical aptitude etc. Emperor Akbar confessed the weakness of his singers and with open heart he accepted the supremacy of Tānasēna. He made him his court musician.

But Tānasēna was still uneasy because he had not yet succeeded in his aim of beating the world as a musician.

But when Baijū came to know of Tānasēna's craze of beating the world in music, his sentiments as an artist were greatly hurt. He made up his mind to humiliate Tānasēna and challenged him and according to the order of Emperor Akbar, arrangements for an extraordinary musical competition between them were made in the garden near the city Āgrā.

It was a fine morning that filled the mind with joy. The atmosphere of the garden was also full of natural beauty. It was filled with soft and sweet sounds of birds. The musical competition was to begin in this charming atmosphere.

Emperor Akbar, his queens, the nine gems of Akbar's court and fanatic admirers of music - all came to the garden.

There came a musician, wrapped in tattered and old clothes and equipped with only a stringed musical instrument (Tānapūrō). Tānasēna, the court musician, was astonished to see his strange appearance. He was Baijū him-



self. Since they were not familiar, the two disciples of the same guru did not recognize each other. Still however, Tānasēna had great fascination and high regards for him.

The competition started.

According to the order of the emperor, Tānasēna first sang in the Tōḍī mode and filled the atmosphere with music. Soon a small flock of deer, fascinated by the music, came to Tānasēna and stood there. Tānasēna put a garland around the neck of a deer fascinated by music. As soon as the music was over, the deer frightened of the human crowd, ran away into the forest.

Baijū cheerfully looked at Emperor Akbar and said, "O, Sovereign! Tānasēna sang in the Tōḍī mode, fascinated the deer and called them here from the forest. Now I shall sing in the Mṛgarañjanī mode. Under the influence of this mode, only that deer will come which has the garland around its neck."

The Emperor allowed Baijū to sing in the Mṛgarañjanī mode. As soon as Baijū tuned his voice, the deer around whose neck Tānasēna had put the garland, came running from the forest and sat by Baijū's feet as if it were familiar since long, as if it were tame. Baijū took the garland of the deer's neck and gave it to Emperor Akbar.

Then the Emperor asked Baijū to sing something else and expected him to be answered by Tānasēna.

Baijū then said, "O, Emperor! I shall now sing the Mālakaṃṣa mode. Under its influence the stone lying in the front, will melt like wax and I shall put my stringed musical instrument into it. When the music will be over, the melted stone will again solidify. Let Tānasēna take my stringed musical instrument out without breaking the stone."

The audience was astonished to hear this.

With full concentration, Baijū began to sing in the Mālakaṃṣa mode and soon the stone began to melt. The stone completely melted into a liquid form. As soon as Baijū went to put his stringed musical instrument into it, Tānasēna stood up and knelt at the feet of Baijū. With great respect and high regards he said, "According to what my guru said to me, there is a

greater singer than I am. He is my guru's disciple and senior to me. His name is Baijūnātha. Who are you?"

When Baijū heard this his eyes were filled with tears of joy. Both the disciples of the same guru affectionately embraced each other.<sup>1</sup>

There is a traditional belief of Jain Āgamas that Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmās deliver their religious discourse only after attaining omniscience and their religious discourse never fails. At least some people certainly accept the holy orders and Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmās always deliver their discourse in the Mālakaṃsa mode.<sup>2</sup> Like the first religious discourse of Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīrasvāmi, if the religious discourse of a Tīrthaṅkara fails, it is believed to be an uncommon incident.<sup>3</sup>

The Mālakaṃsa mode has such a tremendous potentiality that under influence of its vibrations, even a stone melts into liquid. What to talk of a human heart? The religious discourse delivered in the Mālakaṃsa mode is capable of changing hearts of the greatest of men. That is perhaps the reason why Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmās deliver their religious discourse only in the Mālakaṃsa mode.

There is also a traditional belief that after conquering the city of Cāmpānēra, when Humāyu ordered indiscriminate wholesale slaughtering in the city, the great musician Baijū Bāvarā sang a mode named Jaunapurī which forced him the flow of sentiments of mercy from his heart to people. Even the heart of Humāyu was filled with pity and he stopped the slaughtering and made the prisoners free.<sup>4</sup>

Once when Tānasēna sang in the Dīpaka mode and enkindled lamps, two Nāgara brahmin girls of Vaḍanagara, Tānā and Rīrī, sang in the Malhāra mode, caused the rain to pour down and relieved Tānasēna from the heat of the enkindled lamps and Dīpaka mode and made the atmosphere calm.<sup>5</sup>

As an effect of Bhairava mode, some musicians could squeeze juice from sugarcane and oil from oilseeds with the help of machines working without bullocks. By singing in the Hindōla mode some musicians could take long and high swings automatically by sitting in swinging cots.<sup>6</sup>

The Śrī mode has a wonderful effect. In the hot summer, it can make a dry garden full of greenery and rich with fruits and flowers.<sup>7</sup>

What is music? How are various potentialities generated in music and what is their source?

Music is sound produced systematically and methodically with certain high or low intensity and at fixed intervals of time whether it is produced with a bin (kind of stringed musical instrument), a Sāraṅgī, (kind of stringed musical instrument), a lute, Tambūrō, Sitāra, Dilarubā (kind of stringed musical instruments), Khañjarī (small tambourine), Mañjīrā (cymbals), Ḍhōlaka (a large drum), Tabalā (kind of musical instrument), a piano or a harmonium etc. or it is produced by the musician himself with his mouth. Though these sounds have no clear meaning, they have strange and wonderful potentialities.

Music has its own physics. If a musician knows phonetics or if a phonetician is a musician, they make very good combination.

A well-planned combination of many notes of various frequencies and various intensities is produced in music. By pressing various keys of a harmonium or a piano, we easily know that the note produced by pressing one key is different from the note produced by pressing another key. From sharpness and flatness of a note, the musician knows which note has high pitch and which note has a low pitch. It has been stated above that every key of a harmonium produces a note of a fixed frequency.<sup>8</sup>

The key-board shown above, shows only one octave. In it C, D, E, F, G, A, B, c' etc. are shown as general symbols. The symbols - do, re, mi, fa, sol, la, ti, do'- are written below them are according to the western music. The symbols sā सा, ri रि, ga ग, ma म, pa प, dha ध, ni नि, sā' सा', are shown according to the Indian music, the figures shown in the lowermost line, show the frequency of the notes. In Indian classical music and in Sanskrit literature, all these seven notes are known by special names. sā सा, ri रि, ga ग, ma म, pa प, dha ध, ni नि are called Ṣadja, Ṛṣabha, Gāndhāra, Madhyama, Pañcama, Dhaivata and Niṣāda respectively.<sup>9</sup>

We can see that the same note has twice as much frequency as the frequency of the same note of preceding octave. e.g. sā सा has the frequency 256 while the frequency of sā' सा' in the beginning of the second octave<sup>10</sup> is 512.

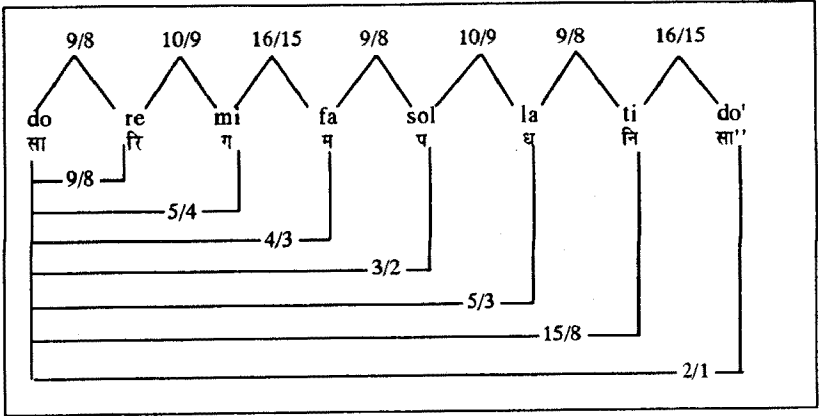
The word 'interval' is used to show the difference of frequencies of two

notes, which are produced when a harmonium keys are pressed. In music an 'interval' is a very important quantity. An 'interval' shows the difference in pitch between two notes on a given scale. For this let us study the intervals on the key-board of a piano or a harmonium. The figure shows the frequency of the note produced by pressing a key. We can see here that if we press two neighbouring keys of piano, we obtain a small interval between two notes. Similarly, if we press two distant keys of a piano, we obtain a large interval between two notes. We can, therefore, easily conclude that the interval is determined by the difference between frequencies of two notes. But this is not the whole truth. Really speaking, the interval is determined by the ratio of frequencies. The intervals of the octave shown above, are determined as under.

This is only a model. Many such intervals can be determined on the basis of the ratio of different frequencies. Some such intervals are given special names in the western music. They are shown in the Table. These names belong to the western music but in the Indian classical music also, corresponding keys of a piano, their notes and the ratio of their frequencies are shown instead of their names.

Name of the intervals of notes	Duration of interval		Ratio of frequencies
	Symbol of the key of the piano	Name of the notes	
1 Half-tone, Minor Second	E-F	मिग - फाग	16/15
2 Minor tone, Major second	D-E	रेरि - मिग	10/9
3 Major tone	C-D	दोसा - रेरि	9/8
4 Minor third	E-G	मिग - सोप	6/5
5 Major third	C-E	दोसा - मिग	5/4
6 Perfect fourth	C-F	दोसा - फाग	4/3
7 Perfect fifth	C-G	दोसा - सोप	3/2
8 Minor sixth	E-c'	मिग - दो'सा'	8/5
9 Major sixth	C-A	दोसा - लाघ	5/3
10 Minor seventh	E-d	मिग - रे'रि'	9/5
11 Major seventh	C-B	दोसा - तिनि	15/8
12 Octave	C-c'	दोसा - दो'सा'	2/1

सा do	रि re		म fa	प sol	ध la		सा'' do'
C do सा	D re रि	E mi ग	F fa म	G sol प	A la ध	B ti नि	C' do' सा''
256	288	320	$341\frac{1}{3}$	384	$426\frac{2}{3}$	480	512



In short, what is really important here is the ratio of frequencies of two notes. One comes across a similar description in Jain scriptures. It is a description of happiness of gods living in the residence of gods (Vimāna) named Sarvārthasiddha. Before describing the happiness of gods of Sarvārthasiddha in the poem of Vēdanīya karma of poems of sixty-four kinds intended to ward

off the eight kinds of karma, Pandit Śrī Vīravijayajī Mahārāja shows the internal construction of the residence of gods there. According to the description, the gods there always keep lying in the bed and a fine chandelier of 253 pearls hangs over them. Its construction is worth knowing. In the centre, there is a pearl weighing 64 maunds. On the four sides of it, there are four pearls weighing 32 maunds each. In the outer (second) circle there are eight pearls weighing 16 maunds each. In the third circle, there are 16 pearls of 8 maunds each. In the fourth circle, there are 32 pearls of four maunds each. In the fifth circle, there are 64 pearls of 2 maunds each. In the sixth i.e. last circle there are 128 pearls of one maunds each. Blown by the wind when all these pearls strike against the inter-located pearls, they produce sweet musical modes and patterned arrangements characteristic of classical music. They also produce drama. The god in the bed enjoy seeing it.<sup>12</sup> Here is a constant ratio of the weight and the number of pearls. Notes of certain frequency are produced when two pearls strike against each other. The natural combinations of the notes produce musical mode of the best quality. Here it is stated that along with musical modes a drama is also produced. This requires to be explained. In all the nine Graivēyaka and all the five Anuttara abodes of gods only gods live and gods and goddesses from no other heavenly abodes can go there.<sup>13</sup> It is, therefore, impossible that they make a drama. But it can be explained as under.

As it will be shown later on someone of the western musicians saw in the sky, the figures dancing to the tune of notes and such ones as Ashok Kumar Dutt, who are endowed with super - perceptivity, can see colours of sounds. Similarly, the gods can see various fine figures made of groupings of pudgalas (Vargaṇā) of Bhāṣā (speech) produced by sweet musical modes and their varieties. These gods have such a superior quality of avadhijñāna that if they have a doubt, from their abode, they can ask a question to Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmā and Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmā answers the question through groupings of manas particles i.e. paramāṇu-units of Manō-Vargaṇā namely thoughts. The gods in their abodes know the answer to their question by seeing the thoughts of Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmā in the form of parmanu-units of Manō-Vargaṇā. <sup>14</sup> Here the parmanu-units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā of musical modes and their varieties take forms of various figures and the gods see them appearing and disappearing. Moreover paramāṇu units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā are bigger than the parmanu-units of Manō-Vargaṇā namely thoughts. The gods,

therefore, can see them well and enjoy seeing them in the form of a drama. This is my conclusion.

Depending on the authority of P. D. Ospensky's book 'In Search of The Miraculous' and other books Lieut. Col. C.C.Baksi, writes in his book 'Vaiśvika Cētanā' [Coscon] that seven musical notes are of great importance in the universe.<sup>15</sup> Every note has its colour and its planet and it influences various parts of our body. The tables given by him are as under. The table relating to the ratio of octaves is given on the top of it.

Western notes	Indian Notes	Organ of the body	Colour	Planet	Voice of the animals	Element of the universe
do	sā सा	soul	Red	Mars	Peacock	Spreme being God, Pure soul
re	ri रि	head	Orange	Sun	Acertain bird	The moon
mi	ga ग	hands	Yellow	Mercury	Goat, Sheep	The earth
fa	ma म	chest	Green	Saturn	Heron, Crane	All Planets
so	pa प	neck	Blue	Jupiter	Horse, frog	The Sun
la	dha घ	waist	Skyblue	Venus	Horse	All suns
ti	ni नि	legs	Purple	Moon	Elephant	Whole universe
do'		sā' सा' -		-	-	-Supreme being, God, pure soul

Notes(western)	do	re	mi	fa	sol	la	ti	do'
Fractional ratio	1/1	9/8	5/4	4/3	3/2	5/3	15/8	2/1
Integer	24	27	30	32	36	40	45	48
Indian Notes	sā सा,	riरि,	gaग,	maम,	paप,	dhaघ,	niनि,	sā' सा',

Now - a - days, two varieties of music are generally well-known. One is the western music and the other is Indian classical music.

Since their aims are different, there is a vast difference between the western music and the Indian classical Music. The western music is only for momentary joy and it fully gives sensual gratifications. Since it is provocative, it appeals to the senses. But the aim of the Indian classical music is attainment of the final emancipation. It is characterised not by sensual pleasures but by the spirit of abandonment, feeling of aversion to worldly pleasures, self surrender and devotion. Great men absorbed in devotional music do not care for any worldly thing. They rejoice in themselves, the god of their faith and in worship. Sometimes, the worship of such worshippers changes even poison into nectar.<sup>16</sup>

According to the Jain philosophical contention, sound is produced from the paramāṇu units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā. And every paramāṇu of matter i.e. pudgala has colour, smell, taste, and touch.<sup>17</sup> Every sort of sound, therefore, necessarily has good or bad colour, smell, taste and touch. But they are so few or subtle that they cannot be perceived by our sense-organs. True, every one feels the touch of sound. There are some like Ashok Kumar Dutt who can perceive with their eyes, the colour of sound i.e. different colours of vowels and consonants.<sup>18</sup>

Even the science of today accepts that matter i.e. pudgala atoms have inestimable energy. In the sunday supplement of English daily, "The Times of India" of September 3, 1995, there was an article. It clearly stated that air is charged with musical ions. Of course, the writer described the western pop dance and disco dance and during the music, some spectators saw colourful various figures dancing in the atmosphere i.e. They perceived the colours of sound.<sup>19</sup>

Of the Jain Āgama literature, the Āgama entitled "Śrī Anuyōgadvāra sūtra", gives an elaborate information about the seven notes of music as under :

"What are the seven types of notes? They are described as under: 1. Ṣaḍja, 2. Rṣabha, 3. Gāndhāra, 4. Madhyama, 5. Pañcama, 6. Dhaivata or Raivata and 7. Niṣāda

1. The note that is produced jointly from the nose, the throat, the heart,



the palate, the tongue and the teeth is called *Ṣaḍja*.

2. The note that acts like a bull ( *Ṛṣabha* or *Vṛṣabha*) is *Ṛṣabha*. There is a clear definition of *Ṛṣabha*. It says that the wind produced from the navel strikes in the throat and the head and bellows like a bull. That is the reason it is called *Ṛṣabha* or *Vrsabha*.

3. That which has smell called *Gāndhāra* or that which carries smell is called *Gāndhāra*. The wind produced in the navel and struck in the heart and the throat makes the *Gāndhāra* note producing many varieties of smells.

4. That which is produced in the centre of the body is called *Madhyama*. When the wind produced in the navel passes through the chest and the heart to return to the navel, it produces a heavy note. That is called the *Madhyama* note.

5. That which is the fifth among the seven notes, namely *Ṣaḍja* etc. is *Pañcama* or the note that is produced in the five places namely, the navel, the chest, the heart, the throat and the head, is called *Pañcama*.

6. The note that joins the above mentioned and other notes to one another is called *Dhaivata* or the *Raivata* note.

7. Where notes are produced or sit side by side, the joint note is called *Niṣāda*. This note beats all the rest. Its god is the Sun. <sup>20</sup>

Telling the names of special/chief places of production of all the seven above-mentioned notes, the author of *Śrī Anuyōgadvāra sūtra* says that the *Ṣaḍja* note is produced from the forefront of the tongue, *Ṛṣabha* is produced from the chest, *Gāndhāra* is produced from the throat, *Madhyama* is produced from the central portion of the tongue, *Pañcama* is produced from the nose, *Dhaivata* is produced by joint efforts of teeth and lips and that note is *Niṣāda* in production of which eye-brows are contracted. <sup>21</sup>

All souls from the two sensed to the five-sensed, having a tongue, can produce sound/voice. Of course, we cannot hear sounds of minute two-sensed organisms because they are infrasonic or ultrasonic. Notes of all souls are among the aforementioned seven notes or they are in form of combination of various notes. The author himself shows clear voices of the nearest souls as examples of the above-mentioned seven notes.

“ The note of a peacock is Ṣaḍja, the note of a cock is Ṛṣabha, the note of a swan is Gāndhāra, the notes a cow, a bull and a sheep is Madhyama, when the spring sets in, the sweet cry of a cuckoo is Pañcama, the note of the crane is Dhaivata and the note of the heron is Niṣāda.”<sup>22</sup>

With reference to various non-living things i.e. various kinds of special musical instruments, examples of all the seven aforementioned notes are given as under:

“ The Mrdaṅga (kind of tabor) produces Ṣaḍja, the Gōmukhī (kind of drum) produces Ṛṣabha, the conch - shell produces Gāndhāra, the gong produces Madhyama, the tabor (the small drum) produces Pañcama, the large drum produces Dhaivata and the Mahābhērī (kind of large kettle drum) produces Niṣāda.”<sup>23</sup>

Showing what influence all these seven notes have on living beings and what the living beings can gain from the influence, the author says, “He whose note is Ṣaḍja or tries to develop mainly the Ṣaḍja note can very well get wealth and his livelihood and the wealth that he has got is not destroyed. He comes to have cows, sons and friends and he is a favourite of woman.

The man whose note is Ṛṣabha or who tries to develop the Ṛṣabha note, gets wealth, commandership, clothes, sweet-smelling objects, ornaments, women, beautiful beds, bedsteads etc.

The man whose note is Gāndhāra or who tries to cultivate the Gāndhāra note, gets the best kind of livelihood, becomes an artist knowing various arts, a poet of a high rank and well versed in various scriptures.

The man who has the Madhyama note or who tries to develop the Madhyama note, is happy, has enough to eat and drink and gives to others, things to eat and drink, i.e. he is charitable.

Men with the Pañcama or men who try to cultivate the Pañcama note, become kings. They are brave, they store many kinds of things and are leaders of various groups.”<sup>24</sup>

Men with the last two kinds of notes are unhappy. The two notes have the following bad influences:

“Men with the Dhaivata note are unhappy and have a bad livelihood.

They are thieves and murderers. They commit many sins, hunt birds and beasts and kill deer and pigs.

Men with the Niṣāda note are quarrelsome. They are bearers of burden, labourers and messengers. <sup>25</sup> "

As shown above, these seven musical notes influence the body and the mind of men. Moreover, they indicate the nature and the fate of men. If efforts are made, these notes can change the fate of men.

We see in our everyday life that when a small child is weeping, the mother sings a sweet lullaby and swings the child and the child soon stops weeping and goes to sleep. Though the child does not know sounds but the pause and pleasingness of sound can make the child silent and send it to sleep.

Today new experiments are made in therapeutics all over the world. As a result, various therapies have come into existence in the world. Among them allopathy, the modern medical science and Āyurvēda, the ancient Hindu system of medicine are very famous. Moreover, some other new therapies have been found out. Of course, the roots of the so called new therapies lie in the ancient literary traditions e.g. 1. the acupuncture therapy, 2. the acupressure therapy, 3. the magnetic therapy, 4. the colour therapy, 5. the pyramid therapy.

To these various therapies a new therapy, the music therapy is added. Of course, this is not a new therapy in India. On the basis of practical experimentation, western scientists have only substantiated this therapy.

For music therapy, they have mainly relied on the Sāmavēda, the third Vēda and the Gāndharvavēda, the musical science, among the four Vēdas of ancient India.<sup>26</sup> There is 70% water in our body and the modern science also agrees that water and the motion of the moon have a special kind of relation and that is the reason why there is flood tide in the sea on the full moon day and the last day of the dark half of every lunar month. Indian astronomers, therefore, attach greater importance to the moon than the Sun. And they have prepared the Indian calendar (Pañcāṅga) on the basis of the motion of the moon. Of course, the motion of the Sun is also taken into consideration here but it has no special importance. But western astronomers have attached importance only to the motion of the Sun in preparing the solar calendar.

The development and other processes in the human body, the animal kingdom and the plant kingdom, depend on the motion of the moon. Its attraction i.e. gravitational force has a special influence on all these. Along with it, a special note / mode of music also has an influence on our body. Accordingly our ancient musicians have fixed certain periods of time for certain modes of music. Regarding music, Tulasīdāsa himself says:

राग हरे सब रोग को, कायर को दे सूर । सुखिया को साधन बने, दुःखिया को दुःख दूर ॥

*rāga harē saba rōga kō, kāyara kō dē sūra .*

*sukhiyā kō sādhanā banē, duḥkhiyā kō duḥkha dūra ..*

[ Modes of music cure all diseases, make cowards brave, supply sources of happiness to the happy and remove miseries of the miserable.]<sup>27</sup>

Every activity of our body is controlled by the brain which is controlled by the mind. Of course, there are some who believe that the brain and the mind are the same. i.e. In every activity of our body, the mind directly or indirectly plays its role and the composure and discomposure of our body depends upon our mental composure. Our mind is also paudgalic (material). Regarding this Carl Gustav Jung states in his book entitled "Aion":

*"Psyche cannot be totally different from matter, for how otherwise could it move matter? And matter cannot be alien to psyche, for how else could matter produce psyche? Psyche and matter exist in the same world and each partakes of the other, otherwise any reciprocal would be impossible."*<sup>28</sup>

Since our mind is material, it goes on being vibrated or affected by various kinds of thoughts. The vibration or effect is sometimes good and sometimes bad i.e. harmful. The mind influenced by harmful vibrations becomes discomposed and consequently the body also becomes discomposed.

Regarding this, Fritjof Capra, the celebrated physicist states in his book entitled "The Turning Point":

*"The notion of illness as originating in a lack of integration seems to be especially relevant to approaches that try to understand living organisms in terms of rhythmic patterns. From this perspective synchrony becomes an important measure of health. Individual organisms interact and communicate with one another by synchronising their rhythms and thus integrating themselves into larger rhythms of their environment. To be healthy, then,*

means to be in synchrony with oneself physically and mentally and also with the surrounding world. When a person is out of synchrony, illness is likely to occur.”<sup>29</sup>

Good vibrations which are by nature antithetical to vibrations which are harmful to the mind and the body, improve mental and physical health.

Since our mind is influenced by various modes of music, music has great effect on our physical health. Since ancient times the music therapy has been shown in Āyurvēda with the help of Gāndharvavēda, Sage Caraka, the promulgator of Āyurvēda gives in the sixth chapter of his work, entitled “Siddhisthāna” a detailed description of medical uses of music. The whole Gāndharvavēda fully deals with the science of sound. Our classical and quasi-classical modes of music themselves are scientific form of these sound waves. These sound waves have a direct effect on gas, bile and mucus in our body. The book entitled “Saṅgīta Svarāmṛta” states:

उच्चैस्तरो ध्वनिः रूक्षो, विज्ञेयो वातजो बुधैः । गम्भीरो घनशीलश्च, ज्ञातव्यो पित्तजो बुधैः ॥  
स्निग्धश्च सुकुमारश्च, धुरः कफजो ध्वनिः । त्रयाणां गुणसंयुक्तो, विज्ञेयो सन्निपातजः ॥<sup>30</sup>

uccaistarō dhvaniḥ rūkṣō, vijñēyō vātajō budhaiḥ .  
gambhīrō ghanāśīlaśca, jñātavyō pittajō budhaiḥ ..  
snigdhaśca sukumāraśca, dhuraḥ kaphajō dhvaniḥ .  
trayāṇāṃ guṇasaṃyuktō, vijñēyō sannipātajah ..

Sound waves of high intensity are dry and they are product of gas. Deep and thick sound waves are product of bile. Soft, smooth and melodious waves are product of mucus. The sound waves which have all these three qualities are called a combined derangement. What effects these sound waves produce on the body, is not shown here.

Very loud sound waves of as high intensity as 100 to 110 decibels are mostly produced by loudly beating drums of bands. Perhaps most of us know that if we are standing behind drums of a band, we feel as if hammers are beaten on our bellies and such sound waves produce fear and uneasiness in us. These sound waves have a very great amplitude. According to the Jain philosophical contention, these sound waves have a very large number of groupings of particles of speech i.e. paramāṇu-units of Bhāṣā -Vargaṇā.

In the last three verses of Śrī Ajitaśānti Stōtra compiled by Muni Śrī Nandiṣēṇa of Jain Svētāmbara sect. mentioned the importance of chanting

this stotra in the morning and evening, that the person chanting and listening this Stōtra will never have any diseases or if he has any disease he will be cured of it.

	Time	Modes of Music
1	4:00 a. m. to 7:00 a. m.	1.Hinḍōla, 2. Bhairava, 3.Āhira Bhairava, 4.Bhairavī, 5. Siddha Bhairavī, 6. Rāmakalī, 7.Guṇakalī,
2	7:00 a. m. to 10:00 a. m.	1. Jaunapurī, 2. Āśāvarī, 3. Tōḍī, 4. Gurjara Tōḍī, 5. Ahilya Bilāvala
3	10:00 a. m. to 1:00 p. m.	1. Mēgha Malhāra 2. Śuddha Sāraṅga, 3. Sura Malhāra
4	1:00 p. m. to 4:00 p. m.	1. Madhuvantī, 2. Multānī
5	4:00 p. m. to 7:00 p. m.	1. Pātamañjarī, 2. Mākhā, 3. Rāgaśrī, 4. Kalāvatī, 5. Puriyā Dhanaśrī,
6	7:00 p. m. to 10:00 p. m.	1. Yamana Kalyāṇa, 2. Kalyāṇa, 3. Puriyā, 4. Śivarañjanī 5. Yamana, 6. Śuddha Kalyāṇa, 7. Maruvihaga, 8. Kēḍāra 9. Śāma Kalyāṇa, 10. Priya Kalyāṇa,
7	10:00 p. m. to 1:00 a. m.	1. Darabārī, 2. Kāṇaḍa, 3. Nāyakī Kāṇaḍa, 4. Mālakaumṣa, 5. Dīpaka, 6. Bhāgyaśrī, 7. Candrakaumṣa, 8. Kaumṣī Kāṇaḍa 9. Jayajayavantī
8.	1:00 a. m. to 4:00 a. m.	1. Lalita, 2. Nara Bhairava, 3. Sōhanī, 4. Vasanta, 5. Vasanta Bahāra

In the present era, nobody has much faith in this theory but in the verses of Śrī Ajitaśānti Stōtra, the last word which comes, instructs the Rāgas (mode)/ Chandas of the verses. All the Rāgas (modes i.e. tunes) are ancient

and to sing this, special tunes are there. By singing or listening it in these tunes in the morning and evening, the effect of these verses will be felt by us immediately and can be experienced, first hand about this and so it can be said that the different Rāgas (tunes)/Chandas inscribed in Śrī Ajitaśānti Stōtra can be used as "Musical Therapy". The only thing required is that while singing this Stōtra, the knowledge of singing the modes and tunes should be original.

Deep and dense sound waves have a high frequency. These sound waves produce very sharp notes, When we hear these notes, we feel as if thick and long thorns pierce our body. According to the Jain philosophical contention, every grouping of particles of speech, i.e. every paramāṇu-unit of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā has a very large number of paramāṇus i.e. atoms. Though the number and size of paramāṇu-units are equal, they contain more atoms. But sound waves which are not very big nor have a very high frequency give unusual calmness and ease to our body.

Precisely this is a great difference between Indian classical music and the western music. That is the reason why the western music seems to be very noisy and the Indian classical music is pleasing, quiet, calm and resolute.

Of course, in western music, there are also some modes like the modes of Indian classical music that are pleasing, quiet, calm and resolute, but they are not popular in people, e.g. Bethovan, Mozart, Backha and others.

The following table shows which modes of music are useful in various diseases.<sup>31</sup>

Thus Indian classical music is the greatest and the best means of physical and mental health on the one hand and on the other hand, the same classical music is the best means of worship too. In ancient culture of India, the devotional poets have written a large number of prayer songs (Bhajanās), praise songs (Kīrtanas), hymns of praise (Stōtra), pynegrics (Stuties), poetic forms (pada), prayer songs sung while waving lights before deity (ārati) etc. in the language of the common people and also in Sanskrit, the language of the learned.

Mīran, Narasiṃha Mahētā, Sūradāsa, Tulasīdāsa, Ānandaghanajī, Upādhyāya Śrī Yaśōvijayajī, Paṇḍita Uttamavijayajī, Paṇḍita Rūpavijayajī,

Cidānandajī, Paṇḍita Padmavijayajī, Paṇḍita Vīravijayajī Śrī Jñānavimalasūrijī, Śrī Vijayalakṣmīsūrijī, Upādhyāya Sakalacandrajī, Paṇḍita Dēvacandrajī, Vācaka Udayaratnajī, Paṇḍita Dīpavijayajī, and many such other poets have created various kinds of poetic literature in the forms of hymns of praise (Stōtras) eulogies (stavanas), panegyrics (Stuties), songs of worship (Pūjās), songs sung at the time of circular dance (Rāsa) etc. in popular Gujarati, Prakrit, and Hindi languages.

A defect in a constituent of body	The balancing mode of music
Defect of Rasa	Dīpaka, Śuddha Sāranga
Defect of Blood	Puriyā, Mālakaumṣa
Defect of Fat	Kalāvati, Mēgha Malhāra, Siddha Bhairava
Defect of Bone	Bhairavī,
Defect of Marrow	Kēdāra, Darabārī Kānaḍa, Sāmavēda
Defect of Semen	Lalita, Āśāvārī

Ancient great sages such as Kalikāla Sarvajña Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī and Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī have composed hymns of praise -panegyrics etc. in Sanskrit and Prakrit languages.

Now, in the modern times also such classical musical devotional songs are composed. Recently, a few months ago, His Holiness Pannyāsa Śrī Śīlacandravijayajī Mahārāja published 'Bhīnī Kṣaṇōnō Vaibhava', a book of devotional songs composed by him in ancient diction, based on beautiful classical modes of music.

Showing the importance of this devotional music, Śrī Jñānavimalasūrijī says:

जिनवरबिम्बने पूजतां, होय शतगणुं पुण्य, सहस्रगणुं फल चन्दने जे ले ए ते धन्य ।  
लाखगणुं फल कुसुमनी, माला पहरावे, अनंतगणुं फल तेहथी, गीत गान करावे ॥

jīnavarabimbanē pūjatām, hōya śatagaṇuṃ puṇya,  
sahasragaṇuṃ phala candanē jē lē ē tē dhanya .



*lākhagaṇuṃ phala kusumanī, mālā pahērāvē,  
anantaḡaṇuṃ phala tēhathī, ḡīta ḡāna karāvē ..*

[Hundred fold merits are earned by worshipping the idol of Jina Paramātmā, Thousandfold merits are earned by worshipping the idol with sandal paste. Blessed is he who earns such merits. He who puts a garland of flowers on the idol of Jina, earns a hundred times thousand fold merits. He who sings songs of Jina earns infinite fold merits]

Disease	Modes of music useful in treatment
Anaemia	Priyadarśinī Sāmavēda
Asthma	Puriyā, Mālakaumsa, Yamana
Cancer	Nāyakī Kāṇaḡa, Siddha Bhairavī, Ragaśrī, Sāmavēda
Nervousness	Āhira Bhairavī, Puriyā
Heart disease	Bhairavī, Śivaraṇjanī, Ahilya Bilāvala,
High Blood Pressure	Hiṇḡōla, Puriyā, Kaunsi Kāṇaḡa
Acidity	Māravā, Dīpaka, Kalāvatī
Mental Disease	Lalita, Kēḡāra
Ulcer	Madhuvantī Dīpaka
Skin Disease	Mēgha Malhāra, Multānī, Madhuvantī
Diabetes	Jaunapurī, Jayjayvantī
Colour blindness	Kaumsī Kāṇaḡa, Multānī
High fever	Mālakaumsa, Vasanta Bahāra
Leucorrhea	Āśāvarī, Rāmakalī, Sāmavēda
Insomnia	Bhairavī, Dīpaka, Bhāgyaśrī

Why is so much importance given to music in God's worship? Pondering over this, we feel that music gives ease to the mind and then to the body and the man who is drenched deep in worship totally forgets mental anxiety, physical diseases and worldly troubles during that time and thus becomes absorbed in God. The devotional music renders unusual help in cultivating concentration of mind, speech and body in spiritual field.

And that is why according to the Jain traditional belief when Rāvaṇa, the king of Laṅkā, went on a pilgrimage to Aṣṭāpada (Kailāsa), his wife, Queen Mandōdarī, performed a devotional dance before the God, Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmā. At that time Rāvaṇa himself played on a lute and as soon as a string of the lute broke, Rāvaṇa pulled out a vein of his leg and tied it in place of the string and kept Mandōdarī's devotional song unbroken. By virtue of this devotion, Rāvaṇa attained the merits of becoming a Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmā in future. It can make a worshipper a Tīrthaṅkara.

The Indian art of dancing is connected with Indian classical music. The ex-actress and present day's Odyssey dancer, Miss Pratimā Gaurī says about the ancient art of dancing :

*" All ancient dances of India are in reality artistic varieties of God's worship, God's prayer. We, Odyssey dancers and dancing girls perform dances to propitiate God Jagannātha. The Kathak mode of dancing is full of Kṛṣṇa's worship. But in Bharatanāṭyam, the first artist of the universe, Śiva is propitiated. The chief aim of our dances is God's pleasure." <sup>33</sup>*

The modern science also supports the description of various potentialities of music, given by ancient spiritual great men such as Indian musicians and sages possessing spiritual insight. May living beings get happiness in this world and the next world and may they attain spiritual heights and welfare of soul through Indian classical music.

References:

1. "Bajū Bāvarā" Saṅgīta Pratibhā ( A musical genius) Author: Vimal Dharmi (Jai Hind, weekly supplement, Date 9-5-1993)
2. Ślōka (verse) No 3, Fifth Prakāśa, Vitarāga Stōtra, compiled by Kalikāla Sarvajña Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī
3. Kalpasūtra, commentary Subōdhikā, second part, p. 66.

4. Jina Saṅgīta Saritā by Muni Śrī Daksavijayji. Introduction by Prof. Laxmichandra Mohanlal Shah p. 9.

5, 6, 7. Ibid p. 10.

8. Dhvanijagat by Dr V.B. Gohel (Uni. Granth Nirman Board, Ahmedabad. p.33.)

9. Amarakōśa First Kāṇḍ, Śabdavarga, verse 1

10. Dhvanijagat by Dr V.B.Gohel p. 34.

11. Ibid p. 35.

12. Vēdanīyakarma Nivīraṇa Pūjā-Dīpaka Pūjā Compiled by Śrī Vīravijayajī Mahārāja.

13. Tattvārtha Sūtra by Umāsvāti, Adhyāya 4, commentary by Śrī Siddhasēna Gaṇi.

14. निर्मल अवधिज्ञाने जाणे, केवली-मन-परिणामो रे । *nirmala avadhijñānē jāṇē, kēvalī-mana-pariṇāmō rē* . (By pure Avadhijñāna i.e. E.S.P. thought of Kevali i.e.omniscient can be known). Vēdanīyakarma Nivīraṇa Pūjā-Dīpaka Pūjā Compiled by Śrī Vīravijayajī Mahārāja.

15. Vaiśvika Cētanā (Coscon) by Lieut. Col C.C.Bakshi (published by Pravin Pustak Bhandar, Rajkot, p. 381).

16. Engrossed in the worship of Kṛṣṇa , Mīrān could digest the poison sent by Rāṇā, her husband.

17. Tattvārtha Sūtra by Umāsvāti , Adhyāya 5, sūtra 24..

18. 'Dhvaninō Alaukika Guṇadharma Varṇa Raṅga' by Urmiben Desai & 'Varṇamālā Anē Mantrōccāraṇaṇuṃ Rahasya' by Ashok Kumar Dutt (Farbus Quarterly Oct-Dec.1992).

19. Times of India 'Sunday Review', September 3, 1995- Vinod Advani.

20. Śrī Anuyōgadvāra sūtra p. 127 commentary.

21, 22, 23. Ibid p. 128.

24, 25. Ibid p. 129.

26. Music Therapy : 'Rāga Rōga Maṭāḍē Chē' by Janardan Dave (Cārē Bāju, April, 15, 1994. p. 16).

27. Jina Saṅgīta Saritā by Muni Śrī Daksavijayaji. Introduction, p. 6.

28. The Turning point by Fritjof Capra (Flamingo, p. 396).
29. Ibid (p. 355).
30. Music Therapy : ' Rāga Rōga Maṭāḍē Chē ' by Janardan Dave (Cārē Bāju, April, 15, 1994. p. 17).
31. Ibid (p. 17, 18).
32. Jina Saṅgīta Saritā by Muni Śrī Daksavijayji. Introduction p. 4 by Prof. Laxmichandra Mohanlal Shah .
- 33 'Dharatīkō Ākāśa Pukārē' by Amin Kureshi, An interview with Pratima Gauri (Sandesh Date 7-7-1991, Sunday ,Weekly supplement page 8,6)



THE EASTERN RELIGIOUS PHILOSOPHIES ARE CONCERNED WITH TIMELESS MYSTICAL KNOWLEDGE, WHICH LIES BEYOND REASONING AND CANNOT BE ADEQUATELY EXPRESSED IN WORDS. THE RELATION OF THIS KNOWLEDGE TO MODERN PHYSICS IS BUT ONE OF ITS MANY ASPECTS AND, LIKE ALL THE OTHERS, IT CANNOT BE DEMONSTRATED CONCLUSIVELY BUT HAS TO BE EXPERIENCED IN A DIRECT INTUITIVE WAY.

FRITJOF CAPRA

---

## 17. Mantra, Yantra And Sound : A Scientific Analysis

**S**amsāra i.e. cosmos and time are both ever-flowing like the current of a river. There is a proverb in English : "We cannot cross the same river twice." Once we have crossed a river, we cannot cross it again. i.e. When we cross the river again, the water is not the same. In this ever changing cosmos, every living being wishes to be happy and no one wishes to be unhappy. Of course, for every man and for the same man at different times, definitions of happiness and unhappiness go on changing. If all these definitions of happiness and unhappiness are to be summed up in a one/single definition, one can say that attainment of what is desired and separation from what is not desired, is happiness; and separation from what is desired and attainment of what is not desired, is unhappiness.

Happiness and unhappiness comes to every soul in consequence of good or bad karmas i.e. deeds done by him previously. Sometimes, worldly happiness may not be happiness in reality and sometimes externally appearing worldly unhappiness may not be unhappiness in reality because there is no difficulty about enduring the unhappiness in the hope and expectation of attaining happiness in future. Really speaking, our state of mind alone is the source of our happiness.

Every man in the world makes efforts to get the peace of mind. Man always goes on making various efforts for it. In their efforts, those who seek the shelter of yogis, accomplished great souls, get with blessings the strength of enduring and reducing mental, physical and worldly troubles.

For destroying our unhappiness and for getting us happiness, ancient sages have taught us many kinds of mantras, mystical diagrams (yantras) and various branches of knowledge (Vidyās). Thus we can reduce or fully eliminate our bad karmas by means of many kinds of mantras (spells), yantras (mystical diagrams), tantras (religious text of mystical formulae for attainment of

superhuman powers), medicines etc. Sometimes in the presence of an auspicious instrumental cause (nimitta) or an auspicious aspiration (bhāva) an inauspicious karma is transformed into an auspicious one.<sup>1</sup>

Of course, it should also be mentioned here that such great men impart such highly important knowledge only to those who deserve. If deserving persons are not there, after the death of those great men, that particular knowledge exists only in the form of legends.

In ancient Indian literature one comes across many traditions about mantras, yantras and tantras and there are also various types of manuscripts about them. Of course, though these manuscripts contain full rites for attainment of success through mantras, yantras and tantras yet one cannot attain success because in these highly confidential rites, one or two links are kept hidden and they are shown only to the disciples or some worthy men. That is the reason why one does not attain desired success even if rites are performed as shown in the books published on mantras, yantras and tantras.

In the introduction to his book entitled "Mantra-Vidyā" Śrī Karanidan Shethia writes about this:

*"The greatest difficulty in literature about mantras is of the key. Ancient experienced sages and monks invented mantras and tantras. But important words from some of them are missing, some of them do not show the rite; and some of them mention but do not show the yantras about them."*<sup>2</sup>

Nearly five years ago, I came across an ancient manuscript in which various prescribed ways of worshipping goddess Padmāvatī were preserved. Various ways were prescribed in each ritual procedure and each one of them found to be incomplete. Of all the five ritual procedures, only one showed its yantra (mystic diagram). The other four did not show the yantra.<sup>3</sup> Later on I got from the collection of ancient manuscripts of my revered Guru, His Holiness Ācārya Śrī Vijay Sūryodayasūrijī, a small manuscript having only two leaves (pages), that prescribes the rite of Padmāvatī-Hrim. I found this rite to be perfect and systematic but it did not contain the yantra. Thus though mantras, yantras and tantras found in ancient manuscripts are true, one cannot attain success through them without guidance of an experienced guru.

One need not, therefore, believe that these mantras are altogether wrong. Really speaking, mantras, yantras and tantras are accompanied by aspirations

of the great men who invented them with a desire to make people happy. The stronger the desire, the greater the power of the mantra and the influence of the yantra. Many factors are responsible for attainment of success through a mantra. Even if one of the factors is ineffective, success cannot be attained through the mantra.

A mantra is a form of sound put into a script by a particular class of great men by combining particular words and letters for a particular purpose and it is supported by a presiding deity. With their extraperceptual knowledge great saints of ancient time could see definite meanings or subjects of their special mantras and that is why Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt who possesses extraperceptual knowledge uses the phrase 'Visionaries of meanings of mantras' for our ancient seers and monks.

Explaining the secret of sound of mantras Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt describes his own experience and says : "While uttering a mantra or the name of Bhagavān or any deity, I see blue and white particles and they give nutrition to a body and along with it the glitter and sharpness of a mass of light of the subtle body rises. I, therefore, realised that the prescription of the Jāpa (repetition) of the name of God and utterance of its mantra are perfectly scientific." <sup>5</sup>

In his book entitled "Vaiśvika Cētanā" (Coscon) Lieut. Col. C.C. Bakshi states about mantras that when it is mentally or vocally pronounced every note, sound or word produces vibrations of a certain definite form. Even while we think, indistinct words/sounds are produced in our mind. Expert Sanskrit grammarians and philosophers call them bursting of sound (Śabda-Sphōṭa)<sup>6</sup> and these letters make a definite kind of impressions on our mind.

Mantras can produce good as well as bad effects. Moreover, desired effect can be produced through mantras on birds, beasts, plants, human beings and presiding deities of the mantras. There are some mantras which cure us of diseases. There are some mantras which protect us. There are some mantras which can be used for subduing or killing some body or for malevolent purposes. In a Kuśaṇḍikā sacrificial rite a man lighted fire only with some mantras and "Raṁ" (ॠ), the mystic mantra of fire.

Talking of mantra-sounds, mantra-letters, yantra and idols, Śrī C.C. Bakshi states that sound of a mantra is unidimensional. (Of course, we cannot

see sounds and that is perhaps the reason why it is unidimensional for us. Yet for those who can see colours of sounds, sound is no doubt tridimensional.) Letters of mantras and diagrams of mantras in the form of yantras are two-dimensional. But idols are three-dimensional.<sup>8</sup>

In my article "Kinds of Jāpa and Their Scientific Importance" I have already given a detailed description of types of Jāpa and their influence, alongwith a scientific analysis.<sup>9</sup> I, therefore, do not discuss them here again.

In ancient, times, perhaps in the times of the battle of Mahābhārata, the science of arms and the mystic science of missiles were used. Here arms are ordinary weapons such as a sword, an arrow etc. while the arms which were hurled with mantras or mystic science were missiles.<sup>10</sup> After killing the enemy, these missiles returned to him who hurled them. Kings, army-commanders and others of those times, also had the mystic knowledge of defeating the missiles.

Thus, it seems that the mystic knowledge of mantras is very antiquarian in the Indian tradition.

Chief among various traditions of mantra, yantra and tantra born and developed only in India are 1. Brahmin (Hindu), 2. Buddhistic and 3. Jain traditions. The Brahmin i.e. Hindu tradition has three subdivisions. 1. Vaiṣṇava 2. Śaiva 3. Śākta.

The Jain tradition of mantras, yantras and tantras is very antiquarian. There is a book authored by Śrī Saṅghadāsa Gaṇi and entitled "Vasudēva Hīndī". It is believed to have been written in the fifth century A.D. According to the reference found in it, when Śrī Ṛṣabhadēva, the first Tīrthāṅkara of this Avasarpīṅkāla time, renounced the world, he distributed his wealth and kingdom to his sons and grandsons and others. Nami and Vinami, his grand sons had been far away. On returning, when they knew all that had happened, they went to Śrī Ṛṣabhadēva to ask for their share. Since Śrī Ṛṣabhadēva was silently meditating, they began to serve him. Once Nāgarāja Dharaṇēndra, (Lord of gods and goddesses of Nāgakumāra type) came to pay obeisance to Śrī Ṛṣabhadēva. Pleased with the service of Nami and Vinami, he said, "Lord Ṛṣabhadēva is a renouncer. He has now nothing to give you. But pleased with your worship of Lord Rasabhadev, I impart to you 48000 mystic kinds of knowledge (Vidyās)". He imparted the mystic knowledge to them, settled cities of Vidyādhara on the north range and the south range of Mt. Vaitāḍhya



and appointed them to rule over the cities.<sup>11</sup> Their tribe came to be called the tribe of Vidyādhara. Among various branches of ancient Jain monks, one is known by the name of Vidyādhara.<sup>12</sup> According to the Kalpasūtra, there is a reference to the branch of Ācārya is Vidyādhari.<sup>13</sup> Thus, according to the Jain tradition, the origin of mystic science or science of mantra can be traced to times earlier than nearly one crore multiplied by one crore i.e. a thousand billion (10<sup>14</sup>) Sāgarōpama years.<sup>14</sup>

In the Jain Āgama tradition, the twelve Aṅga sūtras are regarded to be chief. Among them, Dṛṣṭivāda, the twelfth Aṅga sūtra has special significance. Of course, this Aṅga sūtra is not available today. It is lost. The fourteen pūrvas in them were very important. One of the fourteen pūrvas, was entitled Vidyāpravāda. According to its name, this pūrva is perfectly an inexhaustible treasure of the science of mantra. It was from this pūrva that Ācārya Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmi who has knowledge of all the fourteen pūrvas, extracted the Grahaśānti Stōtra.<sup>15</sup> There have been many powerful Ācāryas succeeding to the holy tradition of disciple of Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīrasvāmi, the twenty-fourth Tīrthaṅkara of Jain tradition. According to Sthavirāvalī, given in the commentary to the Kalpasūtra, Ārya Vajrasvāmi had the mystic knowledge of bodily transformation (Vaikriya labdhi Vidyā) and Ākāśagāminī Vidyā (a knowledge of going from one place to another place through sky i.e. to fly in the sky). There are clear reference to show that Śrī Sthulibhadraji, Śrī Priyagrānthasūrijī, Śrīguptācārya (a Guru of Rōhagupta), Ārya Samitasūrijī and others also knew mantra and tantras.<sup>16</sup>

Moreover, Śrī Vṛddhavādī, Śrī Siddhasēna Divākara, Śrī Mānatuṅgasūrijī, Śrī Nandiṣēṇa, Śrī Mānadēvasūrijī, Śrī Skandilācārya, Śrī Pādāliptasūrijī, Śrī Nāgārjūna, Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī, Śrī Hēmacandrasūrijī, Śrī Jinaprabhasūrijī and many other Ācāryas are famous as experts in the science of mantra.

When we think of the mantra literature of the Jain tradition, we are reminded of Namaskāra Mahāmantra Kalpa, Lōgassa Kalpa, Namutthūṇaṃ Kalpa, Uvasaggaharaṃ Stōtra Kalpa, Hrīkāra Kalpa, Vardhamānavidyā Kalpa, Rṣimaṇḍala Kalpa, Santikaraṃ Stōtra Kalpa, Tijayapahutta Stōtra Kalpa, Bhaktāmara Kalpa, Kalyāṇamandira Kalpa which belong to very famous and customary, literature. Propitiation of Sūrimantra is regarded to be chief and compulsory duty for Jainācāryas. By Sūrimantra chiefly Śrī Gautamasvāmi, the first disciple of 24th Tīrthaṅkara Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmi, who

possesses infinite achievements (Ananta-labdhi i.e. infinite extra-ordinary powers), is propitiated. Śrī Gautamasvāmi and all other Gaṇadharas i.e. main disciples of Tīrthaṅkaras, the authors of the twelve Aṅga sūtras and all holy Ācāryas, well-versed in fourteen pūrvas, are called Śrutakēvalīs. One of their epithets is 'Savvakakhara Sannīvāiṇaṃ' i.e. He who knows all Vidyās (mystic sciences) composed of all various kinds of combinations of all letters."<sup>17</sup>

Besides, Śrī Gautamasvāmi, Sarasvatī, the presiding goddess of all shastras, the knowledge obtained through all kinds of letters, Śrī Tribhuvanasvāminī Dēvī, goddess, predominating influence on all the three fold world and lives on Mt. Maṇuṣōttara, Laxmi Dēvī (Śrīdēvī) goddess of wealth, Śrī Yakṣarāja Gaṇipīṭaka, the god of the corpus of twelve Aṅga sūtras, Jain religious texts, presiding gods and goddesses of the dispensation of the twenty-four Tīrthaṅkaras i.e. Yakṣas and Yakṣiṇīs, Sixty four Indras, the governor of nine treasures, sixteen Vidyādēvīs, i.e. goddesses of different types of mystic science, nine planets etc. are also propitiated.<sup>18</sup>

There is no doubt that those who perform this propitiation become great and powerful. Besides, since Ācāryas helm the affairs of the Jainism they need to acquire the strength to ward off the calamities that may be fall the Jain dispensation. Through propitiation of mantras, they get the support and presence of gods.

In the present day society, there is a class of people who remain engaged in uttering mantras, yantras and tantras and they spread blind faith to serve their own interest. There is another class of people who believes that mantra, yantras are absolutely false. There are many people who do not understand the science of mantra. They jest and joke and say that it is full of rumours and misapprehensions. They do not know the power of words/sounds. They, therefore, believe that those who believe in the science of mantra are foolish and backward and deride them. Both these classes of people hold that their beliefs are true. Of course, some change has come of late. Those who believed mantras, yantras and tantras to be absolutely false, slowly but certainly accept mantras, yantras and tantras.

Really speaking, their beliefs are based on only scientific proofs of mantras, yantras and tantras. Currently, a special type of research work on mantras, yantras and tantras is in progress in the western countries. The

secrets of mantras, yantras and tantras are presented in scientific ways through various books.

A yantra is a graphic representation of sounds of words made of combinations of letters of a mantra.<sup>19</sup> Recently I came across a book 'Yantra' published from England. A scientist named Ronald Nameth passed the sounds of the Śrī Sukta mantra with the help of a scientific instrument through the electronic vibration filed and the sounds were transformed into diagram of the Śrīyantra. A permanent picture of this is given in the book.<sup>20</sup>

This means that the Śrīyantra is nothing but a figure form i.e. diagram of the sounds of Śrīsukta. As sounds are printed on a gramophone record or a magnetic tape, so any mantra, if it is passed through the above-mentioned instrument can be transformed into a diagram. There are some people who believe that mantras can be transformed back from their diagrams i.e. yantras, as sounds can be transformed back from a gramophone record or a magnetic tape. Moreover, as modern science transforms energy into material particles(matter) and matter into energy, so yantras i.e. mystic diagrams can be transformed into mantras and mantras can be transformed into yantras. Therefore, yantras and mantras can be replaced by each other.<sup>21</sup>

Great sages of ancient times could, perhaps, see with their supernatural vision, the diagrams of mantras that they gratified with their recitation of mantras, the presiding deities, perhaps, showed them the diagram of the corresponding mantras. Later on, the great mantra-reciters, perhaps, draw the figures of yantras of the corresponding mantras on barks of birch trees or palm-leaves with writing materials. Perhaps through this tradition the diagrams of yantras have come to us.

Really speaking, a yantra is one kind of combination of various geometrical figures. As mantras are made of combinations of different consonants and vowels, so various yantras are made of combinations of geometrical figures of different types. Every yantra has its presiding god or goddess. As the form or the name of the god or goddess changes, the mantra and the yantra also change. All these mantras and yantras are in the form of matter i.e. pudgala and that is why they are inert and not alive. i.e. having no desired effect.<sup>22</sup> There are special processes of making them vital or effective. Yantras can be made vital through their original mantras.<sup>23</sup> In order to make mantras alive, the

letters of sanskrit alphabet are putting on the both sides of the mantras and when the mantra is recited 108 time, it becomes invested with life. Other various methods for making mantras vital, are also given in the text-books on mantras and tantras.<sup>24</sup>

Yantras are invested with effectiveness and idols of God and of gods and goddess are invested with life. This rite can be performed with the best and special type of mantras only by competent Ācāryas. Through special waves produced by mantra sounds Ācāryas transplants his vital elements into the idol only for a few moments. Then the idol does not remain only a piece of stone but becomes actual God or god or goddess because the sound-waves of the mantras make the archetypal space of idol, an inexhaustible treasure of energy. Then those who worship the idol can commune with Paramātmā, the Supreme being or god or goddess.

The Jain tradition believes that an idol which is more than a hundred years old has inconceivable power because since it was worshipped by very many spiritual men with various mantras and pious sentiments during the period of more than a hundred years, the idol was filled by sound-waves of the mantras with an inexhaustible treasure of energy which uplifts the spiritual man and his desires are fulfilled. The same is in case of yantras. If on an auspicious day, a yantra is drawn according to the prescribed rite and with good intentions and if it is invested with effectiveness by a great sage, who has an expert knowledge of yantra, mantras and tantras, it soon gives a great fruit i.e. success because it is accompanied by the great sage's desire of doing good to people.

Modern research scholars believe that the yantra is archetypal space and the mantra is a pious sound. They also believe that the yantra and the mantra are not different. They believe that if the yantra is a body of the mantra, the mantra is the soul of the yantra.<sup>25</sup> Besides, according to the Indian tradition, a yantra is a place where gods and goddesses reside in a subtle way. Especially among chief seats of main goddesses Āmbikā, Durgā, Kālī, Mahākālī and others, yantras of the goddesses are more highly esteemed than idols of the goddesses.

These symbols in the form of yantras are an inexhaustible treasure of psychic energy. These yantras find out our missing element and supply it. Thus they make our life joyful, energetic and meaningful.

Generally two types of yantras are found in the present times. Yantras are always a combination of diagrams. But letters of mantras are also written in them. But as shown above, diagrams of yantras are nothing but a visible form of letters of mantras. In order to help a common man to know which mantra letters are visibly represented by a particular yantra, the learned sages and monks also write mantra-letters in yantras. That is the reason why we find, yantras along with mantras simultaneously. While in some yantras there are numbers written in squares or various geometrical diagrams. There are various types of yantras related to these numbers, e.g. the yantra of fifteen, the yantra of twenty, the yantra of thirty four, the yantra of sixty five, the yantra of one hundred seventy. In the yantra of fifteen, numbers from one to nine are used and they are so arranged that each set of three numbers added vertically, horizontally or transversely, gives a total of fifteen. That is why they are called yantras of fifteen.

Books on mantras and yantras show four varieties of yantras of fifteen. Each variety of these yantras has different elements, colours and effects. Besides, when those yantras are written on a piece of paper or on a bark of the birch tree with special kind of materials, if the order of writing numbers in the same variety of yantras is different, different effects are produced.<sup>26</sup>

8	1	6	This yantra of fifteen is known by the technical Brahmin
3	5	7	
4	9	2	

4	3	8	This yantra of fifteen is known by the technical term Kṣatriya
9	5	1	
2	7	6	

2	9	4	This yantra of fifteen is known by the technical term Vaiśya
7	5	3	
6	1	8	

6	7	2	This yantra of fifteen is known by the technical term Śūdra
1	5	9	
8	3	4	

Such other yantras are made in respect of the Sun, the Moon, the Mars and other planets in order to propitiate them. The yantra for the sun is a yantra of fifteen. It is different from all the four yantras shown above. For the moon, there is a yantra of eighteen. For the Mars, there is a yantra of twenty-one.

The Sun Yantra

6	1	8
7	5	3
2	9	4

The Moon Yantra

7	2	9
8	6	4
3	10	5

The Mars Yantra

8	3	10
9	7	5
4	11	6

Similarly, there are yantras for other planets, too.<sup>27</sup> Besides, there are also other ways of making yantras of fifteen. But each of them gives different success and effects. And it is a subject for research.

Thus various kinds of numerical symbols i.e. yantras have various kinds of mystic energy or powers.

In the Jain Tradition also, both the types of yantras are found. Among yantras related to mantras, there are many kinds of yantras such as Śrī Siddhacakra Mahāyantra, Śrī Rṣiṃaṇḍala Yantra, Śrī Vardhamānavidyā Yantra, Śrī Sūrimantra Yantra, Śrī Padmāvatī Yantra, Śrī Vairōṭyādēvī Yantra, Śrī Ghaṇṭākara Mahāvīra Yantra, Śrī Gautamasvāmi Yantra, Śrī Labdhipada Yantra, Śrī Māṇibhadradēva Yantra, etc. Numerical yantras are also found in the Jain tradition. The mostly found yantras of this type are the yantra of one hundred-seventy i.e. Sarvatōbhadrā Yantra concern with Śrī Tijaypahutta Stōtra, the yantra of sixty five concern with twenty-four Tīrthaṅkaras, and the yantra of fifteen concern with Navapada etc.

Sometimes it happens that an author or a research scholar who is not familiar with sectarian traditions of mantras and yantras, does not properly understand the yantras, the letters written in the yantras and the methods of the yantras e.g. In the book entitled "Yantra", the Labdhipada yantra related to the Sūrimantra, is published. There the mantras of the Labdhipadas are given in the Prakrit language. Moreover, the letters of each pada are given in the reserve order. e.g. The pada ॐ नमो जिणाणं (OM namō jiṇāṇaṃ 1) is written as '1. ṇaṃ ṇā ji mō na OM'. णं णा जि मो न ॐ All these padas are found in the Sūrimantra. Of course, this yantra was drawn at least 200 or 250 years ago. These yantras sometime contain the name of one who invests them with effectiveness or the name of one for whom it is drawn. One finds the name कल्याणदास (Kalyāṇadāśa) inserted in the above mentioned yantra. On the basis of the name, the whole yantra is named Kalyāṇacakra (कल्याणचक्र), the wheel of fortune.<sup>28</sup> But this is improper.

In the 'Sūrimantra Kalpa-samuccaya' this yantra is given in a new form. The letters are written there in the original-actual order but not in reverse order as shown in above-mentioned yantra.<sup>29</sup>

There are also two ways of reciting mantras. 1. pūrvānupūrvī. i.e. Mantras are recited according to the order in which padas or letters of the mantra are given. 2. paścānupūrvī. i.e. Mantras are recited in the reverse order of padas or letters of the mantra. Both these types of recitation of mantras give different types of result. Generally, the pūrvānupūrvī recitation of mantras gives spiritual success and paścānupūrvī recitation of mantras gives worldly or material success.

In modern science, there is a branch of telepathic science. Likewise in therapeutics, a Bengali homeopathic doctor Śrī Binitosh Bhattācārya has developed the teletherapy. In this therapy he uses medicines but along with medicines he also uses such mantras and yantras as shown above. The mantras and yantras are arranged on a special type of instruments and a special type of vibrations are produced from them. With the help of a photo or the name of the patient arranged in front of the vibrations, they are invisibly directed towards the patient. Surprising improvements in patients have been detected as a result of using this therapy.

Yantras are symbolic marks. In different traditions, these symbolic marks i.e. diagrams are interpreted in different ways. The reason for this is the knowledge or experience that they have gained. e.g. If a physicist is asked about 'energy', he will introduce 'energy' as an inherent active force of matter. If a psychologist is asked about it, he will introduce energy as 'mind' producing effect on the brain through an external factor/a stimulant. If a spiritual sage/yogi is asked about it, he will say that realization of the Supreme Brahmā i.e. universal consciousness (Vaiśvika Cētanā), through Yōga, is an energy.

Thus, we all who possess very little knowledge and knowledge-obscuring karmas are not fully removed from whose souls, interpret the symbols of tantras and yantras according to our intellectual level. Only the Omniscient great men can know the full and real significance of the symbols. Omniscient great men clearly know all modifications of all substances and all living organisms related to the past, the future and the present tenses in the whole

hand.<sup>30</sup> For them, the past tense and the future tense do not exist at all. All is in the present tense. If omniscience is to be described in a single sentence in the modern scientific english terminology, one can say that "Omniscience is nothing but the hologramic effect or power of the soul regarding to time, space, matter and all souls". Only those who have the supreme knowledge i.e. omniscience, know the full significance of symbolic marks of these yantras. Of various kinds of yantras, it is the Śrīyantra which is most discussed by common as well as learned people and experts in sciences of mantra and tantra.

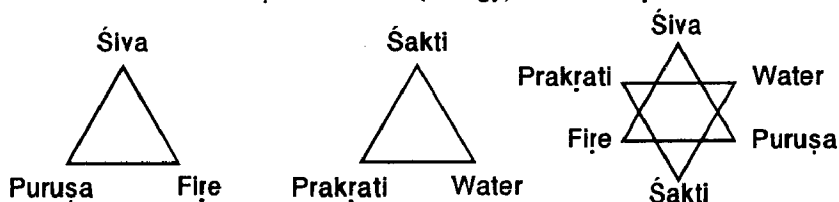
Śrīyantra is regarded as a very mysterious treasure of occult lore. Foreign scientists are doing their best to find out the mystery of this yantra and they are comparing the Śrīyantra with the principles of science and of spirituality. A point is shown in the centre of the Śrīyantra. It is called Mahābindu. According to the vedic tradition, it is regarded as a symbol of the origin of the universe and it is also called zero (Śūnya). It is also divided by the universal impulse i.e. The seed-energy of Śiva rises from deep sleep and becomes active.

When the point is divided, pairs (Visargamaṇḍala) are created. They are known as pairs Śiva-Śakti, fire-water or Puruṣa-Prakṛti.



The original triangle represents the universe trio. It is the origin of all objects.

The division or bisection and development of the original triangle in the form of Śiva - Fire-Puruṣa and Śakti (energy)-water-Prakṛti.<sup>31</sup>



The basic subtle elements of the mind māyā (illusion), Kalā (art), Vidyā (knowledge), rāga (attachment), kāla (time), niyati (destiny) - are created by combinations of Śiva and Śakti or fire and water or Puruṣa and Prakṛti.



Physical elements are created by combination of Puruṣa and Prakṛti - 1. Intellect 2. Pride and 3. the thinking faculty (the mind) are created from Sattvaguṇa (the first or highest of the three constituent qualities of nature). The five sense organs (of touch, taste, smell, sight and hearing), the five organs of body (hands, legs, mouth, abdomen and the reproductive organ) are created from rajōguṇa (the second of the three constituent qualities of nature). The gross as well as the subtle earth, water, fire, wind and space are created from tamōguṇa (the third of the three constituent qualities of nature.)<sup>32</sup>

This interpretation is according to the vaidic tradition.

Experts on science of mantra and yantra, the worshippers of mother goddesses, say that Śrīyantra is the abode of goddesses and accomplishments (Śaktis). These accomplishments are eight -1. aṇimā (the super human power of making a very minute form), 2. mahimā (the super human power which enables one to enlarge one's size maximum), 3. laghimā (the super human power which enables one to modify a very light form), 4. garimā (the super human power which enables one to modify a very heavy form), 5. prāpti (the super human power of touching the mountain-peak with one's finger), 6. isitva (the super human power of sovereignty) 7. prākāmya (the super human power of obtaining all desired things) and 8. vaśitva (the super human power of bringing all under one's control). The goddesses are eight-Brāhmī, Māhēśvarī, Vaiṣṇavī, Cāmuṇḍā, Mahālakṣmī etc. and they reside in the eight triangles. This circle of eight triangle is called Sarvarōgahara Cakra. It is this Śrīyantra which they know by the name of the yantra of the goddess Tripurāsundarī.

The ten triangles of the Sarvarakṣākāra cakra of the second inner circle indicate the ten Mahāvidyās (great branches of knowledge). The ten triangles of the Sarvārthasādhaka cakra of the inner third circle are the ten prāṇas (vital elements). The circle of fourteen triangles on the outer most side is called the Sarvasaubhāgyadāyaka cakra. Mahātripurāsundarī or Mahālakṣmī resides in the point in the triangle in the centre of the Śrīyantra.<sup>33</sup>

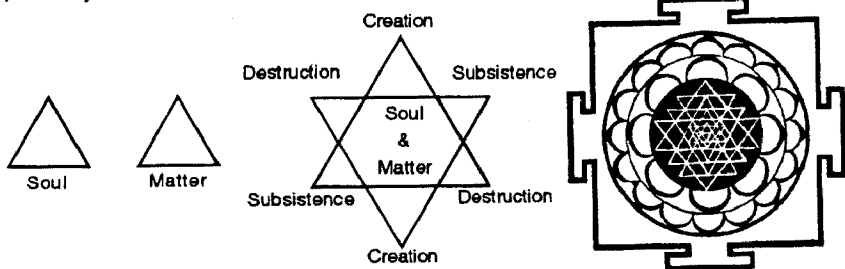
Experts on yoga science compare Śrīyantra with the six cakras contained in our vital body namely Mūlādhāra cakra, Svādhiṣṭhāna cakra, Maṇipura cakra, Anāhata cakra, Viśuddhi cakra and Ājñā cakra. While Mahābindu is compared with Sahasrāra cakra which is on our head and already outside the physical body.<sup>34</sup>

These symbolic marks can be linked with Jain philosophy as under :



The point or the Mahābindu indicates the pure soul or the pure matter. Of course, the pure soul is colourless and shapeless, while pure matter i.e. pudgala has a shape and it also has a colour, a smell, a taste, and a touch. But as far as energy is concerned, both are equal. The pure soul possesses infinite energy and pure matter also possesses infinite energy. The infinite energy of the soul is self-directed while infinite energy of the matter is directed by other forces.

A pair of Mahābindus is formed when the soul and the matter are shown separately.



The soul and the matter have three phases each : to be created, to be destroyed and to remain stable as original element. In Jain terminology, this is called Tripadi : 1. uppannē i vā ( उप्पन्ने इ वा ) 2. vīgamē i vā ( विगमे इ वा ) 3. dhuvē i vā ( ध्रुवे इ वा ) and it is indicated by the three sides of the triangle. Every object in the world has these three phases or stages. The Vaidic tradition also believes in creation, subsistence and destruction of the world. Brahmā , Viṣṇu, Mahēśa are regarded as gods of creation, subsistence and destruction respectively. The Jain tradition does not believe in the creation of the whole universe but it believes in various modifications of various elements like soul and matter. It believes that the universe as a whole is beginningless and endless

According to the Jain philosophical belief, the combination of the pure soul with a pudgal i.e. matter is never possible. But it is believed that it is since beginningless time that the soul is associated with pudgala i.e. matter. All

objects of the universe are originated and destroyed only as a result of this beginningless association.

Karmas are paudgalic (material) and through karman Vargaṇā, matter is transformed into the eight types of karma. The eight types of karmas are 1. Jñānāvaraṇīya, 2. Darśanāvaraṇīya, 3. Vēdanīya, 4. Mōhaniya, 5. Āyuṣya, 6. Nāma, 7. Gōtra and 8. Antarāya.<sup>36</sup> They are indicated by the eight triangles of the first circle around the pudgala triangle of the Śrīyantra. Ten types of Sañjñā (inclinations) are produced in the soul accumulating the eight types of karma. The ten types of instincts are - 1. Āhāra (nourishment), 2. Bhaya (fear), 3. Maithuna (sex), 4. Parigraha (attachment), 5. Krōdha (anger), 6. Māna (pride), 7. Māyā (deceit), 8. Lōbha (greed), 9. Ōgha Sañjñā (common sense), 10. Lōka Sañjñā<sup>36</sup> (inclination for Saṃsāra). They are indicated by the ten triangles of the second circle near the eight triangles of the first circle. As a result of these inclinations, a Jīva (the soul with karma) gets the ten vital elements; the five sense organs, the three powers/energies namely manas i.e. the mind, vacana i.e. the speech, kāyā, i.e. the body, breathing i.e. respiratory system and life-span.<sup>37</sup> They are indicated by the ten triangles of the third circle. Saṃsāri Jīva i.e. the soul with karma possesses these ten vital elements. The souls with karma are of fourteen categories.<sup>38</sup> All these fourteen categories of Jīvas are indicated by the fourteen triangles of the fourth circle. All the souls except pure souls, of the whole universe belong to these fourteen categories of Jīvas.

Around this, there is a circle representing eight petals of a lotus. Anger, pride, deceit and greed which were previously introduced as instincts (Sañjñās) of the soul act here as deadly enemies of soul. These four added to the four namely attachment, aversion, infatuation and ignorance, make a group of eight. All these together are great enemies of all the fourteen categories of Jīvas i.e. all the Jīvas of the whole universe. All these eight obstruct spiritual development of the soul. In order to conquer them, one should first of all become introvert, gain knowledge and remove ignorance. In order to do so, it is necessary to concentrate on the 16 vowels namely अ आ इ ई उ ऊ ऋ ॠ लृ ए ऐ ओ औ अं अः (a ā i ī u ū ṛ ṛ ḷ ē ai ō au aṃ aḥ) which are symbolic of the letters of the Sanskrit alphabet or Dēvanāgarī script. Along with these sixteen vowels, the thirty-three consonants are also concentrated on. This is indicated by the circle of the sixteen petals of the lotus.

By concentrating on the letters of the Sanskrit alphabet, one shakes of Jñānāvaraṇīya karmas and attains omniscience and its light, crossing the boundaries of the universe beyond innumerable islands and oceans that are in the universe, reaches even at the portion above the universe i.e. beyond the universe called alōka. The circular bangle-shaped figures are symbols of the innumerable islands and oceans. Through the gates shown on all the four sides of the shape of Lōka (universe) in the square form, it is suggested that the illumination of omniscience spreads even towards Alōka.

Thus the Śrīyantra also contains the Jain philosophy and as shown above, every one who engages in contemplation and concentration, destroys his inauspicious karmas and along with spiritual prosperity, he gains happiness and wealth in this world and next world or birth and the success that he desires.

The ancient literature shows mantras meant for propitiation of hundreds of various gods and goddesses of the Indian tradition as well as the Jain tradition. If we get a tonoscope or a modern scientific instrument with an electronic vibration field and a qualified research-scholar to operate it we can get the real form of yantras of all mantras. And that will open a new horizon or field for research work in the science of mantras.

Thus, yantras, mantras and tantras are a wonderful heritage of our ancient knowledge. Moreover, even from the view point of modern science, they produce wonderful and distinct effects not only on human beings and the living world but also on lifeless matter. Let us, therefore, hope and wish that intelligent research-scholars and scientists will do more dependable and experimental research work and disclose to the world more secrets of yantras, mantras and tantras.

Date : 3rd November, 1996, Bhavnagar.

#### References :

1. See. 'Saṅkramaṇa karana' in the book 'Karmaprakṛti'.
2. 'Mantra-Vidyā' by Karanidan Sethia, Introduction, p.20.
3. 'Acintya Cintāmaṇi Bhagavatī Padmāvatī,' Ed. Nandlal Devluk, Arihant Prakashan, Bhavnagar, p.361-386.
4. 'Jainism : Through Science' (Gujarati section) by Muni Nandighoshvijay (Śrī

Mahāvīra Jain Vidyālaya, Bombay-400 036), p.45

5. "The significance of the alphabet and utterance of mantras" by Ashok Kumar Dutt, Forbus Quarterly No.4, October-December, 1992. p. 279

6. The mantras are also intimately associated with the theory of eternal word. Sphōṭavāda expounded by the philosophers of Sanskrit grammar, who traced the gem of speech or words back to divine source. (an imperishable unit of speech : Sphōṭa also known as Vāk or Praṇava or Śabda-Brahma)- "Yantra" by Madhu Khanna, p.41.

7. Vaiśvika Cētanā (Coscon) by Lieut. Col. C. C. Baksi, p.95

8. Ibidem, p. 97

9. "Jainism : Through Science" (Gujarati section) by Muni Nandighoshvijay (Śrī Mahāvīra Jain Vidyālaya, Bombay-400 036), p. 123-126.

10. (Astra-mantra अस्त्र मन्त्र) - Mantra by which a missile is consecrated before it is thrown. (The Standard Sanskrit-English Dictionary, p. 88).

11. "Mantra-Vidyā" by Karanidan Sethia, Introduction, p.12-13.

12. Ibidem. Introduction p.13.

13. थेरेहिंतो णं विज्जाहर गोवालेहिंतो कासवगुत्तेहिंतो इत्थ णं विज्जाहरी साहा निग्गया  
*thērēhintō ṇaṃ vijjāhara gōvālēhintō kāsavaguttēhintō ittha ṇaṃ vijjāhari*  
*sāhā niggayā* (Śrī Kalpasūtra, Eighth part, Sthavirāvalī), p.510.

14. Innumerable years make a palyōpama.  $10 \times 1$  crore  $\times 1$  crore i.e.  $10^{15}$  palyōpamas make a Sāgarōpama. One kōḍākōḍī Sāgarōpamas equal  $10^{14}$  Sāgarōpamas or  $10^{29}$  palyōpama years.

15. भद्रबाहुरुवाचैवं पञ्चमः श्रुतकेवली । विद्याप्रवादतः पूर्वार्द्धं ग्रहशान्तिरुदीरिता ॥

*bhadrabāhuru vācāivaṃ pañcamah śrutakēvalī .*

*vidyāpravādataḥ pūrvāḍ grahaśāntirudīritā ..* (Grahaśānti Stōtra)

16. Kalpasūtra, eighth part, Sthavirāvalī, Subōdhikā Vṛtti.

17. समणस्स णं भगवओ महावीरस्स तिन्नि सया चउदसपुव्वीणं अजिणाणं जिणसंकासाणं सव्वक्खरसन्निवाइणं जिणो विव अवितहं वागरमाणाणं उक्कोसिया चउदसपुव्वीणं समणसंपया हुत्था ।

*samaṇassa ṇaṃ bhagavaō mahāvīrassatinnisayā cauddasapuvvīṇaṃ ajiṇāṇaṃ*  
*jiṇasaṅkāsaṇaṃ savvakharasannivāiṇaṃ jiṇō viva avitahaṃ vāgaramāṇāṇaṃ*  
*ukkōsiyā cauddasapuvvīṇaṃ samaṇasampayā hutthā .* (Śrī Kalpasūtra, Sixth Part, sūtra-138).

18. वाणी तिहुअणसामिणी सिरि देवी जक्खराय गणिपिडगा ।  
गह दिसिपाल सुरिंदा सयावि रक्खन्तु जिणभत्ते ॥  
*vāṇī tihuaṇasāmiṇī siri dēvī jakkharāya gaṇipidaḡā .*  
*gaha disipāla surindā sayāvi rakkhantu jinaḡabhattē ..*  
( Santikaraṃ Stōtra, Gāthā-4).

19. 'Yantra' by Madhu Khanna p.6.

20. Ibidem. p.116

21. Mantra and Yantra are parallel to each other and in some cases may be interchangeable ('Yantra' by Madhu Khanna p.38)

22. चैतन्यरहिता मन्त्राः, प्रोक्ता वर्णास्तु केवलम् ।

*caitanyaṛahitā mantrāḥ, prōktā varṇāstu kēvalam .*

('Agocar Visva' by Daves̄h Mehta, Gujarat Samachar, 13th Oct., 1996, p.6)

23. 'Yantra' by Madhu Khanna p.6

24. Mantra-Tantra-Yantra Mahāsamuccaya (Published by Gajanan Pustakalaya, Surat, p.15)

25. Yantra and mantra present the union of archetypal space and sacred sound. Each is inseparable from the other. Mantra is the soul and yantra is the body of subtle sound.  
( 'Yantra' by Madhu Khanna P.44)

26. 'MantraVidyā' by Karanidan Sethia, 'YantraVidyā' Khand, p.18, 19, 20  
Mantra-tantra-yantra Mahāsamuccaya, p.320, 321, 322.

27. 'MantraVidyā' - 'YantraVidyā' Khand, p.31.

28. 'Yantra' by Madhu Khanna, p.48.

29. 'Sūrimantra kalpa samuccaya' part-II, p.360-361.

(Ed. Pūjya Muni Śrī Jambūvijayajī Mahārāja)

30. करामलकवद् विश्वं, कलयन् केवलश्रिया ।

*karāmalakavad viśvaṃ, kalayan kēvalaśriyā .*

(Śrī SaKalā rhat Stōtra - verse - 11 by Śrī Hemacandrasūrijī)

31. 'Yantraraj : Śrīyantra' by Pankaj Dixit (Swagat Sept., 1995, p.52)

32. 'Yantra' by Madhu Khanna, p.72 & 74.

33. 'Yantraraj : Śrīyantra' by Pankaj Dixit (Swagat, Sept., 1995, p.52, 53).

34. Ibidem, p.53.

35. इह नाण-दंसणावरण-वेय-मोहाउ-नाम-गोआणि । विग्घं च.....॥३८॥

*iha nāṇa-damsaṇāvarana-vēya-mōhāu-nāma-gōāṇi .*

*viggham ca.....38.. (Navatattva, Verse-38).*

36. यतः प्रज्ञापनायां दश संज्ञाः । ताश्चेमाः - कइणं भंते ! सण्णाओ पण्णत्ताओ ? गोयमा ! दस सण्णाओ पण्णत्ताओ, तं जहा - आहारसण्णा, भयसण्णा, मेहुणसण्णा, परिग्गहसण्णा, कोहसण्णा, माणसण्णा, मायासण्णा, लोहसण्णा, ओहसण्णा, लोगसण्णा ॥

*yataḥ prajñāpanāyāṃ daśa saññāḥ . tāścēmāḥ - kainaṃ bhantē ! saṇṇāō paṇṇattāō ? gōyamā ! dasa saṇṇāō paṇṇattāō, taṃ jahā - āhārasaṇṇā, bhayasaṇṇā, mēhuṇasaṇṇā, pariggahasaṇṇā, kōhasaṇṇā, māṇasaṇṇā, māyāsaṇṇā, lōhasaṇṇā, ōhasaṇṇā, lōgasanaṇṇā ..*

(Ācārāṅga Tīkā, First Part, First Chapter, First Sub-chapter).

37. दसहा जिआण पाणा इंदिय ५ उसास १ आउ १ बलरुवा ३ ॥

*dasahā jīāṇa pāṇā iṇḍiya 5 usāsa 1 āu 1 balaruvā 3 ..*

(Jīva -vicāra prakaraṇa, Verse-42).

38. एगिंदिय सुहुमियरा, सन्नियर पणिंदिया य सबित्तिचउ ।

अपज्जत्ता पज्जत्ता कमेण चउदस जियट्ठाणा ॥

*ēgindiya suhumiyarā, sanniyara paṇindiyā ya sabitticau .*

*apajjattā pajjattā kamēṇa cauddasa jiyattṭhāṇā .. (Navatattva, verse-4).*

1. Sūkṣma Aparyāptā ĒKēndriya 2. Sūkṣma Paryāptā ĒKēndriya 3. Bādara Aparyāptā ĒKēndriya 4. Bādara Paryāptā ĒKēndriya 5. Aparyāptā Dvīndriya 6. Paryāptā Dvīndriya 7. Aparyāptā Trīndriya 8. Paryāptā Trīndriya 9. Aparyāptā Caturindriya 10. Paryāptā Caturindriya 11. Asamjñī Aparyāptā Pañcēndriya 12. Samjñī Aparyāptā Pañcēndriya 13. Asamjñī Paryāptā Pañcēndriya 14. Samjñī Paryāptā Pañcēndriya

These are fourteen types i.e. species of living beings.



---

---

## 18. Two Great Scientists : One From Eastern India And One From Western India

**T**his is what happened long ago, a Professor of Gujarat College of Ahmedabad, happened to go to the intermediate class to give a lecture. He looked at the blackboard and loudly read what was written on it : "It is trousers that the professor wears." And then, looking at the students, he added, " If you wish, I will come from tomorrow onwards without wearing trousers." Hearing this , the class burst into a loud laughter.

This plain, simple and straight forward man with interesting nature was none else than the highly intellectual, extraordinary mathematician, Dr P. C. Vaidya.

Recently, at 9-30 a.m. on October 24, 1995, a rare and unusual astronomical event happened in India. It was a total solar eclipse - an event that in the day-light, gave the evening experience. The time of the total solar eclipse was at the most only one minute and thirty-eight seconds but the scientists of India and other countries had to make the best use of the little time. This renowned mathematician gave guidance about the principles for the experiments to be made during the one and a half minutes.

What made Dr Vaidya famous was his research work on Einstein's general theory of relativity. Of Indian scientists, only two were directly connected with Einstein for research work. One was Dr Satyendranath Bose who was every inch a Bengali and the other was Dr P. C. Vaidya who besides being every inch a Gujarati, was totally devoted to the Gandhian thought. Today we shall talk about research work of two pre-eminent scientists from two ends of India, the eastern end and the western end.

### *Dr Satyendranath Bose*

During the period from 1905 A.D. to 1920 A.D., Einstein was renowned as a world famous scientist and scientists all over the world were impressed by his inventive and creative genius. Meanwhile, Dr Satyendranath Bose, a Bengali professor of India, came in contact with him. Both these scientists



were very fond of music. Einstein himself used to play on the violin and Bose was fond of classical music. Bose was ambitious to do research work in physics in collaboration with Einstein but this dream of him was never realized. Still however, the present-day Bose - Einstein statistics, is a result of his correspondence with Einstein. In the correspondence he addressed Einstein as his guru according to the ancient Indian tradition. He met Einstein in October 1925 A.D. Einstein's approval of his research work as a beginner, made Bose famous all over the world. Bose was no doubt a great scientist of this century. Through his important research works he made revolutionary changes in quantum statistics. In 1900 A.D. Max Planck proposed a new revolutionary hypothesis regarding radiating energy of completely black body lying in a closed container. Of course, in his new equation,  $E = h\nu$ , Max Planck regarded light particles / photons as electromagnetic waves. Max Planck(1900), Peter Debye(1910) and Einstein (1917) -- all the three used the classical idea of electromagnetic waves directly or indirectly in explaining the formula for the energy in the radiation from a black body. All these three were faced with some kind of difficulties which they had never been able to solve.

The first and the most famous of Bose's papers (1924 A.D.) was a four-page long paper entitled "Planck's law and the light quantum hypothesis". This research paper marks the beginning of the quantum statistics in the modern physics. When Bose totally abandoned Planck's wave and aspects of photons and challenged the classical statistical mechanics, he was only 30 years old. Bose submitted a paper on this work to the Philosophical Magazine. Six months latter, the paper was rejected because of the negative recommendation by the referee. On June 4, 1924, Bose then sent the rejected manuscript along with a handwritten cover letter to Einstein in Germany. Bose stated in his letter that " I regard the paper as an important contribution and I will have it published." Einstein was very much impressed with the derivation of Max Planck's formula presented by Bose treated photons as particles and not as waves. The derivation was totally regardless of the wave form of photons. Still however he regarded photon particles as massless. Einstein himself translated Bose's research paper into German and got it published in the 1924 August issue of a German magazine. To this article Einstein added the following comment : " Bose's derivation of Planck's formula appears to me an important step forward. The method used here gives also

the quantum theory of an ideal gas, as I shall show elsewhere." Dr S.N. Bose was the first mathematician to put quantum statistics logically in formulae.

$$E(\nu)d\nu = \frac{8\pi\nu^2}{c^3} \cdot \frac{h\nu}{\left[\exp\left(\frac{h\nu}{KT}\right) - 1\right]} \cdot d\nu$$

This is the world-famous radiation equation of Max Planck. At the experimental level, it has been proved fully true. In explaining this equation, several scientists accepted radiation in the wave form but in deriving this formula Bose accepted radiation in the form of electromagnetic particles. It was his own original achievement.

It was a fortunate coincidence that Bose discovered his quantum statistics when de Broglie was developing theory of wave-particle duality of matter. Since this discovery was derived from the wave form of particles, it may well be predicted that the Bose would have certainly discovered the wave form of electrons if de Broglie had not done so in 1924.

Einstein was the first scientist who fairly well understood Bose's statistics. He also used Bose's statistics in the quantum theory of an ideal gases. He showed that Bose's statistics is not confined only to photon particles but it also applies to gases and other material particles. This statistics developed by Einstein is known ever today in the world of science as Bose-Einstein statistics.

In late thirties and early forties of the nineteenth century, Bose participated in the freedom movement of India. Bose believed that if knowledge of science and technology is to be disseminated to the common man, it should be imparted through the mother tongue. For this purpose he established "Bangiya Bignan Parishad."

In 1962 Bose visited Japan to attend a conference on science and philosophy. This conference was held in sad memory of the dropping of the atom-bombs over Hiroshima and Nagasaki in August 1945 A. D. During this visit to Japan, he was very much impressed with scientific, economic, social and cultural progress of Japan. From this visit, he got a direct experience of the influence of scientific education imparted through the mother-tongue.

After coming to India, he supported campaign for imparting scientific education through the mother-tongue. On this point, he shared the same view with Rabindranath Tagore and Svāmi Vivekanand.

Recently, two years ago, the birth century of Bose was celebrated and life and works were commemorated and eulogised.

### *Dr P. C. Vaidya*

Dr Vaidya is a professor of mathematics but his field of research is physics. The general theory of relativity is his favourite subject. His research work in this field is matchless and rare.

When Einstein discovered his Theory of Special Relativity in 1905 A. D. He was only 26 but, when Dr Vaidya presented his research paper on Einstein's General Theory of Relativity in 1942 A. D., he was only 24. Recently I happened to see Dr J. Krishna Rao, Head of Mathematics Department of Bhavnagar University. Dr J. Krishna Rao is also a student of Dr P. C. Vaidya. Under the guidance of Dr P. C. Vaidya, he did his research work from 1961 A. D. to 1963 A.D. . Dr Vaidya's professor, Dr Vishnu Vasudeva Narlikar was his professor, too. Since preceding ten years, Dr Narlikar had been pondering on the research work which Dr Vaidya did only in nine months. The thought occurred to Dr Vaidya and within a week, he completed his research work. His research paper was only half page long. But in it, he solved one of the two problems that had been confusing Einstein.

In 1915 A.D. Einstein gave a new theory of gravitational force. In order to determine the definite motion of planets according to the new theory, it was necessary to know the gravitational force of the Sun. In the year in which Einstein gave the Relativity Theory i. e. in 1915 A. D., the scientist named Schwarzschild got a solution to Einstein's equations which could determine the gravitational force of the Sun. But this solution regarded the Sun as a cool star. Naturally, therefore, he had not taken into account light-heat and energy. Now the subject for the research suggested by Dr V. V. Narlikar dealt with finding the solution to Einstein's equations based on the contention that the Sun is a radiating star. In the solution given by Schwarzschild treated the Sun as a cool object. Naturally, its mass was considered to be constant. Since mass was thought to be constant, the calculation was very simple. But it was not definite/real. Since in Dr Vaidya's research regarded

the Sun as a hot and radiating substance, the mass of the Sun went on changing/decreasing as it went on emitting energy. Therefore, there is a slight variation in the gravitational force of the Sun. But this variation is very slight and negligible. As Dr Vaidya himself stated there is only as much difference as  $10^{-27}$  between Schwarzschild's calculation and his calculation. While finding a solution every researcher engaged in this research compared the light emitted by the Sun with a liquid and then determined the gravitational force according to Einstein's theory. He depended on the prevalent belief that the density of liquid/light is three times as much as the pressure on it. But Dr Vaidya discarded the said belief, compared light with flowing water and attached importance only to the velocity of light. Dr Narlikar accepted this and they jointly soon arrived at a new equation. Later on Dr Vaidya made other equations and found their solutions. His research work was thus completed only within a week. Really speaking, we can say that a series of research works in his life, began only in this week.

Since the calculation made by Dr Vaidya showed only a slight difference, his research was not regarded as very important. In 1945 A. D., his article showing the details of his solution was sent to Royal Astronomical Society in London for publication in its magazine, it was rejected. The solution arrived at in 1942 - 43 A.D. was ultimately published in the magazine of ' Indian Academy of Sciences' as late as 1951 A.D.

But after 20 or 22 years, circumstances changed and the research works of Dr Vaidya suddenly assumed importance. In the international conference held in Texas in December 1964, this solution given by Dr Vaidya, was discussed as long as two hours. Subsequently, his research papers published in 1943- 51- 53 and 1955 A.D. became very famous. The only reason was that quasars were discovered in 1963 A. D. and pulsars were discovered in 1967 A.D. Both these types of stars, constellations, emit many times as much radiation as the Sun does. Their gravitational force is thousands- millions of times more powerful than that of our Sun. The decrease in gravitational force caused by their radiation is, therefore, not negligible. The decrease in their gravitational force is hundred thousand times greater than the decrease of the gravitational force in the Sun. If it is not taken into consideration, we shall obviously get unreal and deceptive figures showing their position, distance and mass. These powerful centers of gravitation must, therefore, be described according to the theory of Einstein and in that case it becomes

necessary to make calculations according to the solution suggested by Dr Vaidya. His research contribution is therefore very important in astrophysics.

## THE EXTERNAL FIELD OF A RADIATING STAR IN GENERAL RELATIVITY

It is well known that the generalization of Schwarzschild's solution corresponding to the external field of a radiating star has not yet been obtained. The internal field describes a mixture of matter and radiation. In the outer field there is the expanding inner zone of pure radiation, with radius  $r$ , at time  $t$ , beyond which the empty space is described by Schwarzschild's static solution. The zone of pure radiation is given by

$$ds^2 = -\left(1 - \frac{2m}{r}\right)^{-1} dt^2 - r^2 (d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2) + \frac{r^2}{f^2} \left(1 - \frac{2m}{r}\right) d\tau^2, \quad (1)$$

$$f(m) = m' \left(1 - \frac{2m}{r}\right). \quad (2)$$

[As usual an overhead dot denotes a differentiation with regard to  $t$  and an overhead dash a differentiation with regard to  $r$ .  $f(m)$  is an arbitrary function of  $m$ .]

Since the lines of flow of radiation must be null geodesics the radiation tensor has to be

$$T_{\mu\nu} = \rho v_\mu v_\nu \quad (3)$$

with  $g_{\mu\nu} v^\mu v^\nu = 0$  and  $(v^\nu)_{;\nu} = 0$ , so that  $(\rho v^\mu)_{;\mu} = 0$  and  $(v^\mu)_{;\nu} = 0$ .

The surviving components of the tensor are given by

$$-T_1^1 = T_4^4 = \frac{m'}{4\pi r^2}, T_1^4 = \frac{m'^2}{4\pi m r^3}, T_4^1 = -\frac{m}{4\pi r^3} \quad (4)$$

For differentiation along a line of flow we have the operator

$$\frac{d}{d\tau} \equiv e^{-\lambda/2} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} + e^{-\nu/2} \frac{\partial}{\partial r}. \quad (5)$$

It is found that the field equations amount to

$$(1) \quad \frac{dm}{d\tau} = 0, \quad (11) \quad \frac{d}{d\tau} (r^2 e^{-\lambda} T_1^1) = 0, \quad (12)$$

$$(13) \quad \frac{d}{d\tau} (r^2 \rho) = 0, \quad (14) \quad \frac{d\rho}{d\tau} = 0. \quad (15)$$

The equation that is most difficult to handle corresponds to  $T_1^1 = 0$ . But it can be shown to be equivalent to (ii). The equation of continuity then leads to (iii) and (iv) readily. Thus, along the lines of flow of radiation  $m$ ,  $v$  and  $r^2 \rho$  are all conserved. It is worthy of notice that  $m'$  is positive while  $m$  is negative. This as well as the results (6) and (8) are suggested by the Newtonian analogue.

The total energy of matter and radiation is conserved.  $m$  is the effective mass of the whole system at a point. The value of  $m$  at the boundary  $r = r_1$  at  $t = t_1$  is a constant,  $M$ . At time  $t_1$ , for all values of  $r$  exceeding  $r_1$ , the field is given by Schwarzschild's line-element corresponding to the value  $M$ . Also  $m = -f(M)$  when  $r = r_1$  and  $t = t_1$ .

THE NEW results are (1), (2), (6), (8). Further details and astronomical applications are considered in a paper to be published elsewhere.

My thanks are due to Prof. V. V. Narlikar under whose guidance this work was done and who showed me the result 8 (1).

Benares Hindu University,  
March 22, 1943.

P. C. VAIDYA.

Einstein, Infeld and Hoffmann, *Annals of Math.*, 1938, p. 65; Narlikar, V. V., *Bombay Univ. J.*, 1939, 8, 37.

The Vaidya-metric of Dr Vaidya is very widely used today in astrophysics. Of the articles published in science magazines such as General Relativity and Gravitation, Quantum Theory and Gravitation, Physical Review, Physics Today, nearly 20 articles published every year, widely use Vaidya-metric.

Showing his gratitude to Dr V. V. Narlikar, Dr Vaidya writes about his first research paper : "Professor Narlikar wrote only my name as the author of the article that we wrote to give publicity to this solution. Generally, the authorship of an article is attributed to the teacher who suggested the problem and the name of the student is mentioned as the co-author but Narlikar did not do so because the basic idea of finding a solution had occurred to me. He, therefore, gave all the credit for finding the solution only to me. Today when I think of this I realized that Narlikar very well knew the full importance of the solution that we had found. If as the author of the article he had mentioned his name also along with my name, the solution would have been famous by his name and since I was very young at that time to know all this, he could have very easily attributed to his name the solution which is known today as "Vaidya's solution". But he stuck to academic decorum and decided that since the main idea of the solution was Vaidya's, the solution should be attributed to Vaidya's name. This is academic honesty."

In 1963 A.D. a scientist named Roy P. Kerr found the solution to the problem of determining the field of external gravitational force of 'Black Holes', non-luminous stars moving round. Later on, several scientists made attempts to find a solution to the problem of determining the field of gravitational force of luminous stars moving round but they did not succeed.

Dr Vaidya had already solved the problem of determining gravitational force of luminous stars by taking into consideration the light / energy emitted by them. In 1973 A.D. Dr Vaidya and Dr Liladhar K. Patel, one of his students, found out an original method of determining the gravitational force of rotating stars. This method is known as 'Radiation Kerr Metric'. This is another important research of Dr Vaidya in the field of relativity and gravitational force.

Very many students have done research work in the guidance of Dr Vaidya. Till today he has been directly or indirectly associated with world - famous science institutes of India and especially of Gujarat. Even today , the scientists of 'Physical Research Laboratory'(PRL),' Indian Space Research Organization

(ISRO), 'Vikram Sarabhai Community Center' etc. of Ahmedabad, look upon Dr Vaidya with full respect and regard his opinions as authentic. Dr Vaidya has been an honorary member or chairperson of many foreign institutes dealing with relativity, gravitational force and mathematics. He has also graced the chair of a good many science conferences

In order to make students take interest in mathematics, he established 'Gujarat Ganit Mandal'. Through it, he publishes the magazine, 'Suganitam'. Since 33 years 'Gujarat Ganit Mandal' has been regularly publishing 'Suganitam'. All the credit for it goes to Dr Vaidya and his nephew Prof. Arunbhai Vaidya who is also a mathematician. He has also published as many as seven books. Frequently, he wrote articles in the magazines Kumar, Buddhiprakash, Navchetan etc. The letters that he wrote to his daughters are of such high value that they serve as special articles. Even today he regularly writes every week one letter on an average to one or another of his daughters.

It is a great fortune of India and especially of Gujarat to have such distinguished mathematician. By giving to Dr Vaidya in July, 1993, the Dr Vikram Sarabhai Award for science out of the seven awards meant for the best persons in seven different fields, the Gov. of Gujarat has rightly appreciated his services and research contribution.

It is a happy coincidence that the Bose-Einstein statistics of Dr Satyendranath Bose and Dr P. C. Vaidya's research regarding the field of gravitational force of radiating stars substantiates the concept of physics of Jain Philosophy.

In February 1991, a conference about Jain philosophy and modern science was organized by the Jain Centre of Ahmedabad. Two important research papers about Jain philosophy and physics were presented in the conference. 1. Limitations of Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity--- a paper written by Munishri Nandighoshvijayji and presented by Prof. H. F. Shah, Professor of the famous St. Xavier's College of Ahmedabad. 2. Jain philosophy and Bose-Einstein statistics' --- a paper written and presented by Prof. Parasmal Agrawal (Madhya Pradesh).

Bose-Einstein statistics enlightens on particles of ideal gases and photon particles. In the whole of the universe, space-units are limited in number and pudgala particles are infinite in number according to the Jain philosophy.

How can infinite pudgala particles be occupied in space occupied by limited space-units? And how can infinite paramāṇus be occupied by a single space-unit? A space-unit can be occupied by only single independent paramāṇu. But in the same single space-unit a congregation of infinite paramāṇus can be occupied.

This theory of physics shown by the Jain philosophy, also applies to the bodyless souls which are free from all the eight kinds of karma particles.

Emancipated souls reside in Siddhaśīlā, the rock acting as seat of location at the top of the universe for emancipated souls. These emancipated souls are Arūpī (devoid of form) and bodyless. Each one of them has his independent existence. According to the Jain theory the height of the emancipated soul is two-third of height that he had at the time of nirvāṇa i. e. emancipation. Still however, infinite other emancipated souls occupy the space which is occupied by a single emancipated soul. Ācāryas commenting on Jain scriptures give an easy and simple explanation for this by giving the example of a lamp's light. If a small lamp is lighted in a room, light spreads everywhere in the whole room. If twenty or twenty-five or hundreds of lamps are lighted in the same room, light of all the lamps spreads everywhere in the room and on the walls of the room but it does not happen that light of a single lamp falls only on a particular spot.

According to Prof. P. M. Agrawal, the condition of infinite paramāṇus occupying the same space-unit and the condition of infinite souls occupying common space-units, can be explained by Bose-Einstein statistics.

Dr P. C. Vaidya's research also substantiates the pudgala-paramāṇu theory of Jain philosophy. According to his research, the gravitational force of radiating stars or of the Sun is less than that of non-radiating stars of the same mass and volume. He has shown these calculations by mathematical equations.

According to Jain philosophy, energy is a quality and that which has qualities and modifications is a substance. [गुणपर्यायवद् द्रव्यम् guṇaparyāyavad dravyam]-- (Tattvārtha Sūtra, Ch. 5, Sūtra No. 37) Qualities and modifications belong to substances. The pudgala i.e. matter which has a form, certainly has a mass. The rays of light are a matter, not qualities. The matter pudgala has a quality in the form of energy. When radiating star or



the Sun emits light, really speaking, it is subtle rays or micro particles that are emitted. These subtle rays or micro particles also have a mass and they strike against the objects which lie in the field of gravitational force of the luminous object which emits them. They slowdown the motion of the object or reduce their attraction towards the star or the Sun. Of course, this reduction is very meagre according to the meagre momentum ( $p = mv = mc$ ) of light. Dr P. C. Vaidya has given us the calculation of this negligible reduction. But even today the modern physics regard photons to have zero mass.

The modern physics believes that according to the excessive gravitational force of the Sun etc. and of the stars with a very great mass, the space around it contracts and the path of the objects passing through it, slightly curves. Really speaking, according to the Jain philosophical contention, space is a single whole substance, it is non-material and inert and it has no qualities. Of course, Naiyāyikas (other ancient tradition) regard sound as a quality of space. But the Jain philosophy regards sound as fully material, this can also be proved through modern scientific instruments. Therefore, according to the Jain philosophical contention, the gravitational force of no object has any influence at all on the inert space devoid of qualities. But its gravitational force influences material object in its gravitational field and if the object, the Sun or a star is radiating, its radiation reduces the gravitational force of the object. This reduction proves that the energy emitted by stars or the Sun in the form of light/photons, also has a mass. According to Einstein's General Theory of Relativity the apparent change of place caused by the gravitational force of the Sun through solar deflection of a star-light, could be approved during the total solar eclipse. This also proves that photons have a mass because only that object is influenced by gravitational force which is material and has, therefore, a mass. If light particles have zero

mass, according to the equation  $F = G \frac{m_1 \bullet m_2}{d^2}$ , it is not at all influenced

by a strong gravitational force of any kind. But as shown above, the effect of the strong gravitational force of the Sun on the light of the star, has been reported in the G. T. R. . This proves that the mass of light particles is not zero. Of course, this is my own conclusion. I cannot say that all will agree to it. But I will not be at all surprised if in very near future all scientists agree to this my conclusion.

It is a happy coincidence that research contributions of both these Indian scientists in the field of physics thus surprisingly substantiate Jain philosophical contentions.



THE EASTERN SPIRITUAL TRADITIONS SHOW THEIR FOLLOWERS VARIOUS WAYS OF GOING BEYOND THE ORDINARY EXPERIENCE OF TIME AND OF FREEING THEMSELVES FROM THE CHAIN OF CAUSE AND EFFECT—FROM THE BONDAGE OF KARMA, AS THE HINDUS AND BUDDHISTS SAY. IT HAS THEREFORE BEEN SAID THAT EASTERN MYSTICISM IS A LIBERATION FROM TIME. IN A WAY SAME MAY BE SAID OF RELATIVISTIC PHYSICS.

FRITJOF CAPRA

---

---

## 19. Why Does Omniscient Tīrthaṅkara Moves About On A Golden Lotus?

Indian culture has two traditions : 1. The Śramaṇa tradition and 2. The Brahmin tradition. The Brahmin tradition is believed to be more than 5000 years old and its scriptures include the Vedas and the Smṛutis. The Śramaṇa tradition is of two types : 1. The Jain Śramaṇa tradition of Bhagavān Mahāvīra and 2. The Buddhist tradition of Gautama Buddha. Though both these traditions are contemporaneous, they are absolutely independent of each other. Since they are contemporaneous, there have always been discussions and disputes over scriptural interpretations. Still however, both these traditions are chiefly non-violent. The premier founder of the Buddhist tradition was Gautama Buddha himself. Bhagavān Mahāvīra, the twenty fourth Tīrthaṅkara in the Jain tradition, which he promulgated. It means that twenty three other Tīrthaṅkaras, his equals preceded him. Modern historians recognize Bhagavān Pārśvanātha and Arhat Ariṣṭanēmi (Nēminātha), the cousin of Śrī Kṛṣṇa, as great men of pre-historical times. Moreover in the Ṛgvēda, which is regarded as the most ancient scripture of the Brahmin tradition, there is a reference to Bhagavān Ṛṣabhadēva, the first Tīrthaṅkara of the Avasarpīṇīkāla (the descending half of the time cycle) of the Jain tradition. This proves that Bhagavān Ṛṣabhadēva and Jainism are more ancient than the Vēdas. We are here talking of only the present group of the twenty four Tīrthaṅkaras. In the past there were infinite such groups of twenty four Tīrthaṅkaras and there will be infinite such groups of twenty four Tīrthaṅkaras in future. Soon after attaining omniscience, all the Tīrthaṅkaras move about by putting their feet on golden lotus flower.<sup>1</sup> This is a special characteristic of every Tīrthaṅkara.

What is the reason, why instead of putting his feet on earth, the omniscient Tīrthaṅkara puts his feet on golden lotus flowers? There are some who say that Śrī Simandharsvāmi and other Tīrthaṅkaras are renunciators of Saṃsāra, i.e. world, of wealth and wife and they are non-acquisitive. Why

do they then need a golden throne to sit on and golden flowers to put their feet on?

Jain scriptures do not give any clear explanation about this. In reply to this question, some modern thinkers, scholars and Jain monks say that after the omniscient Tīrthaṅkara attains omniscience, his body emits a large quantity of energy. The earth cannot bear this large quantity of energy. Only gold can bear this quantity of energy. That is the reason why soon after Tīrthaṅkara attains omniscience, gods make golden lotus flowers and Tīrthaṅkara either moves about by putting his feet on them, sits on them or sits on the golden throne in Samavasaraṇa and gives sermons. At that time also, his feet rest on golden lotus flowers.

In this regard, my reverend Gurudev, His Holiness Ācārya Śrī Sūryodayasūrijī says that this is not true nor has it any support of scriptures and since gold is also produced in the earth, it is earth-bodied. If earth is not capable of holding the large quantity of energy of the omniscient Tīrthaṅkara, how can gold have that capability? There must, therefore, be some other reason for creating golden lotus flowers.

Thinking on the basis of scientific principles, this question can be answered as under. Today science has proved that every living being constantly emits such type of energy. Scientists know this energy as bio-electromagnetic energy. This cannot be seen but it can be perceived. Some times great men with their extra sensory powers can see this energy. Where there is electric energy, magnetic energy is always there. Both these energies are connected with each other. Michael Faraday proved this in 1833 A.D. Where there is electro-magnetic energy, there is electro-magnetic field.

Of course, we cannot see bio-electromagnetic energy but today with the help of modern scientific instruments, coloured photographs of bioelectromagnetic field can be snatched by Kirlian photography. Moreover on the basis of their colours and by detecting their defects, diseases can also be diagnosed. In ancient times great men knew this bio-electromagnetic field by the name of aura.

Śrī Ashok Kumar Dutt, who is a mechanical engineer in Bharat Heavy Electricals Limited, Noida, (Ghaziabad), can see the aura of men. Not only that but he also can know the kinds of thoughts of men on the basis of its colours.

The effect of a disease comes to the aura three months before the disease enters the body. By examining photographs of aura, taken by Kirlian photography, one can know disease, cure it, prevent it from entering the body and remain healthy. Of course, the disease enters in the vital body in a minute form but it does not appear in a gross form in the physical body.

In short, bio-electromagnetic energy is a scientifically proved fact and there is no doubt about it.

It is that every living being emits energy. But the kind and quality of it depends on the physical, mental and spiritual development of the living being. It also depends on the extent to which auspicious and inauspicious karma particles attached to the soul and karma particles covering the original property of the soul, are cast off. All these factors – parameters exist in omniscient Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmā to the highest extent. Their bio-electromagnetic energy is, therefore, of the excellent quality and the greatest quantity. This can be explained by mathematical formulae as under :

1. Bio-electromagnetic energy (BEME)  $\propto$  physical state  $\times$  mental state

2. BEME  $\propto$  spiritual level  $\times$  AKFAK

where AKFAK is auspicious karma related to the four aghātī

(not affecting soul-properties) karma

3. BEME  $\propto 1/(IKFAK)(FGK)$

Where IKFAK is inauspicious karma related to the four aghātī karma and FGK is four ghātī (affecting soul-properties) karma.

The sign of variable ( $\alpha$ ) used in these equations is not without significance. It is used here only to show that in no circumstances the bio-electromagnetic energy of a soul is reduced to zero.

According to the Jain philosophical tradition, of the three kinds of activities namely, mental, vocal and physical, every soul can do at least one kind of activities i.e. activities of body, even if the soul belongs to the lowest and most primitive stage.

According to the Jain tradition, only sañjñī (possessing mind) womb born five sensed animals (elephants, cows, horses and such other animals,

sparrow, mynas, cuckoos and such birds, fish and other aquatic animals) and gods, hellish beings and saññī human beings can do activities of mind. The one sensed, i.e. earth-bodied, water-bodied, fire-bodied, wind-bodied and plant; the two-sensed, the three-sensed, the four-sensed and asaññī beasts, birds etc and sammūrcchima human beings do not have material mind and therefore, auspicious and inauspicious karma particles do not bind them through mind activities and therefore their bio-electromagnetic energy does not increase or decrease for such cause. But since they have a body which is bound by auspicious and inauspicious karma particles, their bio-electromagnetic energy increases or decreases through body-activities. Because living beings bound by karma particles, this element is never reduced to zero.

Similarly, to whatever state, a saṃsārī soul may belong to primitive stage, his spiritual energy is never reduced to zero. Even in the souls of the most primitive state (nigōḍa), auspicious variety of nāma-karma, vēdanīya-karma, āyuṣya-karma and gōtra-karma and especially of nāma-karma and vēdanīya-karma, is never reduced to zero. Contrarily, no amount of inauspicious variety of these four kinds of karma particles accumulated together can fully cover the infinite energy of the soul. Similarly, no amount of the four kinds of ghati-karma namely jñānāvaraṇīya, darśanāvaraṇīya, mōhanīya and antarāya karma particles accumulated together can fully cover the infinite energy of the soul.

The sign of variable is used in the equations given above, in order to show that in the whole of the living world, the bio-electromagnetic energy even in the most primitive state of the soul, is never reduced to zero.

According to the rule of mathematics, when the sign (=) (equal to) is used in the above equations, "k" (a constant number) is placed. We can call this constant number, a universal co-efficient. Of course, this constant number is unknown to nescient beings like us. Only the omniscient great men can show its precise value. We can now only imagine it as a constant number.

The omniscient Tīrthaṅkaras have the following types of characteristics:

1. They have the highest physical powers because they have the superior type of bone-construction namely, Vajraṣabhanārāca, which is ca-

pable of tolerating the greatest discomforts and harassments. Even if the Kāla-cakra is thrown on their head, they do not die.

2. Since they have the greatest physical strength, they have the greatest mental strength because only a sound body can have a sound mind (mana). That is the reason why men in Vajraṣabhanārāca cannot be diverted from dhyāna, i.e. meditation even by gods.

3. Dhyāna is concentration of mind, speech and body. Therefore, they have a strong body and strong mind, can have superior type of dhyāna/ meditation and a superior type of spiritual state.

4. The greater the rise of auspicious karma of a soul, the greater the bio-electromagnetic energy. Tīrthaṅkaras have the best and most distinctly meritorious Tīrthaṅkara nāma-karma accumulated by them in the penultimate (immediately preceding the last) birth by virtue of their auspicious acts and auspicious thoughts. That karma and karmas related to it very strongly come into rise and therefore, they have the most powerful bio-electromagnetic energy.

5. Since they are Tīrthaṅkaras, perhaps no inauspicious karma come into rise and therefore their related karmas raise no obstacles to their bio-electromagnetic energy.

6. There are chiefly four types of karma that veil and obstruct the infinite qualities of the soul namely, (1) knowledge obscuring (2) darśana obscuring, (3) infatuating and (4) obstructing karmas. The omniscient souls are perfectly free from these karmas. They, therefore, experience the infinite qualities and energy of soul.

In all the six ways shown above, the greatest/ highest energy of the omniscient Tīrthaṅkara manifests in the largest quantity. This energy is in the form of subtle bio-electromagnetic energy. It is believed that since the earth cannot bear the burden of this highest energy, Tīrthaṅkara walks by putting his feet on the golden lotus. But this is not the fact. This energy tremendously energizes the atmosphere. Human beings and other animals can not catch this energy. If at all they do so, they are probably harmed rather than helped. In order to enable men to make the best use of the greatest energy of Tīrthaṅkara for a long time, gods create golden lotus flowers to pull down into the earth, the superior type of bio-electromag

netic energy of the Tīrthaṅkara and Tīrthaṅkara walks by putting his feet on the golden lotus flowers.

We generally see that a copper wire is set high on a sky-scapper and another end of the wire is set down under the ground. The reason is that the wire absorbs the high electrical charge in the atmosphere of the rainy season and takes it down into the earth. The lightening, therefore, does not fall anywhere about the place. It is my contention that gods create golden lotus flowers only in view of this principle because gold is very sensitive and highly conductive to electricity and it is more conductive than copper. Tīrthaṅkara's energy, therefore, passes down into the earth through golden lotus flowers. As a result, wherever Tīrthaṅkara wanders about or wherever he has wandered about and left, for six months and within certain area, a natural calamity such as epidemic or a famine does not come nor there is an excessive rain-fall or absence of rain nor there is harrassment from mosquitoes, flies, butterflies, locusts and other insects and creatures. Moreover inauspicious activities of human beings and animals in that region are probably removed.<sup>2</sup>

Mahāvīrasvāmi lived more than 2500 years ago. But in Magadhas land of his wanderings, i.e. Bihar of today, places of his Kalyāṇakas, especially places of attainment of omniscience, the bank of the river Rjuvālikā and the place of nirvāṇa kalyāṇaka i.e. final emancipation Pāvāpurī even today give delightful and divine experiences to holy men.

Thus Tīrthaṅkara does good to the whole world.

This is the excellent result of Tīrthaṅkara's excellent aspirations.

References : 1. यत्र पादौ पदं धत्तस्तव तत्र सुरासुराः ।

किरन्ति पङ्कजव्याजात् श्रियं पङ्कजवासिनीम् ॥

*yatra pādaṁ padam dhattastava tatra surāsuraḥ .*

*kiranti paṅkajavyājāt śriyaṁ paṅkajavāsiniṁ ..*

(Vitarāgastōtra, Fourth Chapter, Verse No. 3)

2. Vitarāgastōtra, Third Chapter, verses No. 4 to 10)





---

## 20. Kinds Of Jāpa

### And

### Their Scientific Importance

पूजाकोटिसमं स्तोत्रं, स्तोत्रकोटिसमो जपः । जपकोटिसमं ध्यानं, ध्यानकोटिसमो लयः ॥  
*pūjākōṭisamaṃ stōtram, stōtrakōṭisamō japaḥ .*  
*japakōṭisamaṃ dhyānaṃ, dhyānakōṭisamō layaḥ ..<sup>1</sup>*

**A** Stōtrapāṭha or Stutipāṭha ( recitation of a song and praise i.e. prayer) of vītarāga paramātmā or any other god, gods and goddesses etc. is worth his worship performed a crore times. A Jāpa is worth a Stōtra (praise) recited a crore times. A meditation is worth a Jāpa muttered a crore times. An absorption, delight in the form of Paramātmā or unification of one who performs meditation, meditation and the object of the meditation is worth a meditation performed a crore times.

Here worship generally means worship of idol of a god or a goddess performed with the best materials of worship. It is of various kinds Aṣṭaparakārī (with eight types), Pañcaparakārī (with five types), Ēkōpacārī (with single type), Ēkaviṃśatiparakārī (with twenty-one types) and Bahuvīdhaparakārī (with various types). The materials and means of worship are chiefly important in this worship. Here the activities are mainly of the body. A Stōtra i.e. praise recited once is worth a Pūjā performed a crore times. If complete concentration of mind, speech and body is attained while performing Pūjā of the Dēvādhidēva Paramātmā, the great God and if the mind indulges in auspicious thought processes i. e. meditation, one can also attain omniscience while performing Pūjā e.g. Worship with flowers performed by Nāgakētu. Similarly, recitation of Stuti or Stōtra (song of praise) chiefly involves the activities of speech and body, while the activities of mind or sensorium are subordinate. A Jāpa is worth a Stōtra recited a crore times. A Jāpa mainly involves the activities of mind or sensorium. There is probably no activity of speech or body. According to the saying-"mana ēva manuṣyāṇāṃ kāraṇaṃ bandhamōkṣayōḥ ." (मन एव मनुष्याणां कारणं बन्धमोक्षयोः ।) when the mind recedes from inauspicious activities and engages in auspicious activities such as Jāpa

etc. the inflow of inauspicious karma come to stop and there is an accumulation of auspicious karma and thus proceeding further he who performs Jāpa indulges in meditation. Therefore, a one-time meditation is worth a Jāpa muttered a crore times. He who engages in meditation, the meditation, the object of meditation and himself - all these are separate. Only the concentration of mind, speech and body is important. When the object of meditation, meditation and the meditator <sup>2</sup> -- all these three -- are unified in the form of Paramātmā (the super soul) or the soul, he attains the stage of absorption and such an absorption is worth meditation of crore times.

According to the above verse, worship, Stuti or Stōtra (song of praise), Jāpa, meditation and absorption i.e. unification are gradually ascending power. Jāpa is of three kinds 1. spoken Jāpa 2. speechless Jāpa and 3. mental Jāpa.

1. Jāpa muttered with loud pronunciation so that others can hear, is called a spoken Jāpa. (Bhāṣya)

2. Jāpa muttered mentally by making a flapping sound so that others cannot hear, is called speechless Jāpa. (Upāṃśu)

3. Jāpa muttered mentally without using lips, tongue etc., called mental Jāpa. (Mānasa)

Upādhyāya Śrī Mānavijayajī states in the book entitled 'Dharmasaṅgraha':

".....सशब्दान्मौनवान् शुभः । मौनजान्मानसः श्रेष्ठः जापः श्लाघ्यः परः परः ॥ "

.....saśabdānmaunavān śubhaḥ .

maunajānmānasaḥ śrēṣṭhaḥ jāpaḥ ślāghyaḥ paraḥ paraḥ..

[ Speechless Jāpa is better than the spoken one and mental (Mānasa) Jāpa is superior to speechless Jāpa. All these three varieties of Jāpa are gradually more praise worthy.]

Pratiṣṭhāpaddhati (kalpa) written by Śrī Pādaliptasūrijī states that there are three kinds of Jāpa : Mānasa (mental), Upāṃśu (speechless) and Bhāṣya (spoken).

Jāpa which does not involve even a low utterance, which is muttered in mind and which only its mutterer can understand, is called Mānasa (mental) Jāpa. Jāpa which involves low utterance and which others cannot hear is

called Upāṃśu (speechless) Jāpa. Jāpa which others can hear is Bhāṣya (spoken) Jāpa. Mānasa (mental) Jāpa is difficult to perform. It is performed for doing works of peace. It is, therefore, the best. Upāṃśu (speechless) Jāpa is performed for common welfare. It is a common kind of Jāpa. Bhāṣya (spoken) Jāpa is easy to perform. It is generally performed for doing such wicked acts as subduing or fascinating others. It is, therefore, bad. <sup>4</sup>

In the modern physics, the scientists named de- Broglie states in his particle- wave theory of material particle that subtle particles behave like waves and the formula of wave-length of waves pertaining to the particles is

$\lambda = \frac{h}{mv}$ , where  $\lambda$  is wave-length,  $h$  is Planck's constant,  $m$  is mass of the particle and  $v$  is velocity of particle. <sup>5</sup> In this formula, if  $mv = p$ , then  $\lambda = h / p$ , where  $p$  is momentum. The formula of energy of particle of matter is  $E = nhf$ , where  $E$  is energy,  $h$  is Planck's constant,  $f$  is frequency and  $n$  stands for integer numbers i.e.  $n = 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, \dots$  etc. <sup>6</sup> The energy of particles of a matter which are in the form of wave, depends upon its frequency and the frequency varies inversely with the wave-length. If the wave-length increases, the frequency decreases and the wave-length decreases, the frequency increases. The wave-length inversely varies with the product of the mass of the material particle and its velocity. If there is an increase either in mass or velocity or in both of a subtle material particle, the wave-length of the material particle decreases proportionately. And, therefore, frequency and consequently energy increases. This rule can be applied to the kinds of Jāpa shown by our sages.

According to the Jain scriptures, there are eight types of Vargaṇās (grouping of physical material particles i.e. paramāṇus). Vargaṇā is a technical word of Jain scriptures. Vargaṇā is a kind of unit of a constituent paramāṇus i.e. particles. The first Vargaṇā means separate - single particles i.e. paramāṇus spread all over the universe. The second Vargaṇā means groups of units of two paramāṇus each. The third Vargaṇā means units of groups of three paramāṇus each. The fourth Vargaṇā means units of groups of four paramāṇus each. Thus there are infinite kinds of units of paramāṇus. But the following eight types of Vargaṇās are useful to living beings :-

1. Audārika Vargaṇā, 2. Vaikriya Vargaṇā 3. Āhāraka Vargaṇā, 4. Taijas Vargaṇā, 5. Bhāṣā Vargaṇā, 6. Śvāsōcchvāsa Vargaṇā, 7. Manō Vargaṇā, 8. Kārmaṇa Vargaṇā.

Every constituent unit of all these Vargaṇās have infinite particles i.e. paramāṇus and yet a constituent unit of a Vaikriya Vargaṇā has a larger number of paramāṇus than the number of paramāṇus of the unit of Audārika Vargaṇā and a constituent unit of Āhāraka Vargaṇā has a still greater number of paramāṇus than the number of paramāṇus of the unit of the Vaikriya Vargaṇā. Similarly, a constituent unit of each subsequent Vargaṇā has a gradually increasing number of paramāṇus. And with increasing number of paramāṇus in the unit of each Vargaṇā, the size of paramāṇus becomes gradually subtler and subtler. As a result a constituent unit of Manō Vargaṇā has a greater number of paramāṇus than a constituent unit of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā. <sup>7</sup>

It should be remembered here that Jain Āgamas were written in a fifth or sixth century of Vikram Era. Till then it was customary for monks and nuns of Jain tradition to commit Āgamas to memory. While the quantum mechanics of modern physics was invented as late as at the end of the 20th century of Vikram Era.

According to the modern physics, the velocity of sound i.e. constituent units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā is only 330 metres / second, but the speed of constituent units of taijas Vargaṇā i.e. electromagnetic waves, light waves waves of radio and television is 30 crore metres /sec. That is why the constituent units of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā have less energy, though they have a far greater number of paramāṇus than the constituent units of taijas Vargaṇā. The constituent units of Manō Vargaṇā have a very large number of particles (paramāṇus) that gets transformed as thoughts or mind and they are very subtle, too. As we experience in our daily life, the speed of mind and its thought- pudgalas is tremendous. Therefore, their energy is infinite or very high.

Of the three kinds of Jāpa taught by spiritual sages, the first spoken Jāpa uses the constituent units of paramāṇus of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā. Since their speed is very slow, their frequency is low and as a result their energy is very small. In that kind of Jāpa, therefore, the message takes time to reach the

presiding deity. Its intensity is also very low.

The second kind of Jāpa namely speechless Jāpa, uses the constituent units of paramāṇus of Bhāṣā Vargaṇā and its speed is 330metres / sec.. Still however this kind of Jāpa produces inaudible sound waves. Generally, we can hear sound waves only of a certain frequency. Sound waves having frequency 20 to 20,000 are audible. Sound waves having more frequency than 20,000, cannot be grasped by the ear. Therefore, ultrasonic waves of a high frequency produced in speechless Jāpa have a considerable energy.<sup>8</sup> That is why speechless Jāpa is better than spoken Jāpa.

Mānasa Jāpa is the best of all. It has only the constituent units of paramāṇus of Manō Vargaṇā. It has the largest number of particles and its velocity is also highest. Since the waves produced by mānasa (mental) Jāpa have the highest frequency, their energy cannot be imagined. Since the waves of Mānasa Jāpa have a far greater velocity and a far larger number of paramāṇus than the electromagnetic waves of taijas Vargaṇā, they have infinite energy. Really speaking, this Jāpa does not at all use speech. It is, therefore, also called ajapā-Jāpa, a Jāpa without utterance and it is natural and automatic. Only the mind is used in this Jāpa.

In conclusion, I pray, "May all living beings fulfil their desires through mānasa Jāpa, engage in meditation of the Dēvādhidēva i.e. great God and ultimately attain eternal bliss.

References :

1. Dharmasaṅgraha part-1, Gujarati Translation p. 347.

2. ध्याता ध्येयं तथा ध्यानं त्रयमेकात्मतां गतम् । इति ते योगमाहात्म्यं कथं श्रद्धीयतां परैः ॥  
*dhyātā dhyēyaṃ tathā dhyānaṃ trayamēkātmatām gatam .*  
*iti tē yōgamāhātmyaṃ kathaṃ śraddhīyatām paraiḥ ..*

(Vītarāgastōtra, prakāśa-14 )

3. Dharmasaṅgraha part-1 Gujarati Translation p. 346.

4. Ibidem

5. Quantum Mechanics by P. M. Mathews & K.Venkatesan p. 2

6. Ibidem p. 7

7. Detailed information of these Vargaṇās is given in the commentary of Śrī Ācārāṅgasūtra, The Pañcasaṅgraha, The Karma-Prakṛti. Readers may read it in

these books.

8. With the help of the ultrasonic waves, a urine stone is broken into powder and forced out of the body without a surgical operation and sometime a thrombous in the body is melted. This speaks of the energy of these inaudible ultrasonic sound waves



THEY REALIZE THAT GOOD AND BAD, PLEASURE AND PAIN, LIFE AND DEATH, ARE NOT ABSOLUTE EXPERIENCES BELONGING TO DIFFERENT CATEGORIES, BUT ARE MERELY TWO SIDES OF THE SAME REALITY; EXTREME PARTS OF A SINGLE WHOLE. THE AWARENESS THAT ALL OPPOSITES ARE POLAR, AND THUS A UNITY, IS SEEN AS ONE OF THE HIGHEST AIMS OF MAN IN THE SPIRITUAL TRADITIONS OF THE EAST.

FRIJOF CAPRA

---

## 21. Scientific Importance Of Guru In The Spirituality

ध्यानमूलं गुरोर्मूर्तिः, पूजामूलं गुरोः पदौ ॥ मन्त्रमूलं गुरोर्वाक्यं, मोक्षमूलं गुरोः कृपा ॥

*dhyānamūlaṃ gurōrmūrtiḥ, pūjāmūlaṃ gurōḥ padau ..*

*mantramūlaṃ gurōrvākyaṃ, mōkṣamūlaṃ gurōḥ kṛpā ..*

**T**he centre of meditation is guru's idol. The place of worship is at guru's feet. Guru's word is the source of mantra. Guru's blessings results in 'mōkṣa' i.e. final liberation.

No other western tradition holds guru in a such high esteem as the Indian spiritual tradition. In Indian spiritual tradition, there are three chief elements— God, guru and dharma (religion). God and guru are living entities and dharma is a conceptual entity of qualities. The basic difference between God and guru is that the previous status of God is that of guru and then he attains the status of the great God. To attain the eternal bliss i.e. liberation from the bondage of karma is our ultimate aim. It is the guru who introduces to us the concepts of God and dharma. Showing the importance of guru , Kabīrajī says:

गुरु गोविंद दोनों खड़े, किसको लागु पाय । बलिहारी गुरु आपकी, गोविंद दियो बताय ॥

*guru gōvinda dōnōṃ khaḍē, kisakō lāgu pāya .*

*balihārī guru āpaki, gōvinda diyō batāya ..*

Guru has not yet attained perfect Godhood but he has started his journey on the path of attaining Godhood. His knowledge of the right path and experience offers guidance to every aspirant. And without a guide, none can attain the highest state and experience of self-realisation. That is why in Indian spirituality, guru is regarded not only indispensable but extremely inevitable.

It is said:

गुरु देवो, गुरु देवता, गुरु विण घोर अंधार । जे नर गुरुथी वेगला, रडवडिया संसार ॥

*guru dēvō, guru dēvatā, guru viṇa ghōra aṃdhāra .  
jē nara guruthī vēgalā, raḍavaḍiyā saṃsāra ..*

[Guru is the lamp, guru is God, and without guru there is dreadful darkness. Those who are far from guru, wander badly in Saṃsāra i.e. birth and death cycle.]

It was not without reasons that our ancient sages gave so much importance to guru. They were erudite and they also had knowledge from experience. Whatever they attained, they attained only through the blessings of their guru. They directly experienced and saw that those who had not acquired guru's blessings, wandered here and there in Saṃsāra in spite of being very capable and learned. Therefore, the importance that they gave to guru is justified and also from the viewpoint of modern science, it is proper.

Every living being, gross or subtle, has a sort of energy. In spiritual terminology, it is called spiritual power but in scientific terminology, it is called electromagnetic energy that depends upon the spiritual evolution of soul. The more purity of the soul, the more manifest the energy.

A scientific magazine entitled "New Scientist" has published the results of certain experiments. Accordingly, there is a magnetic compass in the human body. Though unknowingly, we can come under the influence of a magnetic field.

Those who know even elementary science, know that around a magnet, there is its own magnetic field and it is represented by magnetic lines. The magnetic field is invisible but if you put a magnet on a piece of paper on a table, spread a few iron particles around it and pat the table with your finger, the iron particles will automatically be arranged along the magnetic lines in the magnetic field. If a piece of iron comes in the magnetic field, the magnet attracts it. If changes are often made in the magnetic field, an electric current is produced and if this electric current is passed through metal wires etc. magnetic energy or magnetic field is produced in them. Thus electric energy and magnetic energy are interdependent or co-related. When both these energies combine, electro-magnetic energy is produced. This sort of energy is there in living beings also but it is subtler and more powerful. The laws of gross electromagnetic energy and its field also apply to bio-electromagnetic field and energy. If one magnet is brought into the magnetic



field of another magnet, like poles repel and unlike poles attract. A magnet influences another magnet or an object in its magnetic field. Similarly, thoughts of a living being influence the thoughts of other living beings nearby. Around every living being, there is an electromagnetic field. It is called an aura (abhamandal). With the help of Kirlian photography, this aura can be photographed. That is why our ancient sages said :

चित्रं वटतरोर्मूले, वृद्धाः शिष्या गुरुर्युवा । गुरोस्तु मोनं व्याख्यानं, शिष्यास्तु छिन्नसंशयाः ॥

*citram vaṭatārōrmūlē, vṛddhāḥ śiṣyā gururyuvā .*  
*guroṣtu maunaṁ vyākhyānaṁ, śiṣyāstu chinnasamśayāḥ*

[It is a surprise that among the ascetic monks sitting under the banyan tree, the disciples are old and the guru is young and it is a greater surprise that the guru's lecture is his silence which removes the doubts of the disciples.]

Thus, a mere company of a spiritually accomplished guru inspires spiritual development of his disciples.

In different sects of Indian spiritual tradition, the guru imparts blessings to his disciples in different ways. A blessing is a sort of transmission of energy. Generally, the disciple who seeks blessings, bows at the feet of the guru and holds guru's feet who offers blessings. Then the guru lays his hand on the disciple's head and blesses him. During this process, the electric current emitting from the guru's hand, passes through the disciple's head to his hands and as his hands touch the guru's feet, it passes into the guru's body. Thus as the electric circuit is completed, guru's energy passes into the disciple. In another tradition, the guru smells the disciples head. There also such a transmission of energy takes place.

In the Jain tradition, Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra was the twenty fourth Tīrthaṅkara and his first disciple was Śrī Gautamasvāmi.<sup>1</sup> Their master-disciple relation was famous. His original name was Indrabhūti and Gautama was the name of his family (Gōtra). But as great men are now-a-days known by their surname, sages of ancient times were known by the name of their Gōtra. He was, therefore, known in the Jain tradition as Gautamasvāmi and today also he is worshipped by the same name. As stated in Jain religious scriptures, when Mahāvīrasvāmi was 42 years old and Indrabhūti Gautama was 50 years old, they met each other. Prior to their meeting, he

was a Brahmin pundita well-versed in 14 Vidyās i.e. 14 different branches of ancient literature, and he used to perform sacrificial rite. He had 500 Brahmin disciples. So long as Indrabhūti Gautama had not seen Bhagavān Mahāvīra and had not entered in his spiritual bio-electromagnetic field, he cherished the ambition to conquer Bhagavān Mahāvīra in debate and establish his supremacy in all branches of literature all over the world. But as soon as he came near Samavasaraṇa, a place of sermon, where Bhagavān Mahāvīra was sitting and saw him, his ambition to defeat Bhagavān Mahāvīra crumbled and he lost himself in the surrender to Bhagavān Mahāvīra and thus justified the statement that a guru's idol is a centre of meditation :

"ध्यानमूलं गुरोर्मूर्तिः । *dhyānamūlaṃ gurōrmūrttiḥ*"

It is said that when Tīrthaṅkara Paramātmā gives religious sermon, people, birds, and beasts from a distance of as many as 12 Yōjanas ( 1 Yōjana= 8 miles) come to hear his sermon. His spiritual bio-electromagnetic field expands as far as twelve Yōjanas.

Now- a -days as the techniques of acupuncture, acupressure and colour therapy are used to cure physical diseases, so magnetotherapy is also used. This is what follows from the description of the state of omniscience of Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra, the Guru of the whole universe. His bio-electromagnetic field was so powerful that wherever he went, people of that region were cured of their diseases and nobody fell ill as long as six months after his departure. Enmity could not prevail. No famine was caused by absence of rain or excessive rainfall. That was the effect of his grand power. It seemed as if he had hypnotised or mesmerised all.

Really speaking, it will not be surprising if western scientists prove in near future that all these excellences or unexplained properties (Atiśayas) of a Tīrthaṅkara's life were not miracles but they were the effects of the pure bio-electromagnetic field of their spiritual power that was revealed on removal of karmic obscurities of his soul. When Indrabhūti Gautama got from Bhagavān Mahāvīrasvāmi the explanation which solved his doubt about the existence of soul, he accepted Bhagavān Mahāvīra as his guru, devoted his life to him and justified that a guru's feet are a place of worship- 'पूजामूलं गुरोः पदौ । *pūjāmūlaṃ gurōḥ padau ..* "

And when Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra gave Dīkṣā (initiation) to his

eleven Gaṇadharas (prime disciples) namely Indrabhūti Gautama etc. by sprinkling the fragrant powder on their head from the golden dish held by Indra, lord of the first heaven. Through his blessings he transmitted a part of the light of his omniscience to his disciples. With that knowledge they composed the complete Aṅgasūtras (main scriptures) and fourteen Pūrvas (sub scriptures) out of only three sentences (which are known in the Jain terminology as Tripadī) told by lord Mahāvīra:- (1). Uppannē I Vā, (2) Vigamē I Vā , (3) Dhuvē I Va. Thus guru's words in the form of three sentences became mantras. Thus it is justified that guru's sentence is the source of Mantra. "मन्त्रमूलं गुरोर्वाक्यं । *mantramūlaṃ gurōrvākyaṃ*"

For thirty years after initiation, Gaṇadhara Śrī Gautamasvāmi served and worshipped Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra. As a result he attained extraordinary powers (labdhis). That is why his name is preceded by the well deserved epithet - 'Ananta-Labdhi-Nidhāna'. Yet he did not attain omniscience. The only reason for it was his attachment to Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra. On the night of his nirvāṇa i.e. liberation, lord Mahāvīra sent Śrī Indrabhūti Gautama to give sermon to Brahmin Dēvaśarmā who lived in the village nearby. Mahāvīra did so in order to ward off Gautama's attachment towards him. While he was returning after giving sermon to Brahmin Dēvaśarmā , Śrī Gautamasvāmi became disturbed and agitated on hearing, on the way, the news of nirvāṇa of Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmi. Detachment grew out of the pain of separation from guru and when the tie of attachment towards Śrī Mahāvīrasvāmi was broken, he attained omniscience. Thus it is justified in the life of Śrī Gautamasvāmi that guru's blessings results in 'mōkṣa' i.e. final liberation- "मोक्षमूलं गुरोः कृपा । *mōkṣamūlaṃ gurōḥ kṛpā* .."

In short, the importance that is given to a guru in the Indian spirituality is fully upheld by scientific principles. One need not doubt it at all. This article, too, is a fruit of words and grace of my Rev. Gurudēva Ācāryaśrīvijaya Sūrodayasūrijī Mahārāja.

#### References :

1. This Gautamasvāmi is different from Gautama Buddha of the Buddhist religion and the Gautama Ṛṣi of the Nyāya-Vaiśeṣika darśana.
2. A description of the Gautamsvāmi's mental struggle at that time, is found

in Jain religious scriptures namely, the commentary on the Kalpasūtra , the commentary on the Āvaśyakasūtra etc.



TO THE ENLIGHTENED MAN...WHOSE CONSCIOUSNESS EMBRACES THE UNIVERSE TO HIM THE UNIVERSE BECOMES HIS 'BODY', WHILE HIS PHYSICAL BODY BECOMES A MANIFESTATION OF THE UNIVERSAL MIND, HIS INNER VISION AND EXPRESSION OF THE HIGHEST REALITY, AND HIS SPEECH AN EXPRESSION OF ETERNAL TRUTH AND MANTRIC POWER.

LAME ANAGARIKA GOVIND, *FOUNDATIONS OF TIBETAN MYSTICISM*  
p.225

---

## 22. Light : Animate Or Inanimate?

Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra lived more than 2500 years ago but his dispensation prevails even today. He has pretty well explained in his sermons the nature of the material world that he saw through omniscience and even today the doctrines expounded by Bhagavān Mahāvīra is passing the tests of science.

It must be admitted that Jain scriptures have made an incomparable contribution in the field of biology.

According to the Jain philosophical tradition, besides animals and plants, earth, water, fire and wind have life. Today, it is very necessary to prove not only on the basis of logic but practically in scientific ways that there is an element of life in all these. This is an urgent demand of the day and it is our responsibility to satisfy the demand.

Since last few centuries, some wrong beliefs about light have become popular in the Jain society and especially among monks and nuns. These popular beliefs have no strong support of Jain canonical scriptures. Generally there are no lamps in Upāśrayas i.e. places of Jain monks and nuns. The Jain monks and nuns do not use lamps because it is very necessary for them to observe non-violence and according to Jain philosophical belief fire also has life.

Now-a-days there is a custom among Śvētāmbara idolatrous Jain monks that whenever one wishes to go through the light of a lamp, one should go, wrapped in a woollen cloth. The reason for this custom is that light is fire-bodies i.e. it is living being and as soon as it touches our body, it dies. A woollen cloth should, therefore, be wrapped around the body in order to save the living beings of light of electric lamps, candle-sticks from falling on it. The light of the Sun, the moon, the planets, the constellations and the stars is regarded to be lifeless.

On the other hand, lots of researches are now-a-days done in science and these researches inspire some people to believe that the light of lamps of

electricity and of lamps of ghee, oil kerosene etc. is lifeless. It is, therefore, very necessary to know the real nature of light on the basis of Jain scriptures.

According to Jain scriptures there are chiefly six kinds of the Pudgala Dravya (matter). 1. subtle-subtle, 2. subtle, 3. subtle-gross, 4. gross-subtle, 5. gross, 6. gross-gross. The commentary of the Jain canonical treatise of Śrī Daśavaikālikasūtra written by Rev. Ācārya Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī Mahārāja states on the authority of the Jīvābhigamasūtra that every separate unit of a Pudgala Dravya i.e. matter, or paramāṇu/atom of the matter belongs to the class of the subtle-subtle; pudgala aggregates (skandhas) of two units of matter i.e. paramāṇus to aggregates of infinite units of matter belong to the class of the subtle; pudgala aggregates of smell (good and bad) belong to the class of the subtle-gross; wind-bodies belong to the class of the gross-subtle; water-bodies belong to the class of the gross; fire-bodies, plant-bodies earth-bodies and moving beings such as the two-sensed, three-sensed etc. belong to the class of the gross-gross. In the commentary on the Tattvārthasūtra Śrī Siddhasēna Gaṇi, also shows that wind-bodies are subtler than fire bodies. The reason that he gives for this is that fire-bodies can be directly seen but wind-bodies cannot be directly seen.

On the other hand, modern science clearly states that particles of light called photons are subtle like electrons but gases such as hydrogen, oxygen etc. are grosser than them because a hydrogen atom has one electron, one proton and one oxygen atom has 8 electrons, 8 protons and 8 neutrons and each gas contains pairs of atoms which are called molecules in the terminology of science. From this point of view, light particles should not be considered as fire-bodies i.e. living being but fire-producing substances, their flames etc. should themselves be regarded as fire-bodies i.e. living beings. When electricity is passed into an electric lamp, the filament of the tungsten metal gets heated and emits light. Fire is produced in it and it is regarded to be a live filament. Similarly, only burning live-coals, flames of fire, lightning in the sky and fire particles covered with ashes are called fire-bodies but the light coming out of them cannot be called fire-bodied. In this context the prakrit commentary of the fourth uddēśaka of the first chapter (adhyayana) of part 1 (first śrutaskandha) of the Jain canonical treatise named Ācārāṅgasūtra states only five types of gross fire-bodies : (1) burning live coals etc. (2) fire (3) flames detached from the source (4) flames attached to the burning object (5) fire particles covered with ashes in the furnace.

Nowhere is light shown here to have life but light and its hot touch are shown as characteristics of life in fire i.e. source of light. In this context the author of a niryukti ( prakrit commentary in verses) of the Ācārāṅgasūtra, gives the illustration of a glow-worm. He says that the glow-worm emits light only while it has life but after death it cannot emit light and, therefore, its light is a characteristic of its life. Similarly fire-bodies can emit light only while they have life and only the body of living animals or human beings is hot and after their death it becomes cold. Fire has a hot touch only because it has life. The hot touch proves that fire bodies have life. The light coming out of fire should, therefore, not be believed to have life.

Well-versed in ten Pūrvas (the Jain canonical scriptures) Śrī Śāyambhavasūrijī Mahārāja states in the Daśavaikālikasūtra that monks and nuns should not burn or cause to burn common fire, pieces of charcoal, dung-fire, lamp-fire, flames, pieces of live-coal, pure-fire, electricity, firebrands etc., nor sprinkle it with a fuel of ghee etc. nor touch it, nor mix to different kinds of fire, nor to enkindle it by fanning etc. i.e. nor to enlarge them, nor to extinguish it nor cause or encourage some-one to do all this.

This means that he who does all this, commits the sin through violence of fire-bodies.

Nowhere it is stated here that if the light emitted by fire-bodies falls on the body of a monk or a nun, the firebodies are hurt. If fire or a lamp is burning, a monk cannot have it extinguished. If the light of a lamp contained life and if it died by falling on the body of monk or nun, omniscient or canonical scriptures would fully allow the monks and nuns to teach to extinguish lamps for observance of non-violence or would clearly teach to keep away from such places. This shows that fire from which light and heat emerge or emit, contains life and that is why who extinguishes or teaches to extinguish fire-bodies commits the sin through their violence. Since light does not contain life, so if light falls on the body of a monk or a nun, he does not commit the sin through violence of fire bodies.

As stated above, nowhere in Āgamic (canonical) literature is light stated to have life. It means that it is non-living. It is, therefore, necessary to think when and how the tradition of believing that light has life, originated. First of all, references of this are found in religious scriptures of Śvētāmbara idolatrous

tradition of tapagaccha , dealing with literature of failure of conduct of monks, nuns and lay-persons and in the Sēnapraśna.

Both the texts (references) are as under :

1. If the lightning and light of lamps touch the body of man, it causes a failure-of-conduct.

2. (1) Question : If lightning touches the body of man while he is performing the ritual of Pratikramaṇa in the rainy season, does it cause a failure-of-conduct (Aticāra)?

Answer : It has been heard from Rev. Śrīvijaya Hīrasūrijī and Rev. Śrīvijaya Dānasūrijī that while one is performing the ritual of Pratikramaṇa or Yōga (a special type of ritual process) in the rainy season or in the rest of the seasons, if the light of lightning falls, there is a failure-of-conduct and Kālagrahaṇa (a special type of ritual process) fails.

(2) Question : If the light of lamps etc. touches the body of man in moon-light, does it cause a failure-of-conduct?

Answer : It is traditionally believed that if the moon-light touches the body of man, the light of lamps etc. does not cause a failure-of-conduct, but if the moon-light does not touch the body of man, the light of lamps etc. causes a failure-of-conduct. The book Sandēha-dōlāvalī-prakaraṇa written by Ācārya of Kharatara sect also says same thing.

In the beginning of the 14th century of the Vikrama era, Śrī Jinadattasūrijī, the disciple of Śrī Jinavallabhasūrijī wrote the book 'Sandēha-dōlāvalī-prakaraṇa'. This book is in the question-answer form. The reference to this point is found in the commentary on verse 41 and 42 and it seems that traditional belief that light contains life started from that time, though no such meaning is derived from the original verses of this 'Sandēha-dōlāvalī-prakaraṇa'. But the bruhadvrtti written by Vācanācārya Śrī Prabōdhacandra Gaṇi gives a detailed discussion of this. A summary of the discussion is as under :

If a man (monk or nun or layman or laywoman) while performing Sāmāyika, Pratikramaṇa, touches electricity, a lamp etc. twice, thrice, four times or many times, he should make confession (Ālōcanā) of it. Here the word 'etc.' means other living beings such as earth-bodies etc. It means that living beings



should not be touched while one is performing Sāmāyika, Pratikramaṇa etc. Fire, lamps etc. also contain life. They should, therefore, not be touched. The word "lightning" is used in verses of "Sandēhadōlāvalī" and there it means the lightning that appears in the sky and it has life. But one who is performing Sāmāyika, Pratikramaṇa cannot touch it. Therefore commentators and others have taken the word "lightning" to mean the light of lightning. It can, therefore, be inferred that the tradition of believing that light of any kind of fire contains life, perhaps started from that time.

On the other hand, discussing the question "whether light of lamps cause failure-of-conduct in moon-light," the author of the Vṛtti i.e. commentator of "Sandēhadōlāvalī", says that light of the Sun and the Moon does cause a failure-of-conduct, but it is unremediable. Soon afterwards he gives another answer or solution that the light of the Sun and the Moon only touches but since it is lifeless, there is no possibility of failure-of-conduct.

But later on, he raised the doubt that light contains life by giving a citation from the Bhagavatīśūtra, a Jain canonical scripture. Giving an answer to it, he quotes the words of the commentator Śrī Abhayadēvasūrijī that livingness of light of the Sun, the Moon etc. is only a formality. Really, it does not contain life. The paudgalic (material) aggregates of residences i.e. vimānas or planes of the sun and the moon etc. are earth-bodied, therefore, they contain life but their light does not contain life. Since their body is far away, some living beings in the moon emit light that is not hot but cold because their Udyōtanāmakarma is operative. Since their body is far away, some living beings in the sun emit light that is not cold but hot because their Ātapanāmakarma is operative. The touch of their light, therefore, does not cause failure-of-conduct.

But here the doubt is raised that if it is so, the light of electricity or lamps etc. also does not cause failure-of-conduct because their fire-body is far away.

Giving an answer to this the author of Vṛtti of "Sandēhadōlāvalī", says that Udyōtanāmakarma does not operate in fire-bodies and since they are not earth-bodies, Ātapanāmakarma does not operate in them because Āgamas, i.e. Jain canonical scriptures say that only the gross earth-bodies which are Aparyāptā (having inadequate bodily capacities) have the operation of Ātapanāmakarma. How is it then that the light of lamps etc. gives light and heat to distant objects?

Giving an answer to this, Vācanācārya Śrī Prabōdhacandra Gaṇi says that as a result of operation of a hot touch and of Lōhitavarṇaṇāmakarma, lighted fire-bodies spread over the surrounding region. fire-bodies have no Prabhā (irregular spread, reflection etc. of light) but these fire bodies being extremely subtle, they themselves are known as irregular spread, reflection etc. of light.

This last answer given by Vācanācārya Śrī Prabōdhacandra Gaṇi is incomplete and contrast to the reference of Jīvābhigamasūtra, a Jain canonical scripture, stated in Śrī Haribhadrasūrijī's commentary of the Daśavaikālikasūtra, a Jain canonical scripture. Śrī Haribhadrasūrijī Mahārāja clearly says that fire-bodies are grosser even than water-bodies. Wind-bodies are subtler even than water-bodies. Light particles are very much subtler than wind-bodies. How can they be regarded as fire-bodies? This is an important question to ponder on.

Another classification of pudgala (matter) is into Vargaṇās (groupings). There are chiefly eight varieties of Vargaṇās : 1. Audārika, 2. Vaikriya, 3. Āhāraka, 4. taijas, 5. Bhāṣā, 6. Śvāsōcchvāsa, 7. Manō and 8. Kārmaṇa. The body of all living beings except the celestial (Dēva s) and hellish ones, is made of pudgala aggregates i.e. paramāṇu-units of the Audārika Vargaṇā. The body of celestial beings (i.e. devas) is made of pudgala aggregates (paramāṇu-units) of the Vaikriya Vargaṇā.

Monks, well-versed in the fourteen Pūrvas scriptures and endowed with Āhāraka labdhi, make use of pudgala aggregates (paramāṇu-units) of the Āhāraka Vargaṇā in making the Āhāraka body. Every living being of the world, has the subtle bodies - taijas and Kārmaṇa. Bhāṣā Vargaṇā produces sound. Śvāsōcchvāsa Vargaṇā is used in taking breath. Manō Vargaṇā is used in making the mind (sensorium) and thinking.

According to the Daśavaikālikasūtra, gross-subtle, gross and gross-gross material aggregates are assimilated in Audārika Vargaṇā. If we think that light contains life, it should be included in the gross-gross type of material aggregates. But science has proved that light particles are very subtle and therefore, it seems proper to include them in the taijas Vargaṇā. If along with other Vargaṇās, we regard the taijas Vargaṇā as a subtle type of grouping, everything is all right. It should be noted here that infinite paramāṇus (atoms) aggregates of all the eight Vargaṇās are gradually subtler transformations and

they are made of infinite particles (atoms). It, therefore, seems logical and true to believe that light is lifeless.

The Sēnaprasna mentions that light of electricity or a lamp, touching the body of a man, causes a failure-of-conduct (Aticāra) but it is not quite fruitless or frustrate. The sense of this sentence needs to be understood.

Firstly, Ācārya Śrī Sēnasūrijī Mahārāja clearly states that he heard it from Ācārya Śrī Hīrasūrijī. It means that perhaps there was no reference to this in Āgamic literature or any literature of tapagaccha which was available at that time.

Secondly, instead of answering the question whether light of lamps etc. dies by touching the body of man in moonlight from Āgamic literature and literature of the tradition of tapagaccha, he quotes from "Sandēhadōlāvalī" of Kharataragaccha written 200-250 years ago. This means that tapagaccha had no such tradition but it came into tapagaccha from Kharataragaccha.

Thirdly, if light of electricity or a lamp touches the body of one who is performing Sāmāyika, Pratikramaṇa etc. it causes a failure of conduct and the reason for this is that if light comes from somewhere into darkness at the place of performance of Sāmāyika, Pratikramaṇa etc. concentration is broken and mind is disturbed. Also, everything looks clear in light and the performance of Sāmāyika, Pratikramaṇa etc. becomes easy and comfortable. The performer, therefore, likes light and silently supports the act of lighting up the lamp. But it is not fit for a monk or nun to support it because he is forbidden to do it or cause or support it to be done. It can, therefore, be inferred that Ācārya Śrī Hīrasūrijī perhaps said that under these circumstances the performance of rites i.e. Sāmāyika, Pratikramaṇa etc. of monks and nuns causes a failure-of-conduct because it supports the act of lighting up the lamp.

According to the modern physics also light is only in the form of electromagnetic waves. The atmosphere is now-a-days teeming with thousand million kinds of electromagnetic waves. Their speed i.e. velocity is also as great as the velocity of light. i.e. 3,00,000 km/sec. Its frequency is very high or very low and, therefore, we cannot see it.

Thus, thousand million kinds of electromagnetic waves dash against every living being on the earth now-a-days. If we think that they all are living beings, it would be difficult to live on earth. Every living being emits, from his body,

waves of a certain kind of frequency according to his physical capacity and spiritual development and the wave-length, frequency of these waves change according to his mental conditions i.e. peace, danger, anger, agony, sorrow etc. It is on this basis that the branch of science called telepathy has developed. In western countries, many research works are done and are being done on this subject.

It is stated regarding Āgāra (आगार) of Kāusagga (काउसग) mentioned by the word अगणीओ (Agaṇīō) in the following verse of the prakrit commentary of Āvaśyakasūtra, a Jain canonical scripture.

अगणीओ छिदिज्ज बोहिअ खोभाइ दीहडक्को वा । आगारेहिं अभग्गो उसग्गो एवमाइहिं ।।

*agaṇīō chindijja bōhia khōbhāi dīhaḍakkō vā .*

*āgārēhiṃ abhaggō usaggō ēvamāihiṃ..*

यदा ज्योतिः स्पृशति तदा प्रावरणाय कल्पग्रहणं कुर्वतोऽपि न कायोत्सर्गमङ्गः ।

*'yadā jyōtiḥ sprśati tadā prāvaraṇāya kalpagrahaṇaṃ kurvatō'pi na kāyōtsargabhaṅgaḥ .'* (If a flame of fire is touched during Kāyōtsarga, the Kāyōtsarga is not broken by taking a piece of cloth for wrapping.)

But two meanings of the word (Agaṇīō) mentioned in this verse are given in the Gujarati commentary entitled 'Prabōdhaṭīkā' on Pratikramaṇasūtra. This verse belongs to the niryukti of Annatthasūtra, the Āvaśyakasūtra.

1. If fire comes spreading and if the performer of Kāyōtsarga (Kāusagga), goes to another place to complete Kāusagga, the Kāusagga is not broken.

2. The second meaning is that which is shown in the commentary on Āvaśyakasūtra.

Nowhere among words related to fire-bodies in his dictionary, 'Abhidhāna-cintāmaṇi' Kalikāla Sarvajña Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī has shown 'light' to be a fire-body. In 'Abhidhānārājēndra' too, there is no mention about this.

Of the two meanings noted above, the first meaning seems to follow the Āgamas, the original Jain canonical scriptures. The second meaning is not clear. Of course, the original verse of the niryukti does not show 'light' to be a fire-body, nor does the second meaning clearly show that 'light' in the form of a fire-body, has life. Even then, those who believe that light has life depend on that reference and its meaning. But looking to the nature of the other three

considerations shown herewith the second meaning does not seem to be proper.

Only omniscients know the reality. (तत्त्वं तु केवलीगम्यम् - *tattvaṃ tu kēvalīgamyam*).

The sum and substance of all this discussion is that it is a characteristic of fire-bodied lives to emit electromagnetic waves in the form of light. It is, therefore, not proper to believe that there is life in any kind of light.

This does not mean that I agree that the monks and nuns should be allowed to read, write, or do other activities at night in the light of a lamp nor I have written this article in order to get such freedom. Really speaking, monks and nuns cannot use lamps for themselves nor can they make others use lamps, nor should they regard him to be good who lights up a lamp or extinguishes it or switches an electric lamp on or off. This means that they should not encourage him. Also, they are not allowed to do any work in the light of other house nearby or in the light of the municipal lamp because they thus encourage the use of light. Everyone accepts that though the lamp is not lighted for the monk or on his asking, it is sinful to use it. There is no question, therefore, of giving or asking for such freedom. This is only a humble attempt to find an answer to the question whether light contains life.

(Reference Books : The commentary on the Daśavaikālikasūtra by Śrī Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī, The commentary on the Tattvārtha Sūtra by Śrī Siddhasēna Gaṇi, The commentary on the Ācārāṅgasūtra by Śrī Śīlāṅkācāryajī, The Sēnapraśna, The Sandēha-dōlāvalī-prakaraṇa, The Abhidhāna-cintāmaṇi by Kalikāla Sarvajña Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī, The Abhidhāna-Rājēndra by Rājēndrasūrijī, The Āvaśyakasūtra - nirukti, Text book of Quantum Mechanics by P.M. Methews & K. Venkatesan).

(Special Research issue of Sankalpa magazine  
& Tīrthaṅkara, Jan., 1988)



## 23. Directions In Jain Āgamas

All have heard the name of the device called compass and many have also seen it. The dial on compass shows directions as in figure No. 1. Generally, people believe that there are only ten or eight directions. They are counted as under : east, west, north, south, north-east, south-east, south-west, north-west, the direction up wards and the direction downwards. Of these ten directions only eight can be shown on the dial. The upward and downward directions cannot be shown because a three-dimensional medium is necessary to show them, but a dial is always two-dimensional.

Fig. No. 1

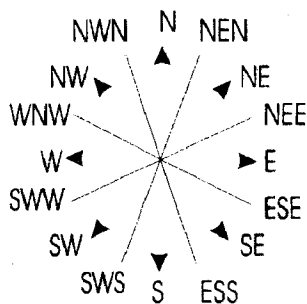


Fig. No. 2

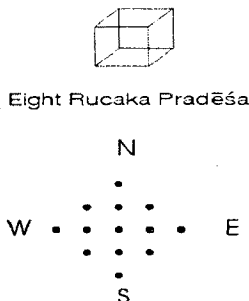
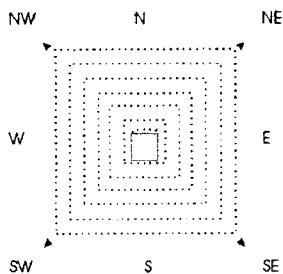


Fig. No. 3



Thirteen Pradēśātmaka Yantra

The compass shows directions as stated above. Moreover, as shown in figure No. 1, it shows the directions : NEE between north-east and east, ESE between east and south-east, ESS between south-east and south, SWS between south and south-west, SWW between south-west and west, WNW between west and north-west, NWN between north and north-west and NEN between north and north-east.

The English language has words only for the four principal directions – east, west, north, south. There are no words for subdirections (विदिशा). They are, therefore, named by the joint name of the two adjacent principal directions. e. g.. For the corner between the north and the east, the word north-east is used. Similarly, for the corners between the east and the south, the south and the west, the west and the north, the words east-south, south-west and west-north are respectively used. But in Indian literature, different

words are used for different sub-directions. This shows that the Indian literature has a vast vocabulary. There being no special words for bisections of sub-directions in English, it is thought that they are shown only for convenience. But *Ācārāṅga*, the holy Jain canonical scripture mentions these bisections of sub-directions. Also, the nature and kinds of directions are fully discussed.

Generally, the outer space is thought to have no directions. The direction from which the Sun rises on the earth is considered to be the east direction, but in outer space there is no sunrise or sunset.

The Jain canonical scriptures also consider that direction to be the east from where the Sun rises. But they do not accept that the outer space is quite directionless.

Since eight *rucaka pradēśas* (i.e. space points or space units) which are of the shape of a cow's teats and which are at the centre of the universe and they are the origin of all directions and sub-directions, the outer space, too, has directions.<sup>2</sup>

Generally, the Jain canonical scripture entitled the *Ācārāṅga*, describes a figure for showing directions and it has thirteen space points or space units. It is represented as shown in figure No. 2.<sup>3</sup> Jain scriptures also show how directions and sub-directions are formed. The four principle directions are as wide at an origin as two space points. As the directions go one space point further from the centre, their width increases by two space points and the four sub-directions go one space point further in a straight line in their respective corners.<sup>4</sup> They are shown in figure No. 3. The directions upwards and downwards are in a series of four space points.

Describing the shape of all the four directions and sub-directions, Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmī, the author of *Niryukti on Ācārāṅgasūtra*, says that all these four principal directions are of the shape of the yoke of a cart because these four principal directions are narrow at their origin and as they go further, they become wider. The four sub-directions are like an unbroken string of pearls. The directions upwards and downwards are like upward and downward line of four *rucaka pradēśas* (space points) each.<sup>5</sup>

The directions in respect of the eight *rucaka pradēśas* (space points) at the centre of the universe as shown above, are the real directions. Also,

there are directions from the view point of the teller, (Parjñāpaka) who tells the directions. They are called Parjñāpaka - directions. There are also directions in respect of the region (kṣētra) like Bharatakṣētra, Airavatakṣētra etc. They are called kṣētra-directions.

Fig. No. 4

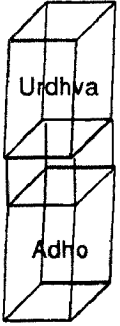


Fig. No. 5

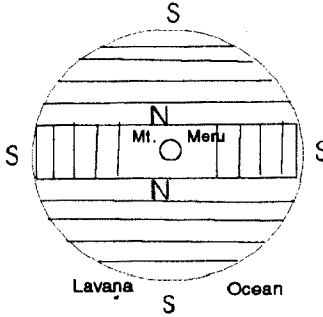
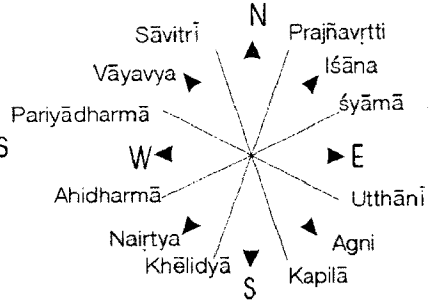


Fig. No. 6



According to Jain scriptures, Mt. Mērū in Jambūdvīpa is at the centre of the whole of the Tiryak-Lōka (madhya-Lōka) and the Sun, the moon, the planets, the constellations and the stars always go on moving around it in a circle. The direction of sunrise is called the east and the other directions are represented with reference to it.<sup>6</sup> Since the Sun comes from the east-Mahāvidēhakṣētra, at the time of sunrise in the Bharatakṣētra, it is the east direction for Bharatakṣētra and Mt. Mērū is in the north. The south direction of Bharatakṣētra, is the east direction for the west-Mahāvidēhakṣētra and Mt. Mērū is in the north to west-Mahāvidēhakṣētra too. The kṣētra-directions of Airavatakṣētra is quite opposite to the directions of Bharatakṣētra. The east of Airavatakṣētra is really the west of Bharatakṣētra and the west of Airavatakṣētra is the east of Bharatakṣētra. The north of Bharatakṣētra is the east of east-Mahāvidēhakṣētra and the south of Bharatakṣētra is the west of the east-Mahāvidēhakṣētra. Mt. Mērū is always to the north and the Lavaṇasamudra (Lavaṇa ocean) is always to the south as shown<sup>7</sup> in Figure No. 5.

The kṣētra-directions of Bharatakṣētra are similar to the real directions of the whole universe.



### **Parjñāpaka - directions प्रज्ञापकदिशा :**

In representation of kṣētra-directions and real directions only ten directions are shown. But in representation of Parjñāpaka - directions, the author of Nirukti on the Ācārāṅgasūtra, shows eighteen directions.

Parjñāpaka is one who shows directions. The direction in front of the person, sitting or standing or in respect of whom, directions are to be represented, is called the east, even if it is the south or the west or the north.<sup>8</sup> As the direction before the Parjñāpaka is the east, the direction behind the Parjñāpaka is the west. The direction to his left is the north and the direction to his right is the south. The directions between these four principal directions are called sub-directions. These make eight directions. There are eight more sub-directions intermediate between these eight directions.<sup>9</sup> All these sixteen directions have the height and thickness of Parjñāpaka. The directions upwards and downwards are of the size of the Parjñāpaka's body and of the shape of a thick staff i. e. stick.<sup>10</sup>

Jain scriptures give the names of the four sub-directions in both the ways. The method adopted for naming the directions as the north-east, east-south south-west and north-west in the English language is also an ancient method. Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmī, the author of Nirukti on Ācārāṅgasūtra shows the names of the directions thus : 1. east, 2. east-south, 3. south, 4. south-west, 5. west, 6. north-west 7. north, 8. north-east,<sup>11</sup> though in presentation of real directions he describes south-east as Agni, south-west as Nairṛtya, north-west as Vāyavya and north-east as Īśāna.

The intermediate sub- directions between any two adjacent directions of the eight directions, are named by the author of Nirukti on Ācārāṅgasūtra, as 'Śyāmā, Utthānī, Kapilā, Khēlidyā, Adhidharmā, Pariyādharma, Sāvitrī and Prajñavṛtti.'<sup>12</sup> Śrī Śīlāṅkacārya, the commentator does not clearly say whether the names of these eight intermediate sub-directions should be started from the sub-direction between east and north-east or from the sub-direction between east and south-east. But since the names of sub-directions are started from the north-east sub-direction, it will be proper to start from direction between the east and the north-east.

Seeing these references of directions in Jain canonical scriptures, the common man may ask why it is necessary to describe these directions in Jain

philosophy which is soul-oriented. Man's soul and every soul has been trans-migrating since beginningless time. In order to know where he was, in what surroundings, he was in the last birth, it is necessary to know the form situation of the universe. As a part of it, the form of directions is described here. Here is a reference given by the scripturist as under :-

" Here in this world, some people do not know whether they (their souls) have come here from the east, from the west, from the north, or from the south or from sub-directons (विदिशा) or from the upward direction or from the downward direction. "13

Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmī, the author of Nirukti on Ācārāṅgasūtra represent the science of directions as a special explanation of this sūtra. There is a special method of composing commentaries on Jain canonical scriptures. i. e. Āgamas. The name, representation and especially the obvious and intrinsic aspects of every word or component of a compound word are explained in detail. Similarly, the directions mentioned above are general directions that are famous in all societies and men. They are called in Jain technical term Dravyadiśā (द्रव्यदिशा) i.e.obvious aspect. While for the scripturist and monks and nuns who are learning, only intrinsic directions Bhāvadiśā (भावदिशा) are important. They are also eighteen in number. A detailed explanation these Bhāvadiśā is found in the Nirukti of Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmī and commentary of Śrī Śīlāṅkācārya on Ācārāṅgasūtra. Being irrelevant, it is not given here.

#### References :

1, इंदग्गेई जम्मा य, नेरुती वारुणी य वायव्या ।

सोमा ईसाणावि य, विमला य तमा य बोद्धव्या ॥ (आचारांग निरुक्ति गाथा-४३)

टीका - आसामैन्द्री विजयद्वारानुसारेण शेषाः प्रदक्षिणतः सप्तावसेयाः ऊर्ध्वं विमला तमा चाधो बोद्धव्या ।

*imdaggeī jammā ya, nērūtī vārūṇī ya vāyavyā .*

*sōmā īsāṇāvi ya, vimalā ya tamā ya bōddhavyā .. (ācārāṅga nirukti gāthā-43)*

*ṭīkā - āsāmaindrī vijayadvārānusārēṇa śēṣāḥ pradakṣiṇataḥ saptāvasēyāḥ ūrddhvaṃ vimalā tamā cādhō bōddhavyā .*

2. अट्ठ पएसो रुयगो, तिरियं लोयस्स मज्झयारंमि ।

एस पभवो दिसाणं, एसेव भवे अणुदिसाणं ॥ (आ. नि. गा. - ४२)

*aṭṭha paēsō ruyagō, tiriyam lōyassa majjhayārammi .*

*ēsa pabhavō disāṇam, ēsēva bhavē aṇudisāṇam .. (ā. ni. gā. - 42)*

3. तेरस पएसियं खलु, तावइएसुं भवे पएससुं ।

जं दव्वं ओगाढं, जहन्नयं तं दस दिसांगं ॥ (आ. नि. गा. ४१)

तत्स्थापना- त्रिबाहुकं नवप्रदेशिकमभिलिख्य चतसृषु दिक्ष्वेकैकगृहवृद्धिकार्या ॥

*tērasa paēsīyam khalu, tāvaiēsūṇ bhavē paēsēsūṇ .*

*jaṇ davvaṇ ṭgāḍḍham, jahannayam taṇ dasa disāṅgam .. (ā. ni. gā. 41)*

*tatsthāpanā- tribāhukam navapradēśikamabhilikhya catasrṣu dikṣvēkaikagrāvṛddhikāryā ..*

4. दुपएसाइ दुरुत्तर, एग पएसो अणुत्तरा चेव ।

चउरो चउरो य दिसा, चउराइ अणुत्तरा दुन्नि ॥ (आ. नि. गा. ४४)

*dupaēsāi durūttara, ēga paēsā aṇuttarā cēva .*

*caurō caurō ya disā, caurāi aṇattarā dunni .. (ā. ni. gā. 44)*

5. सगडुद्धी संठिआओ, महादिसाओ हवन्ति चत्तारि ।

मुत्तावली य चउरो, दो चेव हुन्ति रुयगनिभा ॥ (आ. नि. गा. ४६)

*sagaḍuddhī saṇṭhiāō, mahādisāō havanti cattāri .*

*muttāvalī ya caurō, dō cēva hunti ruyaganibhā .. (ā. ni. gā. 46)*

6. जस्स जओ आइच्चो, उदेइ सा पुव्वदिसा होइ ।

जंतो अ अत्थमेइ उ, अवरदिसा सा उ णायव्वा ॥४७॥

दाहिण पासंमि य, दाहिण दिसा उत्तरा उ वामेणं ।

एया चत्तारि दिसा, तावखित्ते उ अक्खाया ॥४८॥ (आ. नि. गा. ४७, ४८)

*jassa jaō āiccō, udēi sā puvvadisā hōi .*

*jatō a atthamēi u, avaradisā sā u ṇāyavvā ..47..*

*dāhiṇa pāsammi ya, dāhiṇa disā uttarā u vāmēṇam .*

*ēyā cattāri disā, tāvakhittē u akkhāyā ..48.. (ā. ni. gā. 47, 48)*

7. जे मंदरस्स पुव्वेण, मणुस्स दाहिणेण अवरेण ।

जे आवि उत्तरेणं सव्वेसिं उत्तरओ मेरु ॥४९॥

सव्वेसिं उत्तरेणं मेरु, लवणो य होइ दाहिणाओ ।

पुव्वेणं तु उदेइ, अवरेणं अत्थमइ सूरु ॥५०॥ (आ. नि. गा. ४९-५०)

*jē mandarassa puvvēṇa, maṇussā dāhiṇēṇa avarēṇa .  
jē āvi uttarēṇaṃ savvēsiṃ uttaraō mērū ..49..  
savvēsiṃ uttarēṇaṃ mērū, lavaṇō ya hōi dāhiṇāō .  
puvvēṇaṃ tu udēi, avarēṇaṃ atthamai sūrō ..50.. (ā.ni.gā.49-50)*

8. जत्थ जो पण्णवओ, कस्स वि साहइ दिसासु य णिमित्तं ।

जत्तो मुहो य ठाई, सा पुव्वा पच्छओ अवरा ॥५१॥ (आ. नि. गा. ५१)

*jaṭṭha jō paṇṇavaō, kassa vi sāhai disāsu ya ṇimittam .  
jaṭṭō muhō ya ṭhāī, sā puvvā pacchaō avarā ..51.. (ā. ni. gā. 51)*

9. दाहिणपासंमि उ दाहिण दिसा उत्तरा उ वामेणं ।

एयासिमन्तरेणं अण्णा चत्तारि विदिसाओ ॥५२॥

एयासिं चैव अट्ठण्हमन्तरा अट्ठ हुंति अण्णाओ । .....॥५३॥ (आ.नि.गा. ५२-५३)

*dāhiṇapāsammi u dāhiṇa disā uttarā u vāmēṇaṃ .  
ēyāsīmantarēṇaṃ aṇṇā cattāri vidisāō ..52..  
ēyāsīṃ cēva aṭṭhaṇhamantarā aṭṭha hunti aṇṇāō .....53.. (ā.ni.gā. 52-53)*

10. सोलस सरीर उस्सय बाहल्ला सव्व तिरिय दिसा ॥५३॥ (आ.नि.गा. ५३)

*sōlasa sarīra ussaya bāhallā savva tiriya disā ..53.. (ā.ni.gā. 53)*

11. पुव्वा य पुव्वदक्खिण दक्खिण तह दक्खिणावरा चैव ।

अवरा य अवरउत्तर उत्तर पुव्वुत्तरा चैव ॥५६॥ (आ.नि.गा. ५६)

*puvvā ya puvvadakkhiṇa dakkhiṇa taha dakkhiṇāvarā cēva .  
avarā ya avarauttara uttara puvvuttarā cēva ..56.. (ā.ni.gā. 56)*

12. सामुत्थाणी कविला खेलिज्जा खलु तहेव अहिधम्मा ।

परियाधम्मा य तहा साविती पण्णवित्ती य ॥५७॥ (आ.नि.गा. ५७)

*sāmutthāṇī kavilā khēlijjā khalu tahēva ahidhammā .  
pariyādhammā ya tahā sāvittī paṇṇavittī ya ..57.. (ā.ni.gā. 57)*

13. सुयं मे आउसं ! तेणं भगवया एवमक्खायं - इहमेगेसिं णो सण्णा भवइ । तं जहा - पुरत्थिमाओ वा दिसाओ आगओ अहमंसि, दाहिणाओ दिसाओ वा आगओ अहमंसि, पच्चत्थिमाओ वा दिसाओ आगओ अहमंसि, उत्तराओ वा दिसाओ आगओ अहमंसि, उड्ढाओ वा दिसाओ आगओ अहमंसि, अहो वा दिसाओ आगओ अहमंसि, अण्णयरीओ वा दिसाओ आगओ अणुदिसाओ वा आगओ अहमंसि, एवमेगेसिं णो णायं भवति ॥ सूत्र - १-२॥ ( आचारांगसूत्र, प्रथम श्रुतरकंध, प्रथमाध्ययन, सूत्र - १ -२)

*suyam mē āusam ! tēṇaṃ bhagavayā ēvamakkhāyaṃ - ihamēgēsīṃ ṇō saṇṇā bhavai . taṃ jahā - puratthimāō vā disāō āgaō ahamamsi, dāhiṇāō disāō vā*

*āgaō ahamam̐si, paccatthimāō vā disāō āgaō ahamam̐si, uttarāō vā disāō āgaō ahamam̐si, uḍḍhāō vā disāō āgaō ahamam̐si, ahō vā disāō āgaō ahamam̐si, aṇṇayariō vā disāō āgaō aṇudisāō vā āgaō ahamam̐si, ēvamēgēsīm̐ ṇō ṇāyam̐ bhavati .. Sūtra - 1-2..*

( Ācārāṅgasūtra, Prathama Śrutaskandha, Prathamādhyaṇa, Sūtra - 1 -2)



BUT ARISTOTLE HIMSELF BELIEVED THAT QUESTIONS CONCERNING THE HUMAN SOUL AND THE CONTEMPLATION OR GOD'S PERFECTION WERE MUCH MORE VALUABLE THAN INVESTIGATIONS OF THE MATERIAL WORLD.

WHEN ALL IN THE WORLD UNDERSTAND BEAUTY TO BE BEAUTIFUL, THEN UGLINESS EXISTS; WHEN ALL UNDERSTAND GOODNESS TO BE GOOD, THEN EVIL EXISTS.

THE NOTION THAT ALL OPPOSITES ARE POLAR—THAT LIGHT AND DARK, WINNING AND LOSING, GOOD AND EVIL, ARE MERELY DIFFERENT ASPECTS OF THE SAME PHENOMENON—IS ONE OF THE BASIC PRINCIPLES OF THE EASTERN WAY OF LIFE.

FRITJOF CAPRA

---

## 24. Celibacy: A Scientific Analysis

**T**oday AIDS has spread all over the world. For married men, the only preventive which can ward it off is the vow of sexual satisfaction confined to one's own life partner and for others, it is observance of celibacy (Brahmacarya). Today man is everywhere surrounded by deterioration which is mistaken for culture. Therefore, lessons on the importance of celibacy are as futile as music falling on deaf ears. But there is a class of society today which thinks about celibacy from physiological and hygienic view points and it is a good indication. The society today is so much dazzled by scientific achievements that it relies on scientific results as ultimate truth. But scientists of all branches admit that though they have revealed many secrets of nature, many more secrets are yet to be revealed. Therefore, no research in the field of science should be accepted as the ultimate or absolute truth.<sup>1</sup>

Generally, it is in the nature of human beings and for that matter of all animals to accept soon what is suitable to them. The instincts of food, fear, sex and possession are so strong in all living beings from beginningless time that they soon accept the thoughts that are suitable to these instincts. That is why the so-called researches of sexologists and the researches of psychologists like Freud are accepted sooner than researches showing the importance of celibacy. Freud says, "Desires should not be suppressed. Suppressions of desires create many perversions. If natural desires are suppressed, the suppressed desires make man perverted and mad. Desires should, therefore, not be suppressed."

Of course, these researches are not totally invalid or baseless. But they are only one side of the coin. The later half of their conclusions and statements is as under. Regarding celibacy, Freud himself says : Semen has a great strength. That strength should be well channelised. By observing celibacy mental/intellectual and physical strength should be increased. We should, therefore, also think of other side of the coin. In case of women they can preserve the sex hormones by observing the celibacy through which they attain youth forever. First, we shall talk of the scientific and medical experi-

ments showing the benefits of observing celibacy and then we shall think of scientific aspects of celibacy shown by great sages of ancient times.

In this connection 'Science of Regeneration', the book written by Raymond Bernard is worth reading. He says that man's sexual tendencies are fully controlled by endocrine glands. The endocrine glands produce sex hormones and they control other glands. Youth subsists on abundance of sex hormones in the blood. As endocrine glands decrease the production of sex hormones, we begin to experience old age and weakness. Semen is a treasure of inexhaustible strength. By protecting and preserving it man can maintain his energies and youth for a very long time.

Freud himself observed celibacy from the age of 40. The secret of life of a long-lived and physically and mentally strong man is, in most cases, the observance of celibacy. Great men of the world, Einstein, Leonardo da Vinci, Michelangelo, Isaac Newton, Morarji Desai etc. observed celibacy since youth, though they were householders. Plato also said that sportsmen and athletes should observe celibacy for a certain period before participating in sports.

If celibacy is not observed by body, speech or mind /sensorium, sex hormones flow out of the body of men and women. The sex hormones are mostly made of lecithin, phosphorus, nitrogen, and iodine, the components which are very useful to life, body and brain. The latest research works show that the chemical, lecithin nourishes the brain. The test of blood of mad men in lunatic asylums shows that lecithin is almost absent. Studies of their past lives show that in thier youth, most of them had fallen in a bad company. Indulgence in excessive sexual plays is dangerous to a house-holder's life. Sometime one has to give up hope for life as a result of excessive sexual plays.

Modern science does not lag behind in making experiments for regaining youth, rejuvenation etc. All those experiments can produce energy in body only for three or four years. These experiments have proved it beyond doubt that in order to sustain, youth endocrine glands should be kept active and sex hormones in blood should be abundant. The sex hormones should not be made to flow out of the body as a result of failing to keep or preserve celibacy either physically, vocally or mentally.<sup>2</sup>

In these days of excessive indulgence in sexual enjoyments, is it

possible to observe perfect celibacy physically, vocally or mentally ? Most of the people will answer this question in the negative. But in my opinion, the observance of celibacy is very simple and natural if the nine rules of celibacy, which in Jain terminology, are called nine guptis ( restrictions related to activities of body, speech and mind) of celibacy are rightly and strictly observed. The nine rules of celibacy are as under : <sup>3</sup>

1. One should live in a place devoid of woman (man), a beast or a eunuch.

2. A lonely man/woman should not tell religious stories or give sermon to a lonely woman/man. A man should refrain from talks about a woman and a woman should refrain from talks about a man.

3. A woman should not sit by a man on a common seat. As long as 48 minutes, a man should not sit on a seat left by a woman and as long as three hours a woman should not sit on a seat left by a man.

4. A woman should not look steadily at eyes, face and other organs of man's body nor should a man look steadily at eyes, face and other organs of a woman's body.

5. One should leave the place, where words of amorous plays of a woman and a man from the other side of the wall are heard.

6. One should abstain from recollections of amorous plays indulged in previously.

7. One should abstain from very oily, nutritive and infatuating food.

8. One should not take in excess even the dry, unoiled or arid food.

9. One should not attractively and artistically cut or decorate hairs on the head, hairs on the body, finger-nails or toe-nails. One should refrain from cosmetic treatment and bodily decoration.

Celibacy has a great importance in the Svāmīnārāyaṇa religion also. Śrī Niṣkulanandajī of that religion has made a poem on the nine rules of celibacy. This shows the importance of celibacy.

The nine rules of celibacy are perfectly scientific and their scientific analysis can be given as under:

The first rule of celibacy says that a monk or nun should stay in a place,



which is uninhibited by the opposite sex or a eunuch or a beast etc. This rule is very important and full of scientific secrets.

Every living being has electricity of a very subtle power. In the sea, there is a fish named electric eel.<sup>4</sup> It produces a powerful electric current. Where there is electric power, there is magnetic power. Thus we all have bio-electro-magnetic power.<sup>5</sup> Therefore, every living being has his bio-electro-magnetic field. Scientists have proved this. It is a general rule of magnetism that like poles repel and unlike poles attract, if they are within the magnetic field of each other.

Men and women have their bio-electro-magnetic poles in the opposite order. Eunuchs can also have their magnetic poles, but in my opinion, they are not definite because magnetic poles depend on changes in mind, i.e. thoughts. When an eunuch's mind changes, its magnetic poles also change. The sexual excitement of eunuchs is great, and therefore, their magnetic power and magnetic field are very strong. Changes of poles go on in eunuchs, like an alternate current of electricity. If, therefore, a monk lives in a place inhabited by a woman, a beast or an eunuch, on account of attraction of unlike poles, it becomes very difficult for him to observe celibacy. In order to observe celibacy fully, it is necessary for a monk to stay in a place uninhabited by a woman, an eunuch or a beast.

The second rule of celibacy is that a lonely monk should not tell religious stories to lonely women and a man should avoid talking about a woman and a woman should avoid talking about a man.

When a lonely man talks to a lonely woman, generally the woman looks at the man and the man looks at the woman. Since the bio-electro-magnetic poles of a man and a woman are in the opposite order, when they look at each other, the electro-magnetic lines emerging from their poles, join together and as their electro-magnetic fields join together, their bio-electro-magnetic attraction becomes stronger. In these circumstances, if their electromagnetic waves are of unequal frequency, their mutual attraction also becomes unequal. If the wavelength and the amplitude are not proportionate, the thoughts in their minds mutually differ from each other. As a result, the circuit of magnetic-electric current remains incomplete. But if the electro-magnetic waves emerging from them have equal frequency, their power of attraction also becomes equal. If the wavelength and amplitude of the

waves are equal, the circuit of the magnetic-electric current is also completed. As a result, strong mental attraction is produced and that becomes ultimately the cause of fall of a self-restrained man.

It should be noted here that according to the modern physics, the energy of bio-electro-magnetic waves, which in Jain terminology are called Vargaṇā (paramāṇu-units of matter), depends upon their frequency. This can be shown in physics by the equation  $E = nhf$ . Here  $E$  denotes energy,  $f$  denotes frequency,  $n$  denotes integers i.e. 1, 2, 3, 4....etc., and  $h$  is the Planck's constant. i.e. The greater the frequency, the greater is the energy. The kind of bio-electro-magnetic waves depends on the wavelength and amplitude of the waves. i.e. The wavelength and amplitude of common thoughts may be equal.

Further in the fourth rule of celibacy, it is stated that a woman should not look steadily at the eyes, face and other organs of a man nor should a man look steadily at the eyes, face and other organs of a woman. For that also, this is the reason.

According to the third rule a woman and man should not sit on a common seat. Moreover, for as long as 48 minutes a celibate man should not sit on a seat left by a woman and for as long as three hours a woman should not sit on a seat left by a man.

While a man sits at a place, an atmosphere is formed around his body. The atmosphere can be good or bad according to the thoughts of the person's mind. Moreover, invisible particles also drop from the body of the person. A mushroom, which is called Anantakāya according to Jain scriptures, sprouts up anywhere in the rainy season. If its upper portion is cut off, and put up side down on a piece of paper for a while, the particles emitted from the mushroom, will make a circular figure there. Similarly, particles drop from the body of a man or a woman and lie there for a long. <sup>6</sup> These particles produce a bad effect on our mind and defile it. That is why this rule is included in the nine rules of celibacy.

The fifth rule of celibacy says that one should keep away from a place near a small house where the words of amorous plays of a man and woman on the other side of the wall, are heard and the sixth rule says that one should abstain from recollections of amorous plays indulged in former life as

a house holder.

Both these types of activities defile the bio-electro-magnetic field of a person. Really speaking pure or impure, good or bad thoughts of our mind make our bio-electro-magnetic field good or bad.

When electricity is passed through steel, it also becomes magnet and, like a magnet, it has its own magnetic field. But a peculiar characteristic of the bio-electro-magnetic field of living beings is that they can expand or contract it to any extent and in any direction as the amoeba can expand or contract its pseudopodia. Really speaking, according to the belief of Jain philosophy, the magnetic field is formed by Manō Vargaṇā (paramāṇu-units of material particles) emitted by sensorium, as the sensorium is made of material particles. When a man looks at a particular object or person in a particular direction, his magnetic field extends as far as the object or person. Of course, mathematically, the magnetic field of any living or non-living thing extends as long as infinite distance but it has very little influence on very distant objects.

When a man thinks of sensual pleasures with a woman, his mind attracts the woman's mind and thoughts of mind create attraction between unlike poles of each other. Their mind gets united, the circuit of bio-electromagnetic current is completed, misconduct is unknowingly and invisibly committed and there is a mental breach of celibacy.

Electricity is an energy and it is stored in a battery. It has positive (+ve) and negative (-ve) poles. The chemical substance is between the poles and this energy is stored in it. Unless the positive pole and the negative pole are joined, the energy is not used. But as soon as the poles are connected, the energy begins to be used and ultimately it is exhausted. Similarly, inexhaustible and undivided energy is accumulated in the world in the form of men and women. Men and women are two poles of it. When these two poles are connected in one way or another, energy comes to be used. This connection is established in five ways: (1) through the actual sexual intercourse, (2) only through touch, (3) through eyes, (4) through words and (5) through mind or sensorium. This is why scripturists have forbidden one who fully and sincerely observes celibacy to touch a person of opposite sex, to look steadily at him or her, to talk with him or her for a long time or even to think of the person of opposite sex.

The description of sexual pleasures of celestial beings given in the fourth chapter of the ancient Jain scripture, 'The Tattvārtha Sūtra' supports this statement. Śrī Umāsvāti, the author of the 'Tattvārtha Sūtra' says that gods who live up to Saudharma, the first heaven and Iśāna, the second heaven satisfy their sex urge with actual sexual intercourse. Of the higher types of gods, some enjoy sexual pleasures only through touch, some enjoy only through eyes, some enjoy them through words and some enjoy them only through sensorium.<sup>7</sup>

If the other person is only imaginary, is energy used up? Generally, there is not a living person in front of him who reads a sexual novel or a sexual part of a novel. In his mind there are only imaginary characters imagined by the novelist. Does one lose his energy by thinking of the imaginary characters? This can be replied in the affirmative on the basis of the modern science and ancient narrative literature.

In ancient stories, we come across incidents which show that, sages of distinguished power created with their thinking power or will power special characters of a young girl etc. for a particular purpose and when the purpose was fulfilled, they dissolved what they had created. The same thing happens here at a subtler level. The strong will-power of the reader of a novel creates an imaginary character invisibly with subtle pudgalas i.e. paramāṇus of the surrounding atmosphere and as soon as the mental association of the reader with the character, joins both the poles of the bio-electro-magnetic current, the electro-magnetic circuit is completed and consequently the reader's energy is consumed. That is why they who observe self-restraint should abstain from reading very sexual novels or literature.

For observance of celibacy, very oily, nutritive and stimulative food should be abstained from. For every living organism, food is an important source of energy, which is necessary for life. Generally, a monk should not take milk, curds, ghee, jaggery, oil and sweets for his food. The Jain scripturists call all these six substances to be infatuating food items because they can produce infatuation in the body. But if a monk is constantly engaged in study, thinking, meditation and specially learning and teaching and if he is physically weak, scripturists allow him to take all the six kinds of infatuating food items with his guru's permission. Food should be eaten only to get necessary strength of the body. Infatuation is also caused by getting more than neces-

sary physical strength. For observance of celibacy, one should, therefore, not take very oily and nutritive food.

Similarly, food without milk, curds, ghee, oil, jaggery, sweets etc., taken in excess, also leads to physical deterioration and inactiveness. Therefore, even dry food must be taken in a limited quantity.

Semen is an energy. If the semen produced in our body is prevented from being wasted, it gets sublimated. To put it in terms of modern science, according to the natural arrangement in our body, semen itself is again absorbed in blood, reaches the brain and ultimately fast develops in the form of intellect and memory. Spiritually speaking, this is the sublimation of energy.

Celibates are also forbidden to shave or cut attractively and artistically hairs on the body, hairs on the head, finger-nails, toe-nails and to take cosmetic treatment because celibates naturally have a bright personality, full of vitality. Their celibacy is their bathing and chastity is fragrance. They, therefore, do not need a bath and a cosmetic treatment. If they take bath and cosmetic treatment, they may look bright and shiny and become a centre of attraction for others. As a result, the magnetic field i.e. sensorium of some other person may become defiled by inauspicious thoughts. A contact with a person of defiled magnetic field may soon defile the magnetic field of a celibate person. A celibate, therefore, should not decorate his body, nor should he take bath or cosmetic treatment.

Even in these days, it is possible to observe physical and mental celibacy, if one strictly follows these nine rules.

It is said that the credulous god Śaṅkara opened his third eye and with flames of fire shooting out from it, he reduced Kāmadēva to ashes. Thinking scientifically about this, we know that our endocrine glands are controlled by the centres of our brain below the Brahmaraṇḍhra (crown cakra) called third eye (Ājñā Cakra) i.e. in the straight line in the place of third eye of Śaṅkara. With his spiritual practice, if the ascetic makes these centres inactive, desire for sexual enjoyments, can be thoroughly eradicated. In this sense, any ascetic can even today thoroughly eradicate, with his "third eye", the desire of sexual enjoyments.

It is also my experience that abundant strength for observing devoted celibacy is obtained by keeping company with saints who observe devoted

celibacy and by remembering the names of such great persons who lived in the near past.

I take pride in writing that His Holiness Rev. Gurudēva Śāsanasamrāt Ācārya Śrīvijaya Nēmisūrīśvarajī Mahārāja, who lived in near past and was very benevolent to us all was highly illuminated with his devoted celibacy and the daily prayer that we offer to him gives us the strength to observe celibacy. He was born in Mahuva (Saurashtra, India) and in Mahuva, he died also. As luck would have it this article comes to an end in proximity of his majestic foot-prints engraved in marble, in the Upāśraya erected at the place of his death.

In conclusion, I hope that this article will remove false notion of people regarding celibacy and all will properly observe celibacy according to their capacity and will make their lives sublime.

#### References:

1. Truth is generally beleived to be absolute, however in the domain of science, the results of scientific investigations do not always fit into this expectation. Grinnal says that the reality described by science is not complete or absolute since changes occur with alternations in scientific attitude. ( Everyman's Science, 1993, p. 131, Published by ISCA Calcutta. )

2. On account of restrictions of a monk's life, I donot enter into a detailed analysis of this, but I suggest that the readers may read, for other scientific aspects, Shri Kanti bhatt's article 'Advantages of Celibacy' (second part) in 'Jñāna Gaṭhariyā' column in the Shatadal supplement of 'Gujarat samachar' of wednesday, February, 17, 1993.

3. 'Śramaṇakriyā Nā Sūtrō' (ārtha sahita) p. 260.

4. In an acquarium, a fish named 'Electric Eel' is preseved. This fish produces an electric current of 600 volts and with that electricity, the board 'Electric Eel' is lighted.

5. In a foreign country, a woman had an amazing electric energy. If an electric bulb was put into her hand, it got lighted up. This is what I read long ago.

6. Now, a photographic technique has been invented. If someone sits at a place for some time and then goes away and if a photograph of his former place is taken, his figure and aura stand out in the photograph. In future, this tech-

nique will be used to identify criminals.

7. कायप्रवीचारा आ ऐशानात् ॥८॥ शेषाः स्पर्श-रूप-शब्द-मनःप्रवीचारा द्वयोर्द्वयोः ॥९॥

*kāyapraṇīcārā ā aiśānāt ..8.. śeṣāḥ sparśa-rūpa-śabda-  
manaḥpraṇīcārā dvayōrdvayōḥ ..9..* (The Tattvārtha Sūtra, chapter 4, Sūtra 8-9.)

This will be fully understood by reading a detailed explanation and commentary of these Sūtras.



FOR AN UNDERSTANDING OF ANY OF THE PHILOSOPHIES  
TO BE DESCRIBED , IT IS IMPORTANT TO REALIZE THAT  
THEY ARE RELIGIOUS IN ESSENCE. THEIR MAIN AIM IS  
THE DIRECT MYSTICAL EXPERIENCE OF REALITY, AND  
SINCE THIS EXPERIENCE IS RELIGIOUS BY NATURE, THEY  
ARE INSEPARABLE FROM RELIGION. MORE THAN FOR  
ANY OTHER TRADITION THIS IS TRUE FOR HINDUISM.

FRITJOF CAPRA

---

## 25. Advantages And Secrets Of Penance : The Scientific View-point

**T**he Jainism prescribes various means to follow dharma for spiritual evolution of soul. Whatever chief means you adopt, other means also become useful in a subsidiary way.

A very important means of self-realization is penance. Penance is chiefly of two kinds : External penance and internal penance. Century after century non-Jain philosophers pondered over the external penance prescribed in Jain scriptures and every time they presented it as mortification of body or suppression of self or suppression of senses. Even in the scientific age of today, we are overawed by splendour and prosperity of external penance but they who call it as useless and hypocritical are not few. Really speaking, though external penance restrains sensual pleasures and desires, purification of soul or thought or mind is not attained because external penance is not combined with internal penance. The external penance alone can, therefore, not lead one to salvation. The kinds and rules of external penance, shown in the Jain scriptures are full of secrets of science. Though they cannot lead one to salvation in the present era, they are very beneficial from the physical and hygienic view-points.

First of all, let us think of abstention from taking food at night.

Various magazines etc. often write about scientific advantages of abstention from taking food at night. It is, therefore, not necessary to deal with it in detail here. Generally, physical activities and exertion are not engaged in at night and therefore, the function of metabolism is very slow and therefore, he who eats food at night probably suffers from indigestion and diseases of gas. At night in the absence of sun-light minute insects are born in the atmosphere and do a lot of harm. Only the sun-light, having mysterious power or energy, can destroy atmospheric pollution and useless insects and prevent the production of new insects. Jain scriptures forbid to take food at night, including forty-eight minutes before sunset and forty-eight minutes



after sunrise. At sunrise and sunset, small insects namely a flies, mosquitoes etc. do a lot of harm. Since insects start causing trouble at sunset and stop causing trouble at sunrise, they are especially numerous at those times.

Generally, taking food only twice a day, is not regarded as a penance. But from practical view-point, taking food only twice a day (Biyāśana) is regarded as a penance. Since food is taken at a sitting only twice a day, there is a complete abstention from taking food and water at night and only boiled water is used during day-time, from the hygienic view-point there is no possibility of diseases being spread through insects in water. By taking food only twice a day one abstains from irregular food habits and unwholesome and improper food.

Ēkāśana means taking meal at a sitting and only one time a day. Nothing else except boiled water is taken throughout the day. The new generation habituated to take tobacco and flavourings (masala) every now and then, finds it difficult but it is not at all difficult for Jains, living life of regular habits. If food is taken regularly only once a day, the body gets complete rest at night. Therefore, blood and oxygen are needed in a very small quantity for the functioning of various parts of the body and the heart and lungs are not over strained. The whole body gets complete rest. A wonderful alertness is experienced in doing morning duties. After a good mental, intellectual and physical exertion taken during the day, rest is needed. In a one time meal or a two time meal a day, one takes food of one's own choice but abstains from food described in Jain scriptures as Anantakāya i.e. modifications of various roots e.g. potato, sugar-bit, green ginger, onion etc. unwholesome and unfit-to-be eaten. One does not, therefore, fall a victim to deteriorations produced by all kinds of unfit-to-be eaten, unwholesome and an anger-provoking (Tāmasika) food.

Food is chiefly of three kinds : Sāttvika ( conducive to the highest of the three qualities of nature), Rājasika ( conducive to the second of the three qualities of nature) and Tāmasika ( conducive to the lowest of the three qualities of nature). During penance of a one time meal a day or a two time meal a day, generally, limited Sāttvika food should be taken. Sometimes, Rājasika food also taken for the sake of taste. But one should fully abstain from Tāmasika food because it is anger-provoking, nutritive and stimulating. He who lives according to norms of morality described in Jain scriptures, can

easily and naturally abstain from Tāmasika food. His health is not, therefore, at all deteriorated unless he is careless and fails to follow even the general rules for maintaining health.

Āyambila is a special type of penance, in which tasteless and dry food is taken only once a day. In this penance, six infatuating food items (Vigais) namely milk, curds, ghee, jaggery (sugar), oil and sweets are abstained from. Turmeric and chillies are also not used. Spiritually speaking, by this type of penance, the sense of taste come under control and therefore, all the other senses are conquered, the four spiritual defilements (Kaṣāyas) and mind are conquered. As a result, the bondage of karma is reduced and when there is a lot of cleansing off karma, one approaches salvation.

This type of penance has many other advantages, too. Since ghee, milk, curds, jaggery and sweets which produce mucus and green vegetables which generally stimulate bile are fully abstained from in this type of penance, mucus and bile are tranquilized by practising this type of penance.

From the Ayurvedic view-point, the root of all diseases lie in the imbalance of gas, bile and mucus elements created in the body. In everyday life, food causing mucus and bile is taken excessively. The proportion of mucus and bile, therefore, rises in the body and health is endangered. If it is possible the penance of Āyambila should be practised four or five times a month. Scripturists have greatly obliged us by prescribing performance of the nine day penance ( continuous Āyambilas) in the month of Caitra and Āśvina . And this is the secret of it. The month of Caitra and Āśvina fall in the transition period of two seasons and in the transition period, changes occur in health. If discrimination is not used regarding wholesome and unwholesome in this season, one sometimes becomes a victim to a long-term illness. It is said in Ayurveda : *vaidyānām śāradī mātā, pitā tu kusumākaraḥ.* (वैद्यानां शारदी माता, पिता तु कुसुमाकरः । ) ( For physicians, Śārada - one of the six seasons of the year covering Āśvina and Kārtika months- is as good as mother and Vasant i.e. spring- one of the six seasons of the year covering the Caitra and Vaiśākha months - is as good as father.) It is in these two seasons that people fall ill and the doctors and physicians earn a lot. If possible, the penance of nine days - Āyambila , from 7th day of the first half of Caitra and Āśvina , to 15th day of first of Caitra and Āśvina , should be performed.

Fast is a distinct type of penance of Jainism. This penance is chiefly of two types : 1. Tivihāra Upavāsa means taking only boiled water during the day time. 2. Cauvihāra Upavāsa means nothing can be taken as food and water also are abstained from. According to the Jain tradition a fast begins in the evening of the previous day and it is completed in the morning of the next day. It means that a fast is of thirty-six hours in all. In the fast of the Jain tradition, tea, milk, coffee, fruits, sweets made of condensed milk or dry fruits as in fasts of other traditions are not taken nor is it a symbolic fasts of 12 hours from 8 a. m. to 8 p. m. observed in order to realise some political object. Such a symbolic fast is begun after a full breakfast in the morning and after the end of the fast in the evening a full dinner is taken. But in Tivihāra Upavāsa of the Jain tradition, only boiled water is taken from 10 a.m. to 6 p.m. A Cauvihāra Upavāsa is complete abstinence for full 36 hours from the evening of the previous day to the morning of the next day and not a single drop of water is taken i.e. water is also fully abstained from.

There are only three necessities of life, food, water and air. It is necessary to take needed wholesome food regularly in order to keep the body fit. If less food is taken or no food is taken, the body becomes weaker and weaker and in the long run it becomes unable to do other activities. For digestion of food, water is very indispensable. The body contains 75 to 80 % water. If water is reduced in body on account of passing stools or vomiting, blood-pressure fast begins to decrease and the body becomes uneasy. One has, therefore, to take glucose-water etc., to prevent dehydration. Water is also, therefore, very indispensable for subsistence of life. Oxygen is very indispensable for process of metabolism. By combustion of fat and sugar through oxygen, we get necessary energy. Oxygen is taken from air through breathing. Air contains nearly 20 % oxygen. Not even for a few minutes can a human being nor any living being nor even a plant live without air. Without water one can live for some hours and without food one can live for some days. From the scientific view-point, a fast of many days can, therefore, be observed by taking only water and no food. Without taking any food or water, a fast can be observed only for four or five days and not for a longer period.

Besides being a means of self-purification and self-control, a fast is a means of purification of the body and of control of internal activities of body. By observing a fast one disposes of the internal solid waste of the body. Bile,

mucus and gas produced in the body are controlled or thrown out and the body is purified. Some people vomit bile on the second or third day of fasting. Really speaking, the surplus bile in the body is vomitted out and the body feels relief. During a fast only boiled water is taken and therefore, the surplus faeces is excreted. Since they get no food, worms etc. themselves go out. And if there is mucus accumulation, it is removed. Since surplus bile and surplus mucus go out of the body, gas, bile and mucus are balanced. Therefore, at least a one day fast should be observed in a fortnight or in a month. That is why scripturists have mentioned a one-day fast as a fortnightly atonement. Generally, the body of virtuous and self-restrained monks and nuns who constantly observe a fast of three days or more is occupied by gods and goddesses. He who performs penance is helped by gods and goddesses. If an ordinary man observed a long fast of eight days, eleven days, fifteen days, thirty days or forty-five days, he generally becomes physically weak or lean and incompetent but by virtue of his will power and spiritual power he can do without food for many days. Some people can abstain from both food and water as long as 16 days. Those who have even an ordinary knowledge of science will find this very surprising. But thinking further on this point, we find that our body takes three days in adjusting with a new situation. During the first three days it opposes the new situation. During these first three days, its physical and mental functions are disturbed but when the reaction of the body does not get any external response, the body gets adjusted to the new situation. According to this principle, during routine days our body gets heat and energy from the food and water that we take. But it does not consume fat and glucose lying within the body, it is so accustomed. When we observe a fast or an Āyambila, our body tries to get heat and energy from the food and water taken from outside, but since it is totally stoped to take food and water, the body resists the new situation in the form of hunger etc. And if our will-power is not strong, we break the fast. If we do not break the fast and continue to observe fast, our body instead of getting heat and energy from outside, gets necessary heat and energy from fat, glucose etc. stored in the body. This arrangement is settled in three days. They who go to America from India and come to India from America take three days to get the biological clock of their body adjusted to the new surroundings. In medical terminology it is called 'jet lag'. During the three days, they sleep during day time and keep awake at night, they do not become hungry during day

time but at night as before. The mind also remains up set and disturbed for sometime. That is why the ambassadors who go to foreign country are instructed not to take decisions on policy matter or make confidential deliberations for three days. This is the reason why one does not feel hungry or weak after the first three days of his fast. During the three days, the body makes alternative arrangements for getting heat and energy.

In short, the penance of Navakāraśī (taking food and water after 48 minutes of sunrise), Cauvihāra (not taking food and water etc. during the whole night) Biyaśaṇa (taking food only twice a day), Ēkāśaṇa (taking food only once a day), Āyambila (taking only once a day, food without ghee, oil, milk, curds, jaggery, sweets etc.), a fast of 36 hours (Upavāsa), etc. prescribed in the Jain tradition, is fully scientific from the view points of medical science and physiology. Besides spiritual benefits, it brings numerous advantages of physical health. They should not be overlooked. Even if one is allergic to the words 'religion' and 'religious', the penance described above and its rules should be observed in the name of science and health.



IT MOVES. IT MOVES NOT.  
IT IS FAR. IT IS NEAR.  
IT IS WITHIN ALL THIS,  
AND IT IS OUTSIDE OF ALL THIS.

ISHA UPANISHAD 5.

---

## 26. Prohibition Of Fresh Vegetables On Parva-Tithis - Auspicious Days : A Scientific View-Point

**F**rom very ancient times Jains are famous all over the world for their food habits and life-style. All their religious doctrines and rules of food habits and life-style are perfectly scientific because they were not introduced by an ordinary person. After having obtained omniscience, Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra expounded them for the greatest welfare of not only his disciples, monks and nuns and laymen and laywomen but also for the greatest welfare of the entire human race and the whole living world. If they are scrupulously and wisely observed, they, no doubt, secure self-welfare. By observing these rules, many living beings secured self-welfare and ultimately attained the final liberation. Ancient scriptures give such illustrations.

Among many rules of food habits prevalent in the Jain tradition, there is a rule in the Śvētāmbara Idolatrous sect that forbids the use of fresh vegetables (greens) on the twelve parva-tithis (the second, fifth, eighth, eleventh, fourteenth and fifteenth days of the bright half and dark half of every month) or five parva-tithis (the fifth, eighth and fourteenth days of the bright half and the eight and fourteenth days of the dark half) of every month, the seventh to fifteenth days of the bright half of the months of Caitra, Āśvina, Kārtika, Phāgaṇa and Āṣāḍha and eight days of Paryuṣaṇa parva. This tradition is not new. It is many centuries old and it has authenticity of Āgamas. In the book of life of ten śrāvakas, entitled "Ānanda-sundara" ' composed in the first half of the sixteenth century of Vikram era, there is a reference to Parva-tithis as under :

पर्वाणि सन्ति सर्वज्ञैर्भाषितानि जिनागमे ॥२६४॥

सांवत्सरं चतुर्मासत्रयं चाष्टाह्निकाद्वयम् । मासगं पर्वषट्कं वा, पक्षगा पञ्चपर्व्यपि ॥२६५॥

एतेषु निरतीचार-पञ्चाचारपरो नरः । शुभं परभवायुष्कं, बध्नाति शुभकर्म च ॥२६६॥

यदुक्तं महानिशीथे - भयवं ! बीया पमुहासु पव्वतिहीसु विहियं धम्माणुट्ठाणं किं फलं हवइ ? गोयमा ! बहु फलं हवइ । जम्हा एयासु पव्वतिहीसु पाएणं जीवो परभवाउयं कम्मं समजणइ, तम्हा सावएणं

पृ. २

सुपुष्पाणि सति सवर्द्धिः सोषिता निजनागामाः दस्यो वकरं वत्तुमिदं वयं चान्द्रादिकं हयं मासं गोपवर्षिद्वे वा पक्षगापंच पक्षिणाः हवणत  
 सुनिरतीवारपयानारपयानरः सुतं परतवायुकाबभ्रमिस्तु न कर्म वा ॥ दध्याऽक्तं श्रीमद्वानिषा न यद्वीयापुसुदसुषुपञ्चतिद्विद्वि  
 द्विदधमापुद्गाणि किं फले देव इत्यायमाः ब्रह्मस्तव द्वाः इत्यायमाः सुपुद्गसिदुसुपुण्णं द्वीवापरं न वा उयकममम क्रिण्डत इत्यामाव  
 पाणसा विद्यापसाज्जणासाज्जणी एवाञ्जनानां विदीविण ॥ तावादिदाण्डधमापुद्गाण सुदपरिणामाण कायबालाञ्जनत्राणि ॥ सावसु  
 कान्तपत्र सुपापसाढाङ्गिणमपतवानि ॥ अहमिदं उहसीसु ॥ नियासणव विष्णुपास विष्ठापना कच्चाण्डाणि स्वउदयं सुमीसि वाम

A reference of Ānanda Sundara written in 1549 Vikram Era, depicting the life of ten Śrāvakas, mentions about Parva-tithis and prohibition regarding eating of life containing fruits, fresh/green vegetables on Parva-tithis.

पृ. २२

= इति पृ. २२

इनासु वतं गात्रिदिवमं इरगाः पञ्च अखिकाः लाङ्गनादाः धाः धर्मं दुष्टय उअकः तंच सत्ता का करे एव नानाधर्मं व्यावययत्ता पण्डित सीयाद्या  
 पंचपक्षिमासमदृति यालाः सचाः मावद्युः नमस्त्रिज्ञाः त्यागं ताः खवना वत्याण एतज्जागतनात्ता नानाधिष्ठागुगमनसु सुषुपवसिद्विधि  
 पंचपरासिधुपटं कं मभ्यपठत तस्य दधिमीरंगमिधु तं दुष्टना वनात्वा का वत्तु विधिम धारं स्मारं स्मारं नमस्त्रिद्याः ॥ एतं प्रतिपद्ये विनेलीनात

[Curtis : L. D. Institute of Indology, Ahmedabad-380 009]

सावियाए साहुणा साहुणीए वा अन्नेण वा जीवेणं तवो विहाणाइं धम्माणुट्ठाणं सुहपरिणामेणं कायव्वं !

*parvāṇi santi sarvajñairbhāṣitāni jināgamē ..264..*

*sāmvatsaram caturmāsatrayaṃ cāṣṭāhnikādvayam .*

*māsagam parvaṣaṭkaṃ vā, pakṣagā pañcaparvyapi ..265..*

*ētēsu niratīcāra-pañcācāraparō naraḥ .*

*śubham parabhavāyuṣkaṃ, badhnāti śubhakarma ca ..266..*

*yaduktam mahānīśīthē - bhayavam ! biyā pamuhāsu pavvatihīsu vihiyaṃ dhammāpuṭṭhāṇaṃ kiṃ phalaṃ havi ? gōyamā ! bahu phalaṃ havi . jamhā ēyāsu pavvatihīsu pāēṇaṃ jīvō parabhavāuyam kammam samajaṇai, tamhā sāvaēṇaṃ sāviyāē sāhuṇā sāhuṇīē vā annēṇa vā jīvēṇaṃ tavō vihaṇāiṃ dhammāpuṭṭhāṇaṃ suhapariṇāmēṇaṃ kāyavvaṃ .*

"In Āgama scriptures, Omniscient Tīrthaṅkaras have enumerated parvas thus : six eight-day-festivals which are as under: 1. The Paryuṣaṇā festival, 2, 3, 4. three eight-day-festivals of the month of Kārtika, Phāgaṇa and Āṣāḍha, 5-6. two eternal (Śāśvatī) eight-day-festivals (though they contain nine days) of months Caitra and Āsvina. These are all called Aṭṭhaī i.e. eight-day-festivals. There are six parva-tithis in a month or five parva-tithis in a fortnight, ten parva-tithis in a month. On these auspicious days, a human being perhaps acquires the life-span for next birth and other auspicious karma for the next birth.

It is said in the Mahānīśīthasūtra, "O Lord ! What is the result of observing religious rules on parva-tithis such as the second day etc. of each fortnight etc.?

Gautama ! The result attained is great. A living being probably binds āyuṣya (life-span) of the next birth on these days of parva-tithis. Laymen, laywomen, monks and nuns should therefore, perform penance etc. with auspicious thoughts."

In the same scripture, there is a further verse as under :

द्वितीयाद्याः पञ्च पक्षे, मासे षट् तिथयोऽथवा । सावद्यारम्भसच्चित्तत्यागं तास्वेव भावयेः ॥

*dvitīyādyāḥ pañca pakṣē, māsē ṣaṭ tithayo'thavā .*

*sāvadyārambhasaccittatyāgaṃ tāsvēva bhāvayēḥ ..*

"On the five parva-tithis (the second-day etc.) in a fortnight or ten parva-



tithis in a month, one should abstain from sinful activities and from eating what possesses life."

What is the reason, why six parva-tithis are mentioned of a month and five parva-tithis are mentioned of a fortnight here, is not explained. But in the Śrāddhadinakṛtya Sūtra written by Ācārya Śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī Mahārāja and in the vṛtti written by him, there is a context of six parva-tithis of a month as under :

मूलम् छहं तिहीण मज्झमि का तिही अज्ज वासरे ? किं वा कल्लाणगं अज्ज लोगनाहाण संतिं  
॥२१॥

स्वोपज्ञवृत्ति - मासाभ्यन्तर इति गम्यते । षण्णां तिथीनां सितेतराष्टमी-चतुर्दशी-पूर्णिमाऽमावास्या लक्षणानां मध्ये का तिथिरद्यवासरे ?

( श्राद्धदिनकृत्यसूत्रम् - स्वोपज्ञवृत्तिविभूषितम् - - ग्रन्थकाराः श्रीदेवेन्द्रसूरयः )

mūlam- chaṇham tihīṇa majjhammi kā tihī aṇṇa vāsare ? kiṃ vā kallāṇagaṃ  
aṇṇa lōgaṇāhāṇa santiyaṃ ..21..

svōpajñavṛtti - māsābhyantara iti gamyatē . ṣaṇṇāṃ tithīnāṃ sitētarāṣṭamī-  
caturdaśī-pūrṇimā'māvāsyā lakṣaṇānāṃ madhyē kā tithiradyavāsare ?

( Śrāddhadinakṛtyasūtram by śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī )

"Of the six parva tithis, the eighth days of the bright half and the dark half, the fourteenth days of the bright half and the dark half and fifteenth days of the bright half and dark half, which parva-tithi is today ?"

Here, the fifth days of the bright half and the dark half of the month are not considered in the six parva-tithis of the month. There is no clarification regarding the five parva-tithis of each fortnight. Still however, the second, the fifth, the eighth, the eleventh and the fourteenth day are perhaps included in the five parva-tithis of a each fortnight. The full moon and the new moon day following the fourteenth day of each half of the month successively without interruption and for that reason they perhaps not regarded as parva-tithis.

Since fresh vegetables (greens) possess life, one should abstain from the use of greens even as one's own food in order to avoid the hiṃsā (violence) of greens and other moving organisms living under their shelter.

It needs to be made clear here that it is not absolutely compulsory that all

laymen and laywomen should abstain from green vegetables on all parva-tithis. That is why parva-tithis are differently enumerated. Some laymen and laywomen observe five parva-tithis in a month, some observe six, some observe ten or twelve parva-tithis.

The point is, on parva-days, one should do as little sin and as much auspicious deeds as possible.

All kinds of green vegetables possess life. Flour, rice, split pulses, etc. do not possess life. Wheat, barley, pulses like moong, matha, adada (black beans), grams, chola, tuver, (pigeon pea) etc. may or may not possess life because they themselves become lifeless after some time of their complete growth. The following statements are made about them in the chapter captioned 'Dhānyānām Abijātva Dvāra' in the book Pravacanāsārōddhāra :

जव १ जवजव २ गोधूम ३ सालि ४ वीहि ५ धन्नाण कोट्ठयाइसु ।  
 खिविऊण पिहियाणं कित्ताणं मुदियाणं च ॥९९५॥  
 उक्कोसेणं ठिइ होइ, तिन्नि वरिसाणि तयाणु एएसि ।  
 विद्धं सिज्जइ जोणी, तत्तो जायइ अबीयत्तं ॥९९६॥  
 तिल १ मुग २ मसूर ३ कलाय ४ मास ५ चवलय ६ कुलत्थ ७ तुवरीणं ८ ।  
 तह कसिणचणय ९ वल्लाण १० कोट्ठयाइसु खिविऊणं ॥९९७॥  
 ओलित्ताणं पिहियाणं लंछियाणं च मुदियाणं च ।  
 उक्किट्ठ ठिइ वरिसाण पंचगं ततो अबीयत्तं ॥९९८॥  
 अयसि १ लट्ठा २ कंगु ३ कोडूसग ४ सण ५ वरट्ठ ६ सिद्धत्था ७ ।  
 कोदव ८ रालग ९ मूलग बीयाण कोट्ठयाइसु ॥९९९॥  
 निक्खित्ताणं एयाणुककोसठिइए सत्ता वरिसाई ।  
 होइ जहन्नेणं पुणो अंतमुहुत्तं समग्गाणं ॥१०००॥

java 1 javajava 2 gōdhūma 3 sāli 4 vīhi 5 dhannāṇa kōṭṭhayāisum .  
 khiviūṇa pihiyāṇam kittāṇam muddiyāṇam ca..995..  
 ukkōsēṇam ṭhii hōi, tinni varisāṇi tayaṇu ēēsim .  
 viddhamṣijjai jōṇī, tattō jāyai abīyattam ..996..  
 tila 1mugga 2masūra 3 kalāya 4 māsa 5 cavalaya 6 kulattha 7 tuvarīṇam 8  
 taha kasinacapaṇaya 9 vallāṇa 10 kōṭṭhayāisu khiviūṇam ..997..  
 ōlittāṇam pihiyāṇam lañchiyāṇam ca muddiyāṇam ca .  
 ukkiṭṭha ṭhii varisāṇa pañcagaṇ tatō abīyattam ..998..  
 ayasi 1 laṭṭhā 2 kaṅgu 3 kōḍūsaga 4 saṇa 5 varaṭṭha 6 sidhatthā 7 .  
 kōddava 8 rāлага 9 mūlaga bīyāṇa kōṭṭhayāisum ..999..  
 nikkhittāṇam ēyānukkōsaṭhiē satta varisāim .  
 hōi jahannēṇam puṇō aṃtamuhuttaṇ samaggāṇam ..1000..

"If barley, a special other kind of barley, wheat, paddy, a variety of rice, i.e. juwar, millet etc. are stored in a vertical cylindrical container of grains etc. made of mud and if it is properly covered, daubed with cow-dung etc. they live as seeds possessing life as long as three years and then the organ of generation gets destroyed and seeds become lifeless. They do not grow even if they are sown i.e. They become lifeless.

Thus even if they are stored with great care as shown above, sesame seeds, different kind of pulses like moong, lentil, field peas, black beans, chola, kalathi, pigeon peas, grams, vaals etc. certainly become lifeless after five years.

If linseeds, cotton seeds, kangoo (cereals like yellow rice), kodara ( a kind of cheap coarse corn), jute, white rapseeds, kodari (husked grains of kodara), ralaka ( a kind of kangoo), radish etc. are stored in a vertical, cylindrical container and preserved as above, saved from insects as described above, they can possess life as long as seven years as living seeds and then they certainly become lifeless."

The life span shown above is the longest. The shortest life-span for all kinds of grains is an Antarmuhūrta i.e a period of less than 48 minutes. It means that after life is created in a grain/seed, if its life span is completed within 48 minutes, it becomes lifeless. But omniscient beings know it. Nescient beings do not know it. Therefore, even if a seed has become lifeless, it should not be used. This is the reason why Śramaṇa Bhagavān Mahāvīra did not grant permission to his thirsty group of monks to drink from pond water which had naturally become lifeless on account of destruction of water body's lives caused by the heat of the Sun.

As shown above, grains can be lifeless. Therefore, abstinence from greens-vegetables does not cause that much sin that is caused by the use of greens. As a result there is less bondage of karma.

There is one more logical and scriptural reason why man should abstain from greens on parva-tithis. If he abstains, he does not develop attachment towards greens, fruits etc.

Generally, green vegetables, fruits etc. have much more taste, sweetness etc. than dry pulses. Man, therefore, prefers green vegetables, and fruits to dry pulses. If he eats various fresh vegetables, fruits etc. he will

form a habit and will not be able to do without green vegetables, fruits etc. even for a day and he will develop attachment towards them. He will cultivate a habit for green vegetables and fruits. We can know it from the following illustration.

Pēthaḍaśā, a minister and king's advisor was a Jain merchant. In the beginning of his career, he dealt in ghee. It was Pēthaḍaśā's policy to sell only fresh ghee every day. Fresh ghee has distinct smell and taste. They who bought ghee from Pēthaḍaśā's shop never bought it from anyone else. King Jayasiṃha always got fresh ghee from Pēthaḍaśā's shop and took his meal.

Once the king's maid-servant went to Pēthaḍaśā's shop to buy ghee. Pēthaḍaśā has been out. Pēthaḍaśā's son Jhāñjhaṇaśā was there in the shop. The maid-servant asked Jhāñjhaṇaśā to give her ghee. Jhāñjhaṇaśā said, "No" He said that there was no ghee. The king again sent the maid-servant to buy ghee but she did not get ghee. The king did not take his meal. He sent for Jhāñjhaṇaśā and asked him reason. Jhāñjhaṇaśā said, "Oh, King ! There was plenty of ghee but before the maid-servant came to buy ghee another customer had come. He sneezed and the vessel containing the ghee was open at that time. Since it was open, the poisonous matter excreted from the body of the house lizard might have dropped into it. Thinking of this possibility, I did not give ghee to your maid-servant."

In short, attachment for tasty food may develop into a habit. To avoid attachment, we should eat greens only intermittently.

It is a general principle to karma philosophy that one is born among those for whom one develops attachment. In scriptures there are many illustrations about this. Not even gods are in exception to this. If they develop attachment for beautiful gems of heaven which are earth bodies, sweet smelling water of stepped wells, wells, ponds etc., beautiful fragrant flowers etc. gods of heaven also after their death, are born as earth bodies among gems etc., as water bodies, as trees, flowers etc. among plants.

Gods in heaven do not use fire and wind etc. In absence of any pleasure derived from them, gods do not develop any attachment for them. Therefore after their death in heaven, gods are never born as fire bodies or wind bodies.

Lest man should continuously relish the taste of green and fresh vegetables and fruits, lest he should develop attachment for such worthless things as green vegetables and fruits and lest he should take birth among them, parva-tithis are perhaps arranged in order to abstain from green vegetables and fruits at an interval of every two days.

By the way, it needs to be noted here that there is a possibility of production of minute organisms in unsplit pulses and therefore monks and nuns do not take unsplit pulses (gram etc) as food during the rainy season and on parva-tithis.

Really speaking, it is not very necessary for those who are vegetarians to take greens. But those who are non-vegetarians need to take greens in their diet because the non-vegetarian diet does not contain carbohydrates, salts, vitamins etc. that are necessary for a human body. Besides flesh etc. have no fibres and the want of fibrous food may cause constipation. They should, therefore, take greens in a large quantity. Experiences of physicians also prove this. Vegetarians regularly take fresh vegetables and therefore, they do not suffer from such diseases. They, therefore, do not need to take more green vegetables.

Greens are full of haemoglobin. It gets oxygen from air and purifies blood in lungs. Since it is not at all there in non-vegetable diet i.e. flesh etc., the body of non-vegetarians becomes pale. Since there is a good amount of haemoglobin in the body of vegetarians, they do not need to take greens. Besides, there is a lot of haemoglobin in pulses etc.

Speaking from the Ayurvedic view-point, green vegetables increase bile and pulse increase gas. If green vegetables are taken excessively, bile is excited. In order to prevent it and in order to maintain the balance of gas, bile and mucus, one should abstain from fresh vegetables at intervals of two days. It is also necessary that he should eat pulses. Parva-tithis also come approximately after an interval of two days. The first parva-tithi is the second day of the lunar month then after two days comes the fifth day, then eighth, eleventh and fourteenth days after an interval of two days each. At the end of the whole fortnight, the fourteenth and fifteenth days come as joint parva-tithis. The only reason for this is that if the bile has slightly increased during the fortnight, it can subside as a result of abstinence from green vegetables continuously for two days.

The nine days from the seventh to the fifteenth days of the bright fortnight of the months Kārtika, Phāgaṇa and Āṣāḍha are called days of aththais (a religious eight or nine days festival coming at the interval of four months). Really speaking, this is a period of transition. In this season, imbalance of gas, bile, and mucus occurs in the body. Health is reduced. Restrictions of food become necessary. Similarly, the periods of observance of nine-day-long penance in the month of Caitra and Āśvina are favourable to diseases. It is said somewhere *"vaidyānām śārādī mātā, pitā tu kusumākaraḥ"* (वैद्यानां शारदी माता, पिता तु कुसुमाकरः ।)" (For physicians, the season Śārada is mother and the season spring is father).

During these periods, mucus is much excited. Therefore, wise people have prescribed that penance of Āyambila should be performed in these days. It reduces mucus and bile. He who performs this penance abstains not only from green vegetables, fruits etc. but also from ghee, oil, jaggery (sugar), milk, curds, sweets, chillies and sour food because they cause mucus. It should be noted that along with green vegetables, unripe or ripe fruits too are considered green. But very few Jains abstain from ripe fruits. The Jain religion is ultimately a religion of renouncement. The greater the renouncement, the greater the benefit. Therefore, when laymen and laywomen take the vow of abstinence from green vegetables etc., they abstain from them to the extent they decide.

Thus it is proper that on parva-tithis, we who are vegetarians, should abstain from green vegetables from religious, scientific, hygienic and Ayurvedic points of view.

#### References:

1. This book is not yet published. A manuscript of this book written in the year 1549 of Vikram era, is in collection of L. D. Institute of Indology, Navarangpura, Ahmedabad 380009. Another manuscript is in the collection of Ācārya Śrīvijaya Nēmisūri Jñānaśālā, Khambhāta. This book is written on the basis of the Jain canonical scripture entitled *"Upāśakadaśāṅga"*.



---

## 27. 'Vigais'

### And

### 'Mahāvigais'

[ I have recently got the book "Role of Vegetarian Diet in Health and Disease" published by the Bombay Hospital, Institute of Medical Science. Preceding the index, there is a section: "Our Contributors", which contains photos of all the writers, doctors etc. who have contributed articles to the book. The most important fact of the book is that not a single writer or doctors a Jain. All are eminent scholars of their subject. On the basis of scientific research, they have supported vegetarianism. In writing this article on Vigais and Mahāvigais, I have made use of this book. — The author]

"**T**he philosophical aspect of the Jain religion is logical and therefore, it is irrefutable. It is not questionable. But as far as geography, astronomy, fitness and unfitness of food to be eaten etc. are concerned, various questions were raised in different ages and if some doubts are raised on account of them, there is nothing surprising."

During the last four or five decades, science has made a remarkable progress. Today, everyone is probably overpowered by achievements of science. He, therefore, thinks of every rule and principle of religion, morality or good conduct from the scientific view point. Not largely, but to a very small extent, norms about food that is fit or unfit to be eaten, have been changing from time to time. It is, therefore, very necessary to scrutinize the changed modern norms about food that is fit or unfit to be eaten. So much material is available on this subject that a book can be written on it. But in view of the limited space available here, we shall think only about 'Vigais and Mahāvigais'.

विगइ (Vigai) or विगय (Vigaya) is originally a prākṛta word. Its saṃskṛta form is विकृति (vikṛti). The thing which is capable of bringing about a change in nature, quality or form of soul or mind and of defiling it is called a vikṛti in the Jain terminology.<sup>2</sup> The things which have greater such capacity, are called Mahāvikṛtis. According to Jain scriptures vikṛtis are six in number: 1. milk, 2. curds, 3. ghee, 4. oil, 5. jaggery or sugar, 6. fried food.<sup>3</sup> Mahāvigais

include 1. Butter, 2. Honey, 3. Wine, 4. flesh (or meat).<sup>4</sup> Jain laypersons who are purified by the true quality of a śrāvaka keep away from all these four Mahāvigais whose names begin with letter 'ma'(म) for life long time. Others are Jains only by birth, not by deeds. They have destroyed the limit, grandeur and splendour of the word 'śrāvaka'. It is a matter of deep worry for us; these things have been adopted by Jains who have lost the Jain quality.

As far as possible, a real śrāvaka keeps the five aṇuvratas, three guṇavratas and four śikṣāvratas. The discussion of the seventh vow bhōgōpabhōga viramaṇa vrata contains some description of what is fit and what is unfit for a śrāvaka to eat. 1. honey 2. butter 3. wine and 4. meat are strictly prohibited there. We shall think of them later on. Let us now think of Vigais which are generally eaten.

Jain scriptures clearly do not allow monks and saints to take milk, curds, ghee, oil etc. without a special reason or condition or by exception. Only a fatigued monk or a physically weak monk or a monk excessively devoted to scriptural study or meditating can use Vigais according to the permission of the Ācāryas etc. These Vigais are forbidden because they defile the mind and the body as their names suggest. Therefore, it is not proper for a healthy man to take ghee, milk, curds etc. in a great or excessive quantity.

### *1. Milk*

From a scientific point of view, milk is a perfect food. Milk contains probably all kinds of elements necessary for human body. Therefore; milk is considered to be very necessary for man. There are some people who say that milk is obtained /derived from female animals and it should, therefore, be abstained from. It is like non-vegetarian food. But what they say is not true. If this is believed, then there is perhaps no person in the world who did not take milk in childhood. Really speaking, for all living beings particular to the animals, milk is the primary necessity of life. In the mamillae of every female it is produced for the nutrition of her children. The first food for every child is milk whether the child is of a lioness, a deer, a cow, a buffalo or even a woman. Milk is made for food and since infinite/biginingless times every human child has been taking milk as food. It is, therefore, unnecessary to entertain such doubts about milk. Of course, in the present times, the milk of cows and buffaloes is extracted with machines and sometimes in order to



get more milk, the machine is kept fixed for a long time and therefore, blood of animals possibly comes along with milk. It is, therefore, proper to abstain from such milk. But such possibilities are very slight in India.

According to Jain scriptures, milk of cows, buffaloes, female goat, female camels, and female sheep is generally regarded as Vigais. Only these five kinds of milk are regarded as Vigais. Milk of no other animal is regarded as Vigai.<sup>5</sup>

Milk contains protein called casein (80%) and it is easily digestible with HCL and rennin that secrete in the stomach. Milk contains a good deal of fat and it is also easily digestible. Along with them, there is a carbohydrate named lactose. Milk also contains mineral elements namely, sodium, calcium, phosphorus, sulphur, magnesium, iron etc. Though iron is in a very meagre proportion, its quality is the best. That is why it soon mixes with blood.<sup>6</sup>

## 2. Curds

Curds are made of milk. Jain scriptures state that there are four kinds of curds. If the milk of a cow, a female buffalo, a female goat or a female sheep is coagulated, it becomes curds. Curds are not made of the milk of a female camel. Therefore, though there are five kinds of milk, there are only four kinds of curds.<sup>7</sup> Whether curds are fit or unfit to be eaten is a question that arises from time to time. There are some who say that when milk is spoiled and its original taste, smell and colour are lost or changed, it becomes curds. There are some others who say that curds are not made without bacteria. Through a microscope in a laboratory, a large number of living bacteria are seen. Therefore, in view of *hiṃsā* and *ahiṃsā* (violence and non-violence), curds should be certainly abstained from.

If one believes that curds are a spoiled food, the belief is entirely wrong. There is a great difference between the process by which milk is spoiled and the process by which the milk is coagulated. Under the effect of atmospheric temperature when milk gets spoiled without curd being added to it, its colour, smell, taste etc. are never like those of curds. Some antibacterial micro-organisms are produced in it. When curd is added to milk, the bacteria in curds called *lacto-bacillus*, transform milk into curds.

A gastric juice named lactose is secreted in our body. It transforms the carbohydrates named lactose occurring in milk into lactic acid. If lactose is not produced or slightly produced in the body, it is preferable to eat curds instead of milk.<sup>8</sup> Milk is heavy to digest., while curds are light. It is, therefore, a stupidity to say that curds is spoiled milk.

Generally, it is popular belief that curds are not coagulated without bacteria and, therefore, curds should not be eaten. From a study of microbiology, we come to know that some bacteria that are sometimes found in milk etc. do not die by any means even if you boil the milk as long as half an hour, because as the atmospheric temperature rises, bacteria of this kind make protection cover all around them which is called spore, and lie sleeping inside the cover till the atmosphere becomes favourable.

The bacteria that turns milk into curds are of a special kind. In our body too, there are a large number of bacteria and micro-organisms. Even if milk is taken instead of curds, when it goes to the stomach, mixes with hydrochloric acid and gets transformed into curds. We should, therefore, believe that curds can be taken as food even if it contains bacteria because the atmosphere favourable to their life, is present in our body also and therefore, they do not die and that is why curds are not prohibited in Jain scriptures. But after two nights the curds become unfit to be eaten because the bacteria that make curds grow profusely and there is a possibility of growth of micro-organisms of other kinds.

Scientifically speaking, all food items are mixed to a small or great extent with viruses and bacteria. No food is, therefore, fit for us to eat. But all food items do not become unfit to be eaten simply because they contain bacteria.

It is necessary to show here that dicotyledons from which oil cannot be extracted i.e. pulses namely black beans, moonga, chola (kind of pulse), gram, methi (foenugreek seeds) etc. are not fit to be eaten with unboiled milk, curds (products of cow-milk, buffalo-milk). But dicotyledons from which oil is extracted namely oil-seeds, ground nuts, charoli (kind of dry fruit i.e. *chirongia sapida*), almond etc. are fit to be eaten with unboiled milk, curds and their products. The verses about pulses are as under :

जमि उ पिलिज्जन्ते, नेहो नहु होइ, बिंति तं विदलं । विदले विहु उप्पन्ने नेहजुअं होइ नो विदलं ।।१।।  
मुग्गमासाइ पभिइं, विदलं कच्चंमि गोरसे पडइ । ता तस जीवुप्पत्ति, भणंति दहिंए वि दुदीणुवरिं ।।२।।  
विदलं जिमिउं पच्छा, पत्तं मुहं च दो वि धोवेज्जा । अहवा अन्नय पत्ते, भुजिज्जा गोरसं नियमा ।।३।।

*jammi u pilijjantē, nēhō nahu hōi, binti taṃ vidalaṃ .  
vidalē vihu uppannē nēhajuvaṃ hōi nō vidalaṃ ..1..  
muggamāsāi pabhiṃ, vidalaṃ kaccammi gōrasē paḍai .  
tā tasa jīvupatti, bhaṇanti dahiē vi dudīṇuvarim ..2..  
vidalaṃ jimium pacchā, pattaṃ muhaṃ ca dō vi dhōvējjā .  
ahavā annaya pattē, bhuñjijjā gōrasaṃ niyamā ..3..* <sup>9</sup>

Here the second verse clearly shows that on the third day, curds become unfit to be eaten. The third verse shows the method of eating curds as food. After eating pulses the vessel and the mouth should be washed and curds should be taken as food or curds should be eaten from another vessel.

Elsewhere, the verses are found as under :

मुग्गमासपभिइ, आमगोरसे जो भलइ । उवइ तसरासि असंखजीवा मुणेयव्वा ।।१।।  
विदले भोयणे चैव, कंठे जीवा अणंतसो होइ । उयरंमि गए चैव, जीवाण न होइ उप्पत्ति ।।२।।

*muggamāsapabhii, āmagōrasē jō bhalai .  
uvai tasarāsi asaṅkhajīvā muṇēyavvā ..1..  
vidalē bhōyaṇē cēva, kaṇṭhē jīvā aṇantasō hōi .  
uyarammi gaē cēva, jīvāṇa na hōi uppatti ..2..* <sup>10</sup>

According to modern botany, pulses include all dicotyledon vegetables i.e. beans or pulses e.g. moongo, black-bean, bean, pea, grams, chola, moth, lentil, fenugreek etc. from which oil cannot be extracted and ground-nut, cashew-nut, charoli, sesame, mustard seeds, almond, rape seeds, turiya, lady's finger etc. from which oil can be extracted. But according to Jain scriptures and tradition, pulses include only dicotyledons from which oil cannot be extracted.

Here one doubt also arises that whether *dahīmvaḍā* / *ghōlavaḍā* are fit to be eaten or unfit to be eaten ? There are some uncertainties about *dahīmvaḍā* (kind of fried cakes made of pulses, dipped in curds). For lay-folk, *dahīmvaḍā* are shown to be unfit to be eaten and it is mentioned in the *aticāra sūtra* of lay-folk. But the *paccakkhāṇa bhāṣya* shows thirty food items of six soul defiling foods i.e. Vigais. There fried cakes made of pulses,

dipped in curds are shown to be fit for being eaten.

In my opinion, according to the verses quoted above, if fried cakes are dipped in unheated curds, they are unfit to be eaten, but if they are dipped in heated curds, they are fit to be eaten. What is meant here by unheated curds? Is it curds made of unheated milk or curds made of heated milk but the curds so made is then not heated? It is not possible to find a solution to this question or many such other questions without making experiments. Therefore a laboratory is essential for it.

It is a rule, regarding to whey, observed by monks and nuns of the śvētāmbara idolatrous sect of Jains that if unboiled water is poured into whey during churning it and all butter is taken out, the whey becomes lifeless. The whey is drunk soon and time limit for use of that whey is two days. Though in the present times, no monk accepts whey on the next day, this is heard traditionally. There must be some reference in scriptures in support of it, but it has not yet come to my knowledge.

And according to the tradition of Jain śvētāmbara idolatrous sect, if unboiled water is poured into whey after churning, it remains with life up to 48 minutes and after 48 minutes, it becomes lifeless and monks and nuns may take it as a food. This tradition is also now prevailing somewhere.

### **3. Ghee**

Curds are made from milk, whey is made from curds, butter is made from whey and ghee is made from butter. When whey is churned, butter surfaces and floats. When it is separated from whey and heated, butter is transformed into ghee. Therefore, there are as many kinds of ghee as curds. It means that curds, butter and ghee are obtained from the milk of cows, buffaloes, female goats, and female sheep.

Here a question may arise, if the butter, taken out of curds or whey, is unfit to be eaten, how can ghee, which is made by heating the butter be fit to be eaten? Really speaking, butter remains fit to be eaten as long as 48 minutes after it is taken out of whey. Afterwards, micro-organisms of its own colour are produced in it. Therefore, ghee should be made soon after butter is separated from whey.

In the present times some non-Jain ghee makers go on collecting butter

for ten or fifteen days after the butter is taken out of whey and then make ghee out of it. Many years ago, it was seen in the kitchen of a Jain gentleman in a city of south India that one afternoon when a cook began to heat in a vessel three or four big lumps of butter covered in a black piece of cloth, the butter began to melt and micro-organisms like larva appeared in it. Therefore, the ghee so made, is unfit to be eaten. But now-a-days there are machines which directly extract ghee (fat) from milk. Also, cream of milk is accumulated. It is heated and ghee is made. Ghee thus made is, therefore, fit to be eaten.

Scientifically speaking, ghee, oil etc. are in reality a kind of fat which is necessary in body-machine for heat and energy. In the body, it burns and produces energy that activates all other parts of body. If a man takes more than necessary ghee, milk, curds etc. the surplus fat gathers under skin and when for some reason or another a man does not get food or when he observes fast etc. as a penance, the fat gathered under the skin, burns and produces energy. Every man, therefore, should take ghee, milk etc. only in a limited quantity

#### 4. Oil

As out of many kinds of milk, curds etc., only four or five are regarded as Vigais, so Jain scripturists regard four kinds of oils as Vigais: 1. of sesame seeds, 2. oil of lin seeds, 3. oil of rape seeds, 4. oil kusumbha (kind of plant or grass i.e. *carthamus tinctorius*). The remaining other oils are not regarded as Vigais.<sup>12</sup> But ground nut oil, coconut oil etc. should be regarded as Vigais. In the times when these books were written probably most of the people mostly used only these oils in food and perhaps they did not even think of using the remaining oils. That is why the author has included only these oils in the list of Vigais.

The oil of sesame seeds makes the body strong and stimulates digestion. Rubbing the oil body with it, makes the skin and eyes better. Those who take sesame oil in food, do not suffer from paralysis. The oil of rape-seeds cures gas and mucus, balances their proportion and also removes intestinal worms. Rubbing the body with it, removes the dryness of the skin and makes the skin strong, smooth and tender. The groundnut oil controls mucus.<sup>13</sup>

### **5. Jaggery and Sugar**

According to Jain scriptures, there are two kinds of jaggery: 1. lump and 2. hard. Both kinds of unheated jaggery are among Vigais.<sup>14</sup> Jaggery gives a lot of strength. Body becomes very strong by eating jaggery with dry fruits and roasted grams. Even today jaggery and grams are fed to horses as it was done in ancient India. Sugar soon spreads energy in the body. Both are good source of energy.<sup>15</sup> Jaggery stimulates the desire for sexual pleasures.<sup>16</sup> Abstinent monks and those who can keep the vow of celibacy should not, therefore, eat unheated jaggery.

Hygienically speaking, jaggery makes the heart strong and prevents various heart diseases.<sup>17</sup> Jaggery water (sugar water), makes the kidney and the system of urine excretion clean.<sup>18</sup>

### **6. Fried food**

Food, fried in oil and fried in ghee are Vigais. Food, fried first, second or third time in the same base of heated molasses, ghee or oil are called sweets.<sup>19</sup> Another word for this is Avagāhika. Frying in fourth, fifth, sixth etc. times in the same base of heated molasses, ghee or oil makes the food non-Vigais because it cannot defile the mind or body of one, who eats it. Through six Vigais, thirty varieties of non-defiling (non-Vigaic) food items are prepared. And according to the tradition of the Jain śvētāmbara idoltrous sect, when a monk or nun practices Yōga in order to get permission to study Āgama sūtras or when a śrāvaka (lay-person) practices penance of upadhāna in order to get permission to study Navakāraṃmantra etc. sūtras, he takes that food while taking his single meal a day (Ēkāśaṇa).<sup>20</sup>

Of the four Mahāvigais, meat and wine do not need useless repetition. Much has been told/written about them elsewhere. But only their kinds will be described here.

#### **1. Meat**

Jain scriptures show three kinds of meat: 1. that of aquatic animals such as fishes etc. 2. that of animals on lands such as a hog, a cow, a buffalo etc. 3. that of birds etc. flying in the sky such as the swan, the crow, the sparrow etc.<sup>21</sup> According to Jain belief as soon as living animals die, innumerable micro-organisms of their colour are produced in their meat, blood etc. It is,

therefore, necessary to abstain from them in order to keep the vow of non-violence.<sup>22</sup>

## 2. Wine

According to the Jain scriptures, there are two kinds of wine : 1. that which is directly derived from fruits and flowers (kāṣṭhamadya) and 2. that which is made by bringing about organic decomposition in flour (piṣṭhamadya).<sup>23</sup> Jain scripturists say that wine is a cause of slackness (pramāda). Delirium is created by taking wine.<sup>24</sup> The following sanskrit verse shows sixteen bad effects of drinking wine:

वैरूप्यं, व्याधिपिण्डः, स्वजनपरिभवः, कार्यकालातिपातो, ।  
विद्वेषो, ज्ञाननाशः, स्मृति-मतिहरणं, विप्रयोगश्च सदिभः ॥  
पारुष्यं, नीचसेवा, कुलबलतुलना, धर्मकामार्थहानिः ।  
कष्टं भो ! षोडशैते निरुपचयकराः मद्यपानस्य दोषाः ॥

*vairūpyaṃ, vyādhipiṇḍaḥ, svajanaparibhavaḥ, kāryakālātīpātō, .*  
*vidvēṣō, jñānanāśaḥ, smṛti-matiharanaṃ, viprayōgaśca sadbhiḥ ..*  
*oārūṣyaṃ, nīcasēvā, kulabalatulanā, dharmakāmārthahāniḥ .*  
*kaṣṭaṃ bhō ! ṣoḍaśaitē nirupacayakarāḥ madyapānasya dōṣāḥ ..* <sup>25</sup>

In order to make wine, its component substances are organically decomposed and melted. This is only one sort of bacterial fermentation which causes harm to mind and body. That is why Jain scriptures entirely forbid wine-drinking.

## 3. Butter

Butter is talked about along with ghee. No repetition is, therefore, made here.

## 4. Honey

Jain scriptures show that there are three kinds of honey: 1. that which is collected by honey-bees, 2. that which is collected by male and female black-bees and 3. that which is collected by butter flies or moth-insects.<sup>26</sup> Honey is only a nectar of flowers but in collecting it, it becomes necessary to kill innumerable insects like bees etc. Therefore, from the point of view of violence, its use is forbidden. The saliva from the mouth of bees etc. gets mixed with honey and therefore, innumerable micro-organisms of its own colour are

produced. They are very capable of defile our minds and, therefore, scripturists have forbidden it.

About honey, butter, wine and meat, lives of ten śrāvakas entitled 'Ananda sundara' composed in the Vikram era 1549 states:

मज्जे महुम्मि मंसम्मि नवनीयम्मि चउत्थए । उप्पिजंति अणंता तव्वण्णा तत्थ जंतुणो ।।९०३।।  
अमासु य पक्कासु य, विपच्चमाणासु मंसपेसीसु । सययं नियमुववाओ, भणियो य निगोय जीवाणं  
।।९०४।।

*majjē mahummi maṃsammi navanīyammi cautthaē .  
uppijanti aṇantā tavvaṇṇā tattha jantuṇō ..903..  
amāsu ya pakkāsu ya, vipaccamāṇāsu maṃsapēsīsu .  
sayayaṃ niyamuvavāō, bhamiyō ya nigōya jīvāṇaṃ ..904..* <sup>27</sup>

Infinite micro-organisms of the same colour are produced in wine, honey, meat and butter. In the tissues of meat that is uncooked, cooked or being cooked, infinite very small micro-organisms are continuously produced.

Here a brief description of Vigais and Mahāvigais is given from scientific view-point on the basis of Jain scriptures. It is hoped that after reading and understanding this, śrāvakas will raise in the society the grand image of a real śrāvaka.

#### References :

1. जैनधर्म का दार्शनिक पक्ष युक्तियुक्त है । उसके आगे पीछे कोई प्रश्न चिह्न नहीं है किन्तु जहां तक भूगोल-खगोल का प्रश्न है, विभिन्न युगों में तरह तरह के दबाव उन पर आए हैं, अतः उन्हें लेकर कुछ शंकाएँ सामने आती हैं तो उसमें आश्चर्यजनक कुछ भी नहीं है ।

-- Dr Nemichand Jain, 'Tīrthaṅkara' May 1987, p. 5

2,3,4,5,7,11,12,14,19,20,21,23,26

pravacanasārōddhāra--pratyākhyāna dvāra, verses 217 to 235 and its sanskrit commentary.

6,8,13,15,16,17,18

Role of vegetarian diet in Health and Diseases, p. 5-6-76-85-86

9,10. Tīrthaṅkara, September, 1989, p. 29

22,24,25 मांसभक्षणदूषणाष्टकम्, मद्यपानदूषणाष्टकम् (अष्टकप्रकरणम् कर्ता- आचार्य श्री



हरिभद्रसूरिजी)

Māṃsabhakṣaṇadūṣaṇāṣṭakam and Madyapānadūṣaṇāṣṭakam  
(Aṣṭakaprakaraṇam by Ācārya Śrī Hariibhadrasūriji)

27. आनंदसुंदर, प्रथमाधिकार, श्लोक Ānanda-Sundara, Prathamādhikāra, ślōka

- 903,904



THAT WHICH IS A FINEST ESSENCE—THIS WHOLE WORLD HAS  
THAT AS ITS SOUL. THAT IS REALITY. THAT IS ATMAN. THAT  
ART THOU.

CHHANDOGYA UPANISHAD, 6.9.4

FORCE AND MATTER, PARTICLES AND WAVES, MOTION AND  
REST, EXISTENCE AND NON-EXISTENCE—THESE ARE SOME OF  
THE OPPOSITE AND CONTRADICTIONARY CONCEPTS, WHICH ARE  
TRANSCENDED, IN MODERN PHYSICS.

FRITJOF CAPRA

---

---

## 28. Water : Sentient And Non-sentient : A Scientific View-point

**A**ccording to Jain scriptures water is a living organism. Every molecule of it is a living organism. Also, since it is a place of production i.e. birth-cavity of other living organisms, there are numerous organisms and micro-organisms in it. They are capable of producing a number of diseases in the body. It is, therefore, good for the sake of health to drink water after boiling it.

In the present times at some places ash, lime or sugar is mixed with water in order to make it lifeless. Though, according to the Jain canonical scriptures, water becomes lifeless if ash, lime or sugar is mixed with it, scriptures and other sources give no instruction about the quantity of ash, lime or sugar that should be added into water and about the period of time after which that water becomes lifeless. Really speaking, it is proper only for monks and nuns to accept such water which has thus been made lifeless because if a layperson hurts earth, water, fire, air or vegetables i.e. plants or other living organisms in order to procure these things for monks or nuns, those monks and nuns commit a sin. If water is thus made lifeless only for monks and nuns, it is not acceptable to monks and nuns even if it is lifeless.

In ancient times, monks and nuns, during their begging rounds, were accepting in their begging bowls, water, in which pulses or rice had been washed or water containing some residue of flour left over at the end of baking breads if the water did not contain any grains or did not give any taste of flour or any eatable substance, and if the water could quench thirst. And for the laypersons, it is prescribed that while practising penance or otherwise, they should drink thrice boiled lifeless water. This was an ancient Śvētāmbara tradition based on scriptures. In the present times, this custom prevails among monks and nuns of the some sects, groups, gachchas or divisions. Therefore, their followers also thus make water lifeless by mixing into it ash or lime but this is altogether improper. By accepting water made

lifeless in this way, the main purpose is defeated. Therefore, monks and nuns of Śvētāmbara idolatrous sect accept only thrice boiled lifeless water and it is called in sanskrit language 'acitta' (अचित्त) i. e. lifeless water and in Jain canonical scriptural terminology it is called 'prāsuka' (प्रासुक) i. e. lifeless.

There are some people who ask if ash or lime is the only remedy for making various kinds of water lifeless - sweet water of rainy season, collected in a small ditches, salty water of wells, purified water of the river Ganges etc., mineral water, hot sulphuric water of ditches and all kinds of water. They believe there should be different remedial things for various kinds of water. But it is their false notion.

Jain canonical scriptures show two possibilities how life-containing earth, water etc. become lifeless. When earth comes in contact with earth of different kind, both the kinds of earth become lifeless. Both the kinds of earth destroy themselves. When water is poured into earth, both the water and the earth destroy each other and make each other lifeless. Ash is a defiled form (vikāra) of plant and lime is earth. Any kind of water can, therefore, be made lifeless by ash or lime. It should, therefore, not be doubted how the same substance makes all kinds of water lifeless.

Regarding the use of lifeless water, most of the laypersons use lifeless water only for drinking and for all other purposes they mostly use water that contains life. It is enough to tell them that there is lack of power of discrimination. Water is a mass of water-lives. Therefore, the least possible use should be made of water whether it contains lives or it is lifeless. For laypersons, water that contains lives is not absolutely forbidden. Therefore, there is no objection to drinking water that contains lives but from the view point of hygiene and physical science, it is most beneficial to drink lifeless water.

One of the well-established rules of the Jainism is that everyone should drink, if it is possible, lifeless water and for the laypersons who are practising penance and for the monks and nuns, there is no exception to this rule. According to Jain biology water itself is a living organism.

In the present times if a Jain monk or nun or one who is proficient in Jain philosophy or an ordinary scientist is asked, "Why is it prescribed in the Jain religion to drink boiled water?" they all will say that water itself is a living organism and there are various and numerous micro-organisms in it. It is

doubted that they produce a number of diseases in the body and such micro-organisms always continue to be produced in water containing lives. The micro-organisms cease to be produced in boiled water. We should, therefore, drink water after boiling it. Here it may be argued that it is not proper according to Jain philosophy to cause or to stop expansion of family of any person or animal. That is also fully sinful. Like one who only sees, we should see everything indifferently. It is not proper to involve oneself in any activity. What right, then, do we have to stop the expansion of somebody's family? For us all, the answer to this question is difficult. Boiling water is for us an activity of *himsā* i. e. violence, whether we boil it for ourselves or for others.

Therefore, the question stands as it was--' Why should we drink water only after boiling it? ' On the basis of modern scientific investigations, this question can be answered as under :-

According to the principle of science, there are positively charged particles called cations and negatively charged particles called anions in every liquid and in the water of wells, ponds, rivers, rain etc. There is salt and a larger proportion of negatively charged particles. Water containing anions make the body very fresh. It sometimes produces excessive energy also. But when water is heated, it not only becomes lifeless, but also makes the negatively charged particles neutral i. e. devoid of electric charge. Consequently, heated water does not produce bad mental or physical effects. Therefore, only heated water is proper for monks and nuns and for the laypersons who practise penance.

As a scientific evidence for this I would like to say that in America and other developed countries special apparatuses have recently come to the market for making the atmosphere of air-conditioned offices etc. free from cations or filling it with negatively charged particles, anions i. e. for ionizing the atmosphere and they are in a great demand. The main reason for this is that in air-conditioned places, where cold wind is blowing, no heat is experienced at all. Yet workers sit there, they do not feel like working. There is physical and mental non-activity. Work is, therefore, not done as much as it is expected. It has been found on investigation that in air-conditioned atmosphere there is a greater proportion of cations. If their number is reduced and the proportion of anions is increased, the atmosphere becomes freshening and energizing. On the basis of this research that the ionization appara-

tus is used to a very great extent for negatively charging the air. This machine produces and throws off billions of anions every second. In the rainy season we experience the tendency of sleeping after taking meals and do not feel like doing anything because in those days, there is a larger number of cations in the atmosphere. Not only from the view points of compassion for living beings and hygiene but also from the view point of mental complacency and health, it is, therefore, necessary to drink boiled water. All that has been said here is fully scientific.

There are some people who say that lifeless water is a cause of many possessions. But it is a bad logic. It is not proper to say that the instruments necessary for observing non-violence and compassion for lives are possessions. Ācārya Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī also say this in his 'aṣṭaka prakaraṇa'.

There are some people who say that all kinds of water available on earth is mixed with some or other kind of earth, ash etc., therefore, it is lifeless. Why should it, then be again made lifeless? Pure water is available only in the laboratory. We are non-omniscient. We are, therefore, not hundred percent sure whether this water contains life or it is lifeless. Therefore, even if water is naturally lifeless, it should be again made lifeless.

There are some people who compare rainy water with water formed from the vapour in the kitchen. They say that if rainy water contains life, drops of water attached to the lid of a vessel in the kitchen which are made of vapour, should also be regarded as containing lives. But this is a wrong belief. Superficially looking both these processes seem to be similar but in fact the difference between them is very great.

'Jīvacāra Prakaraṇa' composed by Ācārya Śrī Śāntisūrijī in the twelfth century of Vikram Era and Jain canonical scriptures such as 'Jīvābhigama' etc. mention the rainy water as life containing water. Perhaps sometimes there are fishes also in the rainy water. Therefore, rainy water should not be believed as lifeless water. Generally, in Gujarat and also in other states laypersons filter the water in the early morning once a day, that contains life. The treatise 'Pravacana Sārōddhāra' (verses 881-882) of the Śvētāmbara tradition states that the thrice boiled lifeless water becomes life containing after 15 hours in summer, 9 hours in monsoon and 12 hours in winter. The verse is as under :-

जायइ सच्चित्तया से, गिम्हमि पहरपंचगस्सुवरिं । चउपहरोवरि सिसिरे, वासासु पुणो तिपहरुवरि ।।८८२।।

*jāyai sacittayā sē, gimhammi paharapañcagassuvarim.*

*caupaharōvari sisirē, vāsāsu puṇō tipaharuvari ..882..*

And therefore, the water turned into drops from vapour in the kitchen is lifeless because it has not crossed the prescribed time limit, while the rainy water, after being transformed into water crosses the prescribed time limit. Scripturists say that the rainy water contains lives. Similarly, the distilled water produced in the laboratory, which doctors use for injections also contains life, though it is extremely pure.

Minute water drops that are produced by vapour present in the atmosphere and attached to the external surface of the vessel containing ice and such other things which are cooled in the refrigerator, are not acceptable to monks and nuns and laypersons who abstain from things that contain life, even though it is lifeless because for that water drops, ice which has life containing water bodies and things cooled in the refrigerator are mixed with it. No question, therefore, arises for accepting minute water drops produced through the contact of ice etc.

In the end, the question arises that as we make water lifeless, so we should also make air lifeless because according to Jain scriptures air also contains life. But this is not logical. Though water and air are very indispensable to human life, there is a tremendous difference between their forms. Therefore, if we apply to air whatever we apply to water, it will show our intellectual bankruptcy. Therefore, no solution is necessary here.

In short all monks and nuns and laypersons, moreover all persons who want to pass healthy life, have to use the thrice boiled water.



THE PROBLEMS OF LANGUAGE HERE ARE REALLY SERIOUS. WE WISH TO SPEAK IN SOME WAY ABOUT THE STRUCTURE OF THE ATOMS..... BUT WE CANNOT SPEAK ABOUT ATOMS IN ORDINARY LANGUAGE.

W. HEISENBERG

---

## 29. Jainism And Science:

### Solutions Of Some Problems

In the present age, science has become an essential component of human life. Every man, therefore, looks at a problem in a scientific manner and tries to find its solution with a scientific method. Though a number of scientific principles are found in Jain scriptures, there are many present-day problems on which science and Jain scriptures clearly differ.

We shall discuss here some such problems.

#### *Length/Height of Living Beings :*

The 'Triṣṭhiśalākāpuruṣacaritra' written by Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī (V. Era 1145-1229) is an unique work among Jain mythological works (Purāṇas). Many historical references are found in its 'Pariśiṣṭa Parva'. In this work he has elaborately described the lives of sixty three great men. The heights of body of all of them is given in Jain scriptures.

According to this book, the height of body of Bhagavān Ṛṣabhadēva was 500 Dhanuṣyas (1 Dhanuṣya= 6 feet). One Dhanuṣya is equal to 4 hands. Taking one hand to be equal to one and half feet, the height of the body of Bhagavān Ādinātha (Ṛṣabhadēva) measures 3000 feet. In the same way the height of the body of Bhagavān Śāntinātha measures 40 Dhanuṣyas i.e. 240 feet. The height of the body of Bhagavān Mahāvīra was seven hands i.e. ten and half feet. Today we don't believe all this to be true but we should very well bear it in mind that not a single principle of science is unchangeable. The principles that have been proved today to be true, can be proved tomorrow to be untrue.

Recently, Carl Sagan, an American scientist, has developed a cosmic calendar. It is very similar to Jain time cycle. According to scientists, the Earth was produced out of the Sun nearly four and half thousand million years ago. They have contemplated the period from this incident to the incident of the destruction of the whole universe to be of 12 months i.e. 365

days and the calendar of the period shows date-wise record of the incidents that took place during the period. It fits in with the time-cycle of Jainism. I have made all this analysis in my article captioned , 'The Jain Time Cycle and Cosmic Calendar.'

Only a few years ago, the American science magazine entitled 'Discover' presented photographs of fossils of birds with 11.5 feet long and 23 feet broad wings.

Science has been searching the gigantic living world of ancient times and has procured fossils of gigantic animals such as the dinosaur. On the basis of these fossils, scientists believe that the height of their body was at least 150 feet and their existence belonged to an age prior to 7 crore years.

The Jain biology places the dinosaur in the one part of phylum reptiles called Bhujaḥparisarpa. The mongoose etc. of the present times belong to the same phylum. According to the Jain scriptures, namely, the Jīvābhigama, the Pannavaṇā etc., the utmost height of these living organisms varies from two Gāus (1 Gāu = 3.2 km) to 9 Gāus . If the utmost height of the dinosaur was 2 Gāus , the utmost height of man was 3 Gāus in those times. According to this calculation, the height of dinosaur is 2/3 of the height of man. If one Dhanuṣya is equal to six feet, the height of the dinosaur determined on the basis of the fossils is 25 Dhanuṣyas and the height of man of those times was 37.5 Dhanuṣyas. Man of this height lived in the times of Bhagavān Śāntinātha, the sixteenth Tīrthaṅkara and according to the calculation of time-cycle these times were prior to three Sāgarōpamas.

Though there is an appreciable difference between three Sāgarōpamas years and 7 crore years, we can say it beyond doubt that the inference of 7 crore years is wrong because the method with which the antiquity of ancient fossils is determined seems to be wrong method. This method used the isotopes of carbon-14(C-14). Regarding this method it is written in the book entitled 'The pyramid Power' -

*"Unfortunately, it now appears that the dates obtained through the use of this method are highly questionable, since contamination from present day organic materials could substantially affect the process. Archaeologists now believe that most of the sites dated with carbon-14 are older than the dating process showed that they were. There is currently an*



*enormous controversy ranging in archaeological circles over the claim of some archaeologists that carbon-14 dating is incorrect by thousands of years, not hundreds of years as was previously thought.” (p. 20).*

From this reference we can say that in determining the time of ancient fossils according to this method miscalculations of not hundreds or thousands of years but of lacs of years has been made. Therefore, the fossils which we believe, according to this can be at least three or four hundred thousand years old can be at least 3 or 4 thousand million years old. Therefore, the possibility that the dinosaurs belong to the times not prior to 7 hundred million years but to the time of three Sāgarōpama years, should not be ruled out.

Similarly, it is not proper to entertain any doubts about the hight of the great men. On the contrary, it is necessary to prove this in a scientific way.

### ***Bulbous roots :***

A number of questions are raised about bulbous roots i.e. modifications of roots. It is said that if there were micro-organisms in bulbous roots they would certainly be seen through a microscope as bacteria are seen in curds. But this is a very wrong belief. Bacteria etc. being two-sensed organisms can be seen distinctly in a state of motion in curds. But the plant itself is a living being and, therefore, there is no question of seeing micro-organisms in it through a microscope. The plant kingdom is of two types:

1. Pratyēka Vanaspatikāya (having a single soul in a single body of plant, seed, root, flower, leaves and fruit) and 2. Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya (having infinite souls in a single body or cell of a plant). In Pratyēka Vanaspatikāya every soul has his own independent body and in Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya, infinite souls have only a single common body. It means that there are infinite souls in a single body or cell. The fruits, flowers, leaves, roots etc. that we see make the body of the plant lives. Can soul be seen as different from the body through a microscope? According to modern science every living being has basic cells of body. Billions of such cells join together and make the body of a living organism or an animal. Again every cell is a living cell. Not only all the cells of potatoes etc. are living cells but also every cell has infinite lives i.e. souls in it. That is why bulbous roots are regarded as unfit to be eaten.

Another question also arises. If favourable conditions for life are removed from the place where there is multitude of living organisms, the multitude of living organisms will die. There will be decaying and the vegetables will not last for a long time. But bulbous roots remain fresh for use for a long time. If they have lives, they can remain protected underground. If they are taken out of earth, living organisms die and decaying will begin. But these beliefs are entirely wrong. Bulbous roots do not become lifeless after they are taken out of the ground. They continue to retain life for a long time after they have been taken out of the ground. There are only two ways to make the bulbous roots lifeless. It becomes lifeless by means of weapons such as knife etc. With a knife they should be cut into pieces or they should be cooked on fire.

It should also be noted that after living organisms i.e. souls have ended up, they do not decay as a rule. In order to preserve dead bodies for a long time, the dehydration technique was adopted in ancient Egypt and it is also adopted in modern times and the mummies found from pyramids of ancient Egypt are a testimony to it. Even after lives in bulbous roots have ended up, if they are dehydrated, they do not decay, e.g. ginger. After lives have ended up in ginger, it automatically get dehydrated. But potatoes etc. do not automatically get dehydrated. They get dehydrated only after they have been cut with knife etc. Therefore, dry ginger is fit to be eaten but potatoes etc. are not fit to be eaten even after they have become dry.

It can also be argued that micro-living beings are found in non-bulbous roots but bulbous roots are quite clean, when they are cut. But here it needs to be noted that Jain scriptures say that it is a characteristic of Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya ( having infinite souls in a single body or cell of a plant ) that when it is cut, it is cut in regular pieces and there are no fibres and knots nor do leaves have veins. Really speaking, in scientific terminology, bulbous roots are a modifications of roots. Bulbous roots therefore, cannot become fit to be eaten just because they are neat or clean.

Purity of life or character or conduct depends on purity of food. Purity of food is, therefore, necessary. The potato, the radish etc. are Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya. It is, therefore, best to abstain from them. There are some people who argue that there cannot be any reference to potato in our ancient scriptures because it is originally not a product of India. In 1586 A.D. Sir William Raleigh brought it to England from South America (Brazil). Later

on about 1615 A.D. it came to India. A reference to it in ancient scriptures is, therefore, impossible. On this ground they say that it is not a statement made by Omniscient God that "The potato is an Anantakāya or Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya" but it is rule made by nescient (chadmastha). But this argument is not proper.

It is not possible for scriptures to talk of all kinds of plants, Anantakāya and animals etc. Scriptures only give characteristics and some names of Anantakāyika plants. On the basis of their characteristics our ancient sages have shown that potato etc. are Anantakāya. The tomato, the apple etc. too are not products of India and nowhere do the scriptures talk of them. Our scripturists of later times have not prohibited them because they do not show the characteristics of Anantakāya.

It was a tradition of our ancient sages that they never wrote anything against scriptures. They also observed the rule that nothing should be written without a reference or basis and they had no reason to make statements that were not true. They were more learned and more sin-fearing than we are. Their statements, therefore, are not unacceptable simply because they were not omniscient.

Another question may be raised that if we are prohibited to eat bulbous roots, how are we justified in eating dry ginger and dry turmeric? How can we be allowed to eat them even if they are dry? This is an excellent question. When ginger and turmeric are green, they are no doubt Anantakāyas. Later on when they dry up, they automatically become lifeless and knives and other instruments are not needed in order to dehydrate them. But the potato does not become dry naturally or automatically. If the potato is kept somewhere in sunlight for a long time, in a few days, it begins to decay. If it is to be dehydrated, it should be cut into small and fine chips. Then they become lifeless. As food, potatoes are used in a great quantity. It is not proper to kill those infinite lives or living beings for our sake. The potato is, therefore, prohibited for us. Ginger and turmeric are not food. In a very small quantity they are used as medicine to add to the quality of food. They are, therefore, acceptable. The dry potato is, therefore, altogether unfit to be eaten but ginger and turmeric are fit to be eaten after they become dry.

Another question may arise. Is ground-nut a bulbous root or not? Really speaking, though a ground-nut grows underground, it is not regarded to be

a bulbous root because the upper husk of a ground-nut has fibres. Unlike the parts of other bulbous roots, every organ of a ground-nut cannot produce a new plant nor can its pieces produce a new plant, whereas pieces of a potato etc. can produce new plants. Thus no characteristics of Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya or Anantakāya are found in ground-nut. The ground-nut is, therefore, fit to be eaten.

### ***Multi-seeded vegetables :***

A question may also be raised about multi-seeded vegetables like brinjal. There are some people who ask that if the brinjal, the fig etc. are unfit to be eaten because they are multi-seeded. Are not ghosby, musk-melon (kind of vegetables) cucumber, round gourd also multi-seeded ? This question demands a lot of thinking. After thinking about multi-seeded vegetables, it has been found that the vegetable is not unfit to be eaten simply because it is multi-seeded. The kind of seeds of multi-seeded vegetable is the determining factor. There are two kinds of seeds. Some seeds become lifeless while being cooked and some seeds do not become lifeless while being cooked. The seeds of brinjal, guava etc. do not become lifeless while being cooked and figs are eaten uncooked and, therefore, they are not fit to be eaten. The seeds of ghosby, musk-melon, cucumber, lady's finger etc. become lifeless while being cooked. They are, therefore, fit to be eaten. According to the book 'Dharmasaṅgraha' the seeds of multi-seeded vegetables do not have a subtle transparent cover on them. This is a main characteristic of multi-seeded vegetables. The vegetables, namely ghosby, cucumber, lady's finger etc. have a subtle transparent cover on their seeds. They are, therefore, not considered as multi-seeded.

Another point to be noted is that researches of modern science show that brinjals have more toxic substance than other vegetables. For that reason also brinjals should not be eaten.

It is true that many uncertainties prevail among us about foods that are fit or unfit to be eaten because they are classified by those who are non-omniscient. We should, therefore, think about this in a scientific way in this scientific age. About foods that are fit or unfit to be eaten, we, the monks of new generation, think only in a scientific way. We, therefore, invite such questions. We shall try to solve them as best as we can. I hope that this logical

solution will prove to be satisfactory.

In Jain tradition carefulness (Yatanā) is a main characteristic of religious activity. In the 'Daśavaikālika Sūtra' when the disciple is taught that himṣā, i.e. violence is committed even in walking, standing, sitting, sleeping, speaking and eating, the disciple asks how one can live one's life if himṣā, i.e. violence is committed even in walking, standing, sitting, sleeping, speaking and eating ?

कहं चरे ? कहं चिट्ठे ? कहमासे ? कहं सए ? कहं भुंजंतो ? भासंतो ? पावकम्मं न बंधइ ?  
(दशवैकालिकसूत्र अध्ययन-४, गाथा - ७)

*khaṃ carē ? khaṃ ciṭṭhē ? khamāsē ? khaṃ saē ?*  
*khaṃ bhuñjantō ? bhāsantō ? pāvakammaṃ na bandhai ?*

(Daśavaikālikasūtra Adhyayana-4, Gāthā - 7)

It is said in reply to this :-

जयं चरे, जयं चिट्ठे, जयमासे, जयं सए । जयं भुंजंतो भासंतो पावकम्मं न बंधइ ।

(दशवैकालिकसूत्र अध्ययन-४, गाथा - ८)

*jayam carē jayam ciṭṭhē jayamāsē jayam saē*  
*jayam bhuñjantō bhāsantō pāvakammaṃ na bandhai .*

(Daśavaikālikasūtra Adhyayana-4, Gāthā - 8)

Walk with care, stand with care, sit with care, sleep with care, speak with care and eat with care so as not to commit sin.

Thus carefulness is important in the Jain religion. Scripturists teach us to live a life of least sinful activities and this can be done by observing utmost carefulness.

### *Genders of living beings :*

A question also arises about genders of living beings. According to Jain scriptures, one-sensed, two-sensed, three sensed and four-sensed living beings belong to neuter gender and they reproduce asexually. But science (botany and zoology) shows that this is wrong. Zoology shows that ants, flies, butterflies etc. undergo sexual intercourse and they produce offsprings with a gender. Among them there are genders of males and females. Botany shows that there are male and female genders even among trees and plants

also. Then what is the reality regarding the classification of genders of living beings according to Jain philosophy?

This is a good question. But in order to find an answer to it, we should, properly, minutely and elaborately study and contemplate on Jain scriptures. First of all, we should coordinate from various view-points, mutually contradictory statements found in Jain scriptures. Talking of genders of all living beings in the whole universe Vācaka Umāsvāti, well versed with Pūrvas, the author of Tattvārtha Sūtra says in the second chapter of the Tattvārtha Sūtra that " नारकसंमूर्च्छिनो नपुंसकानि ॥५१॥ न देवाः ॥५२॥ " *nārakasammūrcchinō napuṃsakāni ..51.. na dēvāḥ ..52..* Living beings born in hellish Yōni and all living beings born asexually belong to the neuter gender. No god belongs to the neuter gender. All celestial beings (gods) belong either to the genders of the gods (males) or goddesses (females). Embryonic human beings and other five-sensed embryonic beasts have any of the three genders.

The Tattvārtha Sūtra shows three types of birth (1) sammūrcchima janma (asexual birth) (2) garbhaja janma (sexual birth) (3) upapāta janma (asexual birth of celestial and hellish beings). Celestial and hellish beings are born only asexually. The sexual birth is of three types- (1) jarāyuja - birth with wrapper which contains blood (2) aṇḍaja - birth through eggs (3) pōtaja- birth without a wrapper. Human beings, cows, buffaloes, horses, deer etc. are born with wrapper containing blood. Snakes, cuckoos, fishes, tortoises etc. are born through eggs. The goose, the parrot, the pigeon, the hawk, the crow, the peacock etc. are also born through eggs. The mongoose, the hare, the mouse etc. and the vampire, the bat, etc. are born without a wrapper and they all are five-sensed. Apart from these, one-sensed to four-sensed living beings are all asexual i.e. sammūrcchima.

On the other hand, the "Kalpasūtra" edited by Śrutakēvalī Caturdaśapūrvadhara Ācārya Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmī describes five types of subtle eggs:-

से किं तं अण्डसुहमे ? अण्डसुहमे पंचविहे पण्णत्ते तं जहा - उदंसंडे, उक्कलियंडे, पिपीलियंडे, हलियंडे, हल्लोहलियंडे । (कल्पसूत्र, सामाचारी)

*sē kiṃ taṃ aṇḍasuhame ? aṇḍasuhame pañcavihē paṇṇattē taṃ jahā - uddaṃsaṇḍē, ukkaliyaṇḍē, pipīliyaṇḍē, haliyaṇḍē, hallōhaliyaṇḍē .*

(Kalpasūtra, Sāmācārī)

Which are the subtle eggs? The subtle eggs are of five types: 1. Uddamśaṇḍa- those of butterfly, a bug, i.e. a matkuna etc. 2. Utkalikāṇḍa - those of spider 3. Pippilikakāṇḍa- those of an ant etc. 4. Hallikāṇḍa - those of a lizard etc. 5. Hallōhallikāṇḍa - those of a chameleon etc.

On the one hand, there is a statement of Vācaka Umāsvāti and on the other hand, there is a statement of Ācārya Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmi. Both these statements are mutually contradictory. But we should bear it in mind that both these statements are made from different points of view. Therefore, thinking from the real point of view (निश्चयनय), we find that the statement of Vācaka Umāsvāti is true and from the practical view point (व्यवहारनय) the statement of Ācārya Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmi seems to be true because though the insects namely, the ant, the fly, the bug are asexual and, therefore, of neuter gender, they emit such substances out of their body as are generally known by people as eggs. Now the only question that arises is this: If they belong to the neuter gender, how do they indulge in sexual intercourse of a male and a female?

All living beings have four instincts, expressed or unexpressed. They are 1. food, 2. fear, 3. sex, 4. covetousness. At some places, scriptures say that there are ten instincts and they also include these four instincts. Therefore, all living beings whether they are males, females or neuter beings, have the sex instinct. Therefore, all living beings of Saṃsāra (universe) indulge in sex activities. But in celestial beings and hellish beings, these sex activities do not cause reproduction. Similarly, all living beings, from the one-sensed to the four-sensed, indulge in sexual activities which do not cause reproduction.

According to the Jain canonical treatises namely, Karmagrantha, Karmaṇprakṛti etc. a male's desire for copulation is like a fire laid on grass. his desire for sex is soon satisfied. Female's desire for copulation is like a fire covered with ashes. She takes a long time in satisfying her sex desire. A neuter being's desire for copulation is like a fire laid on a great city. His desire for copulation is never satisfied. The sex instinct is, therefore, most active in neuter beings. Sometimes, the dissatisfaction of sex, causes their death; e.g. the death of a butterfly.

“The Manusmṛti ” says “ स्वेजाः कृमिदंशाद्याः (svējāḥ kṛmidamśādyāḥ ) ” It means that two-sensed, three-sensed and four-sensed living beings are born

in their excreta, urine, sweat etc. Therefore, we take the substances emitted by them for eggs and that is our wrong belief.

In the 'Jñāna-Vijñāna Pūrti' supplement of 'Sandesh'(July, 8, 1987), a daily newspaper, published from Ahmedabad, it has been recently said about the lizard that 'the whip-tail lizard' found in south-west America and north Mexico, is only the female lizard.

Prof. David Fuze has made experiments on it. He kept two female lizards in a cage. One of the lizards behaved as a male and the other lizard behaved as a female. Eggs were got from the lizard which behaved as a female, but after ten or fifteen days, the roles were interchanged. The lizard which behaved as a female, began to behave as a male and the lizard, which behaved as a male began to behave as a female.

The photograph shown in 'Sandesh' show sexual intercourse between two lizards having sex organs of the same gender. This proves that sexual activities between lizards do not cause reproduction.

The 'Tattvārtha Sūtra' names the lizards as 'the domestic cuckoo' (गृहकोकिला) and places it in the class of five-sensed Tiryāñcas, i.e. beasts and birds, born without a wrapper. Along with it, such other insects as the chameleon (which changes color according to the surroundings) and the iguana (which is like the lizard) are also placed in this category. On the other hand, well-versed in fourteen pūrvas (the Jain canonical treatises), Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmi mentions in the Kalpasūtra that Hallōhallikā and Hallikā i.e. the lizard and the chameleon lay subtle eggs. The question, therefore, arises whether the lizard and the chameleon are four-sensed or five-sensed? We have no scriptural solution of this. Scholars are, therefore, requested to send scriptural solution, if they know any.

#### *Different Kind of Pudgala (Matter) :*

Pudgala i.e. matter is of four kinds: (1) Skandha (physical aggregate), (2) Dēśa (part of physical aggregate), (3) Pradēśa (constituent unit) and (4) paramāṇu i.e. the most micro undividable unit (atom). Pudgala-skandhas i.e. physical aggregates are of six kinds. 1. extremely gross (Bādara-Bādara) 2. gross (Bādara) (3) gross- subtle (Bādara-Sūkṣma) 4. subtle-gross (Sūkṣma-Bādara) 5. subtle (Sūkṣma) 6. extremely subtle (Sūkṣma-Sūkṣma). All agree that there are these six kinds. But the problem is related to their examples.



There are some who say that Jain scripturists classify air as subtle-gross and they classify light as gross-subtle. But modern scientists have proved that light particles are very much subtler than air particles and the contention of Jain philosophy is, therefore, not proper and the kinds of a pudgala- skandha (material aggregates) should be re-examined.

All is well and proper with the four kinds of the pudgala- skandha namely, 1. extremely gross, 2. gross, 3. subtle and 4. subtle-subtle. We need to think about only gross-subtle and subtle-gross. A statement of Jain scriptures always refers only to a particular point of view. From another point of view, it may be wrong. But it is not wrong from all points of view.

Air is classified as subtle-gross and light is classified as gross-subtle. Here the statement of the scripturists is only relative. After a considerable pondering, one comes to the conclusion that air and light are properly classified. By light, some mean light- particles/photons and by air, some mean molecules of oxygen, nitrogen etc. But that is not the fact. Air means air-bodies. We can take air molecules as air bodies but this is not true of light. The word light should be taken to mean light-bodies because they are made of aggregates of material particles i.e. Audārika Vargaṇā, Thinking thus, we conclude that fire itself can be in grouping of Audārika Vargaṇā, the particles/photons emerging from it, can be different from it. They can be included in grouping of Taijas Vargaṇā. It should be noted here that there is vast difference between a light-body (fire) and photon particles. In both of them, the light particles/photons are very much subtler than light- bodies.

If from practical point of view, we contend that this classification of material aggregates refers to light-bodies and air- bodies, this classification sounds to be true. With our eyes, we can clearly see fire, and if we touch it, we feel its heat. When air is in motion, it can be perceived through touch only. It is, therefore, proper that fire (not light, but the flame etc. that produce light) is classified as gross-subtle and air is classified as subtle-gross.



---

## 30. Some References To Human Physiology In Jain Scriptures

In Jain scriptures we get information about different subjects like Physics, Mathematics, Biology, Geography and Cosmology. Similarly we also get some references to Human Physiology i.e. the physical structure of human body.

Jain scriptures on Karma-philosophy such as Karmagrantha of Śrī Dēvēndrasūri, Karmaprakṛti of Upādhyāya Śrī Yaśōvijayajī and cosmological treatises like Lōkaprakāśa and Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇī give us an idea of different types of bone-joints.<sup>1</sup> The technical word, used in the Jain scriptures for bone-joints, is Saṅghayaṇa. The names of bone-joints are as follows: (1) Vajra-Rṣabhanārāca (2) Rṣabhanārāca (3) Nārāca (4) Ardhanārāca (5) Kīlikā and (6) Sēvārtta

In the first bone-joint, Vajra-Rṣabhanārāca, there are two Markaṭa-bandhas, one bandage and a bone-pin. Two Markaṭa-bandhas are surrounded by a bandage of bone and a bone-pin passes through the bandage and two bones, which are joined. (fig. 1) Except a bone-pin, the second bone joint Rṣabhanārāca Saṅghayaṇa is just like the first bone-joint. (fig.2) The Third bone-joint, Nārāca, is formed by only two Markaṭa-bandhas (fig. 3) while in the fourth bone-joint Ardhanārāca, there is only one Markaṭa-bandhas. (fig.4) In the fifth bone-joint Kīlikā, two bones are joined with a bone-pin. (fig.5) And in the last i.e. the sixth Sēvārtta Saṅghayaṇa bones are attached to each other as shown in the figures 6 (A), (B) and (C).

According to the Jain treatises, at present we all possess the last Sēvārtta Saṅghayaṇa<sup>2</sup> and that is why our bones move from their original position with a slight jerk. The first Saṅghayaṇa is the strongest bone-joint, while the last Saṅghayaṇa is the weakest bone-joint. Jain scriptures describe that the stronger the bone-joint, the better or worse work can be done by the animals or men. So only a possessor of the first type of bone-joint, i.e. he, who has Vajra-Rṣabhanārāca Saṅghayaṇa, can free himself from the bondage of karma. i.e. he can attain emancipation, and due to

Fig. 1 Vajraṣabhanārāca

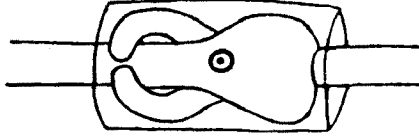


Fig. 2 Rṣabhanārāca

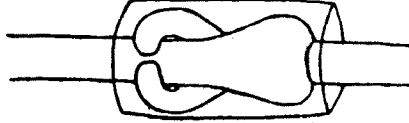


Fig. 3 Nārāca

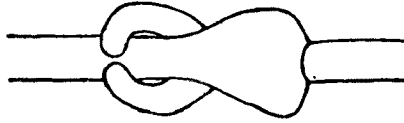


Fig. 4 Ardhanārāca



Fig. 5 Kūlikā

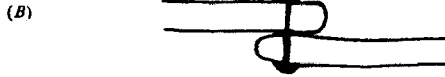
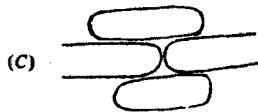
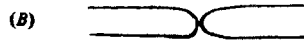
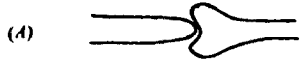


Fig. 6 Sevārta



the worst actions he even goes to the seventh hell also.<sup>3</sup> Similarly all men, with different types of bone-joints, have different bearing power. Kalpasūtra approves that only Lord Mahāvīra could endure the great calamity caused by god Saṅgama, because he had the first type of bone-joint.<sup>4</sup>

Lōkaprakāśa (part III) and Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇī mention that the number of ribs of a man's (human) skeleton during the first, second and third sub-divisions ( ārās) of the second half of the time-cycle (Avasarpiṇkālā) and the sixth, fifth and fourth sub-divisions ( ārās) of first half of the time-cycle ( Utsarpiṇkālā) is 256, 128 and 64 each and the height of their bodies is 3 Krōśas, 2 Krōśas and 1 Krōśa respectively.<sup>5</sup> So we conclude that in Avasarpiṇkālā, the number of ribs decreases as time passes. And so at present we possess only twelve ribs.

Tandulavēyāliya Payannā and Pravacana Sārōddhāra give details of human biology of the present time.<sup>6</sup> There are twelve ribs. They arise from the twelve joints of the back-bone of human body and join with the breast-bone, to form a cage. There are also six half-ribs hanging on each side of the back-bone. Technically they are called Kaṭāha. Without any bone, a tongue is seven aṅgulas long and its weight is 4 palas. The weight of each cornea is 2 palas. There are four parts of the skull, each is called Kapāla. The weight of flesh, in the cavity of the chest-cage, perhaps lungs, is 3.5 palas, while the heart's weight is 25 palas. There are 160 bone-joints in our body and two intestines, a small one and a large one, each weighing five Vāmas. The small intestine is long but thin and the large intestine is short but thick.

Tandulavēyāliya Payannā and Pravacana Sārōddhāra mention that generally men, women and impotents possess 700, 670 and 680 veins respectively. Their situation is as follows :

- 160 veins going upwards from the navel ( Ūrddhvagāminī)
- 160 veins going downwards from the navel ( Adhōgāminī)
- 160 veins going oblique on both sides of the navel ( Tiryaggāminī)
- 160 veins going downwards to anus ( Adhōgāminī Gudā Praviṣṭa)
- 025 veins possessing mucus or mucus ( Ślēṣmadhāriṇī)
- 025 veins possessing bile ( Pittadhāriṇī)
- 010 veins possessing semen ( Śukradhāriṇī)

The speciality of the Yōni (female organ) has been described in the ninth chapter of the Pannavaṇāsuttam<sup>7</sup> and in the third chapter of the Thāṇaṅgasuttam. It is of three types : (1) Kūrmōnnatā, (2) Śaṅkhāvartta and (3) Vaṃśīpatrā. The terms denoting these three types of Yōni are descriptive and self-explanatory. The term Kūrmōnnatā suggests its tortoise like curve, the term Śaṅkhāvartta suggests its conch like coiled shape and the term Vaṃśīpatrā suggests its resemblance to bamboo leaf.

The Kūrmōnnatā Yōnis give birth to great personalities such as Tīrthaṅkaras, Cakravartīs and Vāsudēvas. Strīratna (Chief queen of Cakravartī ) has invariably the Śaṅkhāvartta Yōni. Many living beings descend to this Yōni but they invariably die before their actual birth. That is, none is born from this Yōni. Ācārya Malayagiri records an old view that Strīratna's embryo gets destroyed on account of excessive heat of her sex passion. (Prajñāpanā-Ṭīkā, folio 228 A). Generally women have Yōnis of Vaṃśīpatrā.

We find in the Bhagavatīsūtra (Śataka-2, uddēśaka-5), the Pravacana Sārōddhāra (p. 296) and the Tandulavēyāliya Payannā that on account of gaseous trouble or if some devil makes the embryo stable, it could live for 12 years at the most. After that period the embryo dies or takes a birth through a vulva.<sup>8</sup>

On account of sinful actions of previous births one could live as an embryo for a maximum period of 24 years by descending again to the same embryo after the first twelve years.<sup>9</sup> In Jain treatises, technically it is called Kāyasthiti of embryo.

Tandulavēyāliya Payannā and Vicāraratnākara of Śrī Kīrtivijaya Upādhyāya describes the developing process of human embryo during different months of pregnancy.<sup>10</sup> In the first week of pregnancy sperms and blood combine to form a liquid solution and in the second week it becomes more solid, in the third week tissues multiply in number. At the end of the first month, the weight of the embryo rises to three Karṣas i.e. 48 Māśās or 240 Guṇjās. During the second month, the embryo looks like a cubic piece of tissues and develops into a more solid form. In the third month the mother desires particular things because of the embryo. During the fourth month of pregnancy, different parts of the mother's body such as mammary glands get nourished. In the

fifth month, formation of two hands, two feet and a head takes place. In the sixth month, blood and bile are formed and during the seventh month 700 veins, 500 functional cavities, 9 main pipes (dhamanīs) take their shapes. At the end of the seventh month construction of 99 lakhs of hair-holes and 3.5 crores of hair take place. During the last month the embryo becomes completely ready for independent life.

Tandulavēyāliya Payannā and Vicāraratnākara show that if the embryo is on the right side in the womb of the mother, its modification takes place as a boy or male and if the embryo is on the left side in the womb, it becomes a girl or female.<sup>11</sup>

We find the reproductive period of men and women during life time in Pravacana Sārōddhāra and Tandulavēyāliya Payannā. If the longevity is of a hundred years, mostly men and women can reproduce a child from 16 years to 75 years and from 12 years to 55 years respectively.<sup>12</sup> The developing time for human embryo is 277 days approximately and Kalpasūtra also approves of this fact by giving the developing period of Tīrthaṅkaras' embryo in their mother's womb.<sup>13</sup>

Fertilization of an egg with a sperm i.e. descending of soul to a woman's womb takes place within 12 Muhūrttas i.e. 9 hours and 36 minutes after the copulation of man and woman within 12 days after the menstruation period.<sup>14</sup>

Even though the menstruation cycle in woman's body and the reproduction of sperms in man's body start at the age of 12 years and 16 years respectively, they become capable to reproduce a healthy and well-developed child at the age of 16 years and 20 years respectively.<sup>15</sup>

After giving an anatomical idea about the human body and embryology, the authors of Jain scriptures give us the sermon that we have got a precious human life as a reward of auspicious deeds of previous births and after bearing great sufferings in our mother's womb. So, we should use this precious life for emancipation of soul by doing good actions and attaining spiritual knowledge. Otherwise our precious human life becomes meaningless.

(Jain Journal, July, 1986)

## References

1. • સંઘયણમટ્ઠનિચઓ, તં છદ્ધા વજ્જરિસહનારાયં ।  
તહ રિસહનારાયં નારાયં અદ્ધનારાયં ॥૩૮॥  
કિલિઅ છેવટ્ઠં ઇહ રિસહો પટ્ઠો અ કિલિઆ વજ્જં ।  
ઉભઓ મક્કકડબંધો નારાયં ઇમમુરાલંગે ॥૩૯॥

*saṅghayaṇamaṭṭhinicaō, taṃ chaddhā vajjarisahanārāyaṃ .  
taha risahanārāyaṃ nārāyaṃ addhanārāyaṃ ..38..  
kiliā chēvaṭṭhaṃ iha risahō paṭṭō a kiliā vajjaṃ .  
ubhaō makkakadabandhō nārāyaṃ imamurālaṅgē ..39..*

- [ The first Karmagranth of Śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī Verses-38 and 39]
- Lōkaprakāśa of Śrī Vinayanijayajī part-1 Sarga-3 Verses 398 to408
- Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇīsūtra of Śrī Candrasūrijī Verses159-160
- Karmaprakṛti, Commentary on the first verse by Śrī Yaśōvijayajī

2. સંપદે ખલુ આડસો ! મનુયાણ છેવટ્ઠે સંઘયણે વટ્ઠદે ।

*sampai khalu āusō ! manuyāṇaṃ chēvaṭṭhē saṅghayaṇē vaṭṭai .*

[ Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P.27]

3. છેવટ્ઠેણે ડ ગમ્મદે, ચડરો જા કપ્પ કિલિયાઈસુ ।  
ચડસુ દુ દુ કપ્પવુદ્ધી પદ્મણં જાવ સિદ્ધો વિ ॥૧૬૨॥  
દો પદ્મ પુદ્ધવી ગમણં, છેવટ્ઠે કિલિયાઈ સંઘયણે ।  
ઈક્કિક્ક પુદ્ધવી વુદ્ધી,..... ॥૨૫૫॥

*chēvaṭṭhēṇa u gammai, caurō jā kappa kiliyāīsu .  
causu du du kappavuḍḍhī paḍhamēṇaṃ jāva siddhō vi ..162..  
dō paḍhama puḍhavi gamaṇaṃ, chēvaṭṭhē kiliyāi saṅghayaṇē .  
ikkikka puḍhavi vuḍḍhī,.....255.*

[Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇīsūtra of Śrī Candrasūrijī Verses162 and 255]

4. Kalpasūtra Subōdhikā Commentary by Śrī Vinayavijayajī Sixth part

5. • Commentary on Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇīsūtra verses- 3 & 4

• Lōkaprakāśa of Śrī Vinayavijayajī part-3, Sarga-29, Verses 178-276-277-284

- Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P.26-A

• Kālasaptatikā Prakaraṇa Verse-10

6. • आउसो ! अणुपुव्वेणं अट्ठारस्स य पिट्ठकरंङगसंधिओ बारस पंसलिया करंडा, छप्पंसुलिए कडाहे, ..... चउ पलिया जिब्भा, दु पलियाणि अच्छीणि, चउकवालं सिरं,.....सत्तंगुलिया जीहा, अद्धुट्ठपलियं हिययं, पणवीस पलाइ कालिज्जं, दो अंता पंचवामा पण्णत्ता - तं जहा थूलंतं य १ तणुयंतं य २ ...आउसो ! इमंमि सररीए सट्ठि संधिसयं.....सत्तसिरासयाइ.....आउसो ! इमंमि सररीए सट्ठिसिरासयं नाभिप्पभवाणं उड्ढगामिणीणं, ....आउसो ! इमंमि सररीए सट्ठिसिरासयं नाभिप्पभवाणं अहोगामिणीणं,.....आउसो ! इमंमि सररीए सट्ठिसिरासयं नाभिप्पभवाणं तिरियगामिणीणं.....आउसो ! इमस्स जंतुस्स सट्ठिसिरासयं नाभिप्पभवाणं अहोगामिणीणं गुदप्पविट्ठाणं.....आउसो ! इमस्स जंतुस्स पणवीसं सिराओ पित्तधारिणीओ, पणवीसं सिराओ सिंभधारिणीओ, दस सिराओ सुक्कधारिणीओ, सत्तसिरासयाइ पुरिस्स, तीसूणाइ इत्थीयाए, वीसूणाइ पंडगस्स.....

āusō ! aṇupuvvēṇaṃ aṭṭhāraṣṣa ya piṭṭhakaṇḍagasandhiō bāraṣa paṃsaliyā karaṇḍā, chappaṃsuliē kaḍāhē, ..... cau paliyā jibbhā, du paliyāṇi acchīṇi, caukavālaṃ sirāṃ,.....sattaṅguliyā jīhā, addhuttapaliyaṃ hiyaṃ, paṇavīsa paḷāiṃ kālījjaṃ, dō aṃtā pañcavāmā paṇṇattā - taṃ jahā thūlantē ya 1 taṇuyantē ya 2 ...āusō ! imammi sarīrāē saṭṭhi sandhisayaṃ.....sattasirāsayaīṃ.....āusō ! imammi sarīrāē saṭṭhisirāsayaṃ nābhippabhavāṇaṃ uḍḍhagāmiṇiṇaṃ, ....āusō ! imammi sarīrāē saṭṭhisirāsayaṃ nābhippabhavāṇaṃ ahōgāmiṇiṇaṃ,.....āusō ! imammi sarīrāē saṭṭhisirāsayaṃ nābhippabhavāṇaṃ tiriyaḡāmiṇiṇaṃ.....āusō ! imassa jantussa saṭṭhisirāsayaṃ nābhippabhavāṇaṃ ahōgāmiṇiṇaṃ gudappaviṭṭhāṇaṃ.....āusō ! imassa jantussa paṇavīsaṃ sirāō pittadhāriṇiō, paṇavīsaṃ sirāō simbhadhāriṇiō, dāsa sirāō sukkadhāriṇiō, sattasirāsayaīṃ purisassa, tīsūṇāiṃ itthiyāē, vīsūṇāiṃ paṇḍagassa..... [ Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 35-36-A]

- अट्ठारसपिट्ठकरंङयस्स संधीउ हुति देहंमि ।  
बारस पंसुलियाकरंडया इह तह छ पंसुलिए ॥६८॥  
होइ कडाहे सत्तंगुलाइ जीहा पलाइ पुण चउरो ।  
अच्छीउ दो पलाइ सिरं तु भणियं चउकवालं ॥६९॥  
अद्धुट्ठपलं हिययं..... । कालेज्जयं तु समए पणवीस पलाइ निदिट्ठं ॥७०॥  
अंताइ दोत्रि इहयं पत्तेयं पंच पंच वामाओ । सट्ठिसयं संधीणं,..... ॥७१॥  
.....सट्ठिसयं अत्राण पि सिराण अहोगामीणीण तहा ॥७३॥  
सट्ठिसयं सिराणं नाभिप्पभवाणं सिरमुदगयाणं ।  
.....अवराण गुदपविट्ठाण होइ सट्ठिसयं तह सिराणं ।  
.....तिरियगमाण सिराणं सट्ठिसयं होइ अवराणं ॥७६॥  
.....पणवीसं सिंभधारिणीओ ॥७७॥



तह पित्तधारिणीओ पणवीसं दस य सुक्कधारिणीओ ।  
इय सत्त सिरासयाइ नाभिप्पभवाण पुरिसस्स ।।७८।।  
तीसूणाइ इत्थीण, वीसूणाइ हुंति संदस्स ।.....

*aṭṭhārasapiṭṭhakarāṇḍayassa sandhiu hanti dēhammi .  
bārasa paṃsuliyaṇḍayā iha taha ccha paṃsuliē ..68..  
hōi kaḍāhē sattaṇḍulāiṃ jīhā palāi puṇa caurō.  
acchiu dō palāiṃ siram tu bhaṇiyam caukkavālam ..69..  
addhuṭṭhapalam hiyayam.....  
kālējjayam tu samaē paṇavīsa palāiṃ nidiṭṭham..70..  
amṭāiṃ dōnni ihayam pattēyam pañca pañca vāmāō .  
saṭṭhisayam sandhīṇam,.....71..  
.....saṭṭhisayam annāṇa vi sirāṇa ahōgāmīṇīṇa tahā ..73..  
saṭṭhisayam sirāṇam nābhīppabhavāṇam siramuvagayāṇam .  
.....avarāṇa gudapaviṭṭhāṇa hōi saṭṭhisayam taha sirāṇam .  
.....tīriyagāmāṇa sirāṇam saṭṭhisayam hōi avarāṇam ..76..  
.....paṇavīsam simbhadhārīṇīō..... ..77..  
taha pīttadhārīṇīō paṇavīsam dasa ya sukkadhārīṇīō .  
iya satta sirāsayaṇḍayā nābhīppabhavāṇa purisassa ..78..  
tīsūṇāiṃ iṭṭhīṇa, vīsūṇāiṃ hanti saṇḍhassa .....*

[Pravacana Sārōddhāra P. 402]

7. • Lōkaprakāśa of Śrī Vinayavijayajī part-1, Sarga-3, Verses 55 to 60

• Pannavanā Suttam P. 192 published by Śrī Mahāvīra Jaina Vidyālaya,  
Bombay

• Brhatsaṅgrahaṇīśūtra of Śrī Candrasūrijī Verse 325

8. • गब्भट्ठइ मणुस्सीणुक्किट्ठा होइ वरिसबारसगं

*gabbhaṭṭhii maṇussīṇukkiṭṭhā hōi varisabārasagam*

[Pravacana Sārōddhāra of Śrī Nēmicandrasūrijī P. 401-A]

• मणुस्सी गब्भे णं भंते ! 'मणुस्सी गब्भे'ति कालओ केवच्चिरं होइ ? गोयमा जहन्नेणं  
अंतोमुहुत्तं उक्कोसेणं बारस संवच्छराइ ।

*maṇussī gabbhē ṇam bhantē ! 'maṇussī gabbhē'tti kālāō kēvacciraṇ hōi?  
gōyamā jahannēṇam amṭōmuhuttaṇ ukkōsēṇam bārasa samvaccharāiṃ .*

[Bhagavatī Sūtra part - 1, P. 98, published by Śrī Mahāvīra Jaina Vidyālaya,  
Bombay]

- कोइ पुण पावकारी बारस संवच्छराई उक्कोसं ।  
अच्छइ उ गब्भवासे असुइप्पभवे असुइयंमि ॥

*kōi puṇa pāvakārī bārasa saṃvaccharāiṃ ukkōsaṃ .  
acchai u gabbhavāsē asuippabhavē asuiyammi .*

[Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 14-A]

9. • कायभवत्थे णं भंते कायभवत्थे त्ति कालओ केवच्चिवरं होइ ? गोयमा जहन्नेणं अंतोमुहत्तं उक्कोसेणं चउवीसं संवच्छराई ।

*kāyabhavattthē ṇaṃ bhantē kāyabhavattthē tti kālaō kēvaccivaraṃ hōi ?  
gōyamā jahannēṇaṃ aṃtōmuhuttaṃ ukkōsēṇaṃ cauvisāṃ saṃvaccharāiṃ .*

[Bhagavati Sūtra part - 1, P. 98, published by Śrī Mahāvīra Jaina Vidyālaya, Bombay]

- गब्भस्स य कायठिइ, नराण चउवीस वरिसाई ।

*gabbhassa ya kāyaṭhii, narāṇa cauvisa varisāiṃ .*

[Pravacana Sārōddhāra of Śrī Nēmicandrasūrijī P. 401-A]

- तु शब्दात् मनुष्यतिरश्चां कायस्थितिः चतुर्विंशतिवर्षप्रमाणा.....तावत् स्थितिः ।

*tu śabdāt manuṣyatiraścāṃ kāyasthitiḥ caturviṃśativarṣapramāṇā.....tāvat  
sthitiḥ .* [Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 6]

10. इमे खलु जीवो अम्मापिउसंयोगे माउउयं पिउसुक्कं ते तदुभय संसट्ठं कलुसं किब्बिसं तप्पदमाए आहारं आहारिता गब्भत्ताए वक्कमइ, सत्ताहं कललं होइ, सत्ताहं होइ अब्बुयं, (सूत्र-१) अब्बुया जायए पेसी, पेसीओ य घणं भवे॥ तो पढमे मासे करिसूणं पलं जायइ १ बीउ मासे पेसी संजायए घणा २, तइए मासे माउए दोहलं जणइ ३, चउत्थे मासे माउयए अंगाई पीणेइ ४, पंचमे मासे पंच पिडियाओ पाणि पायं सिरं चेव निव्वत्तेइ ५, छट्ठे मासे पित्तसोणियं उवचिणेइ ६, सत्तमे मासे सत्तसिरासयाई (७००), पंच पेसी सयाई (५००), नव घमनीओ नव नउई च रोमकूवसयसहस्साई निव्वत्तेइ (९९,००,०००) विणा केसमंसूणा । सह केसमंसूणा अद्दुट्ठाओ रोमकूव कोडीओ निव्वत्तेइ । (सूत्र-२) ।

*imē khalu jīvō ammapiusaṃyōgē māuuyāṃ piusukkaṃ tē tadubhaya  
saṃsaṭṭhaṃ kalusaṃ kibbisāṃ tappaḍhamāē āhāraṃ āhāritā gabbhattāē  
vakkamai, sattahaṃ kalalaṃ hōi, sattāhaṃ hōi abbuyaṃ, (sūtra-1) abbuyā  
iāyaē pēsī, pēsīō ya ghaṇaṃ bhavē.. tō paḍhamē māsē karisūṇaṃ palaṃ  
iāyai 1 bīu māsē pēsī sañiāyaē ghaṇā 2, taiē māsē māuē dōhalaṃ jaṇai 3,  
cautthē māsē māuyaē aṃgāiṃ pīṇēi 4, pañcamē māsē pañca piṇḍiyāō pāṇi*

*oāyaṃ siram cēva nivattēi 5, chaṭṭhē māsē pīttasōṇiyaṃ uvaciṇēi 6, sattamē māsē sattsasirāsayaīm (700), pañca pēsī sayāīm (500), nava dhamanīō nava nauīm ca rōmakūvasayasahassāīm nivattēi (99,00,000) viṇā kēsamaṃsūṇā . saha kēsamaṃsūṇā addhuṭṭhāō rōmakūva kōḍīō nivattēi . (sūtra-2)*

[Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 7]

11. • दाहिनकुच्ची पुरिसस्स होइ, वामा उ इत्थीयाए य । ।

*dāhiṇakucchi purisassa hōi, vāmā u itthīyāē ya . .*

[Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 6]

• Vicāratnākara P 171-A

12. • पनपन्नाए परेणं जोणि पमिलायए महिलियाणं ।

पणसत्तरिइ परओ, पाएण पुमं भवेबीओ ।।

*panapannāē parēṇaṃ jōṇi pamilāyāē mahiliyāṇaṃ . paṇasattarii paraō, pāēṇa pumaṃ bhavē'biō ...*

[Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 4]

• तथा चोक्तं स्थानाङ्गटीकायाम् -

मासि मासि रजः स्त्रीणामजस्रं श्रवति त्र्यहं । वत्सरात् द्वादशादूर्ध्वं याति पञ्चाशतः क्षयम् ।।

*tathā cōktaṃ sthānāṅgaṭīkāyām - māsi māsi rajaḥ strīṇāmajasra śravati tryaham . vatsarāt dvādaśādūrdhvaṃ yāti pañcāśataḥ kṣayam ..*

[ Ibidem P. 5-A]

13. दुन्नि अहोरत्तसए, संपुण्णे सत्तसत्तरि चव । गब्भमि वसइ जीवो, अद्धमहोरत्तमणणं च ।।

*dunni ahōrattasaē, sampuṇṇē sattsattari cēva . gabbhammi vasai jīvō, addhamahōrattamaṇaṇaṃ ca..*

[Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 3-A]

And the Kalpasūtra Subōdhikā commentary on the last Sūtra of the fourth part.

14. • मणुस्स पंचेदिय तिरिक्ख जोणिय बीए णं भंते ! जोणिब्भूए केवतियं कालं संचिट्ठेइ ? गोयमा ! जहन्नेणं अंतोमुहुत्तं उक्कोसेणं बारसमुहुत्ता ।

*maṇussa pañcēdiya tirikṣha jōṇiya biē ṇaṃ bhantē ! jōṇibbhūē kēvatiyaṃ kālaṃ sañciṭṭhēi ? gōyamā ! jahannēṇaṃ aṃtōmuhuttaṃ ukkōsēṇaṃ*

*bārasamuhuttā .*

[Bhagavatī Sūtra part - 1, P. 98, published by Śrī Mahāvīra Jaina Vidyālaya, Bombay]

• रिउसमय ण्हाय नारी, नरोवभोगेण गब्भसंमूह । बारसमुहुत्तमज्जे जायइ, उवरिं पुणो नेय ॥

*riusamaya ṇhāya nārī, narōvabhōgēṇa gabbhasammūha .*

*bārasamuhuttamajjhē jāyai, uvariṃ puṇō nēya .....*

[Pravacana Sārōddhāra P. 401]

• बारस चेव मुहुत्ता, उवरिं विद्धंस गच्छइ सा ।

*bārasa cēva muhuttā, uvariṃ viddhamsa gacchai sā .*

[Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 4]

15. तथा चोक्तं स्थानाङ्गटीकायाम् -

पूर्ण षोडशवर्षा स्त्री, पूर्ण विंशेन संगता । शुद्धे गर्भाशये १ मार्गे २ रक्ते ३ शुक्रे ४ ऽनिले पुनः ॥  
वीर्यवन्तं सुतं सुते, ततो न्यूनाब्दयोः पुनः । रोग्यत्पायुरधन्यो वा गर्भो भवति नैव वा ॥

*tathā cōktaṃ sthānāṅgaṭīkāyām -*

*pūrṇa ṣōḍaśavarṣā strī, pūrṇa viṃśēna saṅgatā .*

*śuddhē garbhāśayē 1 mārgē 2 raktē 3 śukrē 4 'nilē punaḥ ..*

*vīryavantaṃ sutam sutē, tatō nyūnābdayoḥ punaḥ .*

*rōgyalpāyuradhanyō vā garbhō bhavati naiva vā .....*

[Tandulavēyāliya Payannā P. 5-A]

N. B. [ The Tandulavēyāliya Payannā , The Vicāraratnākara and The Pravacana Sārōddhāra are published by Śrī Dēvacandalālabhāi Jaina Pustakōddhāra Fund, Surat ]



WE WERE PARTED MANY THOUSANDS OF KALPAS AGO, YET WE  
HAVE NOT BEEN SEPARATED EVEN FOR A MOMENT. WE ARE  
FACING EACH OTHER ALL DAY LONG, YET WE HAVE NEVER MET.

D. T. SUZUKI. THE ESSENCE OF BUDDHISM p.26

## Appendix I

### Index of Proper Names

- Abhayadēvasūri** 238  
**Abhayasāgara, Pannyaśa** 129, 130  
**Abhinandansvāmi** 149  
**Agrawal, P.M. (Parasmal)** 212, 213  
**Ajitanātha** 149  
**Akbar** 165, 166  
**Amarēndravijaya, Muni** 83, 141  
**Āmbikā**, 193  
**Amin Kureshi** 185  
**Anantanātha** 149  
**Aranātha** 150  
**Archimedes** 116  
**Ariṣṭanēmi (Nēmanātha-Nēminātha)**  
     216  
**Ashoka, King** 118  
**Ānandaghana** 180  
**Āryabhaṭṭa** 117  
**Āryabhaṭṭa-1** 98  
**Āryabhaṭṭa-2** 98  
**Backha** 180  
**Bajjū Bāvarā** 165, 166, 167, 183  
**Baksalī** 98  
**Baksi, C.C., Lieut. Col.** 137, 172, 184,  
     188, 202  
**Barton, A. W.** 123, 140  
**Bethovan**, 180  
**Bhadrabāhusvāmī** 124, 190, 202, 244,  
     246, 247, 299, 300, 301  
**Bhandari, Narendra** 15, 139  
**Bhāskara-1** 98  
**Bhāskara-2** 98  
**Binitosh Bhattācārya** 196  
**Boltzmann** 23  
**Bose, Satyendranath (S. N.)** 205, 206,  
     207, 208, 212, 213  
**Brahmā** 147, 196, 199,  
**Brahmagupta** 98, 107  
**Brāhmī** 198  
**Buddha, Gautama** 99, 144, 216, 232  
**Buffon** 117  
**Candraprabhasvāmi** 149  
**Candrasūriljī** 308, 310  
**Capra, Fritjof** 19, 31, 38, 177, 185  
**Captain Freshier** 129  
**Captain J. Ras** 129  
**Captain Mill** 130  
**Caraka, Sage** 178  
**Cardon H.** 95, 107  
**Carl Gustav Jung** 177  
**Carl Segan** 138, 143, 144, 145, 292  
**Cāmuṇḍā**, 198  
**Chandrashekhar, Subramanyam** 53, 70,  
     71  
**Cidānandajī** 181  
**Colebrook, C.T.** 12  
**Collet Caillat** 123  
**D.Shanks** 117  
**Daksavijayji, Muni** 184, 185  
**Darwin, Charles** 138, 145, 150, 156  
**Dānasūriljī** 237  
**De Broglie** 26, 27, 28, 207, 224  
**Demorgan** 117  
**Desai, Urmiben** 84, 184  
**Desai, Morarji** 252  
**Deshpande, V. K.** 15  
**Devid Fuze** 301  
**Devluk, Nandalal** 201  
**Dewison, C. J.** 27  
**Dēvēndrasūriljī** 270, 303, 308  
**Dēvacandrajī, Paṇḍita** 181  
**Dēvarddhigaṇi Kṣamāśramaṇa** 100, 124  
**Dēvaśarmā** 232  
**Dharaṇēndra** 189  
**Dharmanātha** 149  
**Dixit, Pankaj** 203  
**Dīpavijayajī** 181  
**Doshi, Becharadas, Pandit** 141  
**Doshi, M. N.** 141  
**Durgā** 193  
**Dutt, Ashok Kumar** 73, 74, 76, 77, 78, 79,

- 80,81,82,84,85,86,88,89,171,173,  
184, 188,202, 217
- Einstein** 3,4,5,6,8,9,10,122,13,14,17,  
18,24,26,32,36,41,42,49,52,53,55,57,  
60,61,62,63,64,65,66,67,70,73,90,10  
9,110,111,113,132,205,206, 207,208,  
209,212,213,214,252
- Euclid** 100,111
- Fahyan** 118
- Faraday, Michael** 3, 21, 217
- Foucault, Leon** 21
- Fox** 117
- Fox, Sydney** 158,163
- Fresnel, A. J.** 21
- Freud** 251, 252
- G. Leibnitz** 116
- Galile** 5,9
- Ganguly, J. B.** 112
- Gautama Rsi** 232
- Gautamasvāmī, Indrabhūti** 6,64,65,  
190,191,230,231,232,233,269
- George Cantor** 100
- Gerge Nielsen** 83,139
- Germer** 27
- Gohel, V. B.** 184
- Hargovindadas, Pandit** 141
- Haribhadrāsūrijī, Ācārya** 125,140,141,  
181,190,235,239,242,286,290
- Haridāsa** 165
- Heber, G.** 43
- Hertz, Heinrich Rudolf** 21,22,23
- Hēmacandrācāryajī** 181,183,190,203,  
241,242,292
- Hēmahansa Gaṇi** 107,114
- Hīrasūrijī** 237,240
- Hu-en-sang** 118
- Humāyu** 167
- Huygens, Christian** 20
- Ian Shelton** 53,71
- J. Wallis** 116
- Jain, G.R.** 12,140
- Jain, L. C.** 113,118
- Jain, Nandalal (N. L.)** 11,35
- Jain, Nemichand** 128,285
- Jambūvijayajī, Muni** 203
- Janardan Dave** 184,185
- Jayasimha, King** 273
- Jean Bornard,** 21
- Jean-Pierrie Luminet** 69, 71
- Jeans** 23
- Jesus** 144
- Jhāñjhaṇaśā** 273
- Jinabhadrāsūrijī, Ācārya** 96
- Jinadattāsūrijī,** 237
- Jinaprabhāsūrijī** 190
- Jinavallabhasūrijī** 237
- Jñānavimalasūrijī** 181
- John Michell** 51,53,70
- Kabīrajī** 228
- Kalyāṇadāśa** 195
- Kalyanavijay, Panniyas** 141
- Kamalākara** 98
- Kanti Bhatta** 260
- Kapadia, Hiralal Rasikdas** 141
- Karanidan Shethia** 187,201,202,203
- Kālī** 193
- Kāmadēva** 259
- Kerr, Roy P.** 211
- Kirchhoff** 22
- Kīrtivijaya, Upādhyāya** 306
- Kṛṣṇa** 184,206
- Kunthunātha** 150,152
- L. Euler** 116
- Laplace, Marquis de** 52,43,70
- Laxmi Dēvī (Śrīdēvī),** 191
- Laxmichandra Mohanlal Shah, Prof**  
184,185
- Lazzarini** 117
- Lenard** 24
- Lene Vøstergaard Hau** 16
- Leonardo da Vinci** 252
- Lijun Wang** 14,15
- Lindemann** 115
- Lord Brounker** 116
- Madhu Khanna** 89,203
- Mahākālī** 103

- Mahālakṣmī** 198  
**Mahātripurāṣundarī** 198  
**Mahāvīra(svāmī)** Lord, Bhagavān 6,  
 60,62,64,65,94,99,100,124,140,  
 155,167,190,216,221,230,231,232,23  
 4, 267,272,292,305  
**Mahāvīrācārya** 95,98,107  
**Mahendrakumar "Dvitiya", Muni** 12,60  
**Mahēśa** 199  
**Malayagiri, Ācārya** 102,306  
**Mallinātha** 150  
**Mandōdarī** 183  
**Mathews, P. M.** 226,242  
**Max Toth** 83,139  
**Maxwell, James Cleark** 21,22  
**Māhēśvarī** 198  
**Mānadēvasūrijī** 190  
**Mānatuṅgasūrijī** 190  
**Mānavijayajī, Upādhyāya** 223  
**Mehta, Daves** 203  
**Mehta, M. K.** 141  
**Michelangelo** 252  
**Mikhail D. Lukin** 16  
**Miller, Stanley** 158,163  
**Mīran** 180,184  
**Mozart** 180  
**Muniśvara** 98  
**Nagendra Vijay** 89  
**Nami** 189  
**Nandanasūrijī, Ācārya** 72  
**Nandiśeṇa** 178,179,190  
**Nandighoshvijay, Muni** 39,72,113,114,  
 201,202,212  
**Narasimha Mahētā** 180  
**Narlikar, J. V.** 14,15  
**Narlikar, V.. V.** 208,209,211  
**Nāgārjuna** 190  
**Nāgakētu** 222  
**Nārāyaṇa** 98  
**Newton, Isaac** 6,20,21,23,43,52,109,  
 110,252  
**Nēmicandra, Ācārya (Digmbara)** 132  
**Nēmicandrasūrijī** 310  
**Nēmisūrīśvarajī, Ācārya** 259  
**Niṣkulānandajī** 253  
**Olais Roemer** 51,70  
**OMP bilaniuk** 15  
**Oparin, A. I.** 158,163  
**Ospensky, P. D.** 172  
**Pādaliptasūrijī** 190,223  
**Pārśvanātha** 216  
**Pēthaśāśā** 273  
**Padmaprabhasvāmi** 149  
**Padmavijayajī, Paṇḍita** 181  
**Pasteur, Louis** 157,162  
**Patel, Liladhar K.** 211  
**Peter Debye** 206  
**Peterson** 141  
**Pierre Simon** 52,70  
**Pierre Luminet** 69,71  
**Planck, Max** 23,24,36,206,207,224, 255  
**Plato** 252  
**Prabōdhacandra Gaṇi** 237,239  
**Pratimā Gaurī** 183,185  
**Priyagranthasūrijī** 190  
**Pythagoras** 91,94  
**Rao, J. Krishna** 208  
**Rayleigh** 23  
**Raymond Bornard** 252  
**Rāmānujan, Śrīnivāsa** 94,118,119,136  
**Rāṇā** 184  
**Rāvaṇa** 183  
**Redi, Francesco** 157,161,162  
**Rīrī** 167  
**Robert Resnik** 72  
**Ronald L. Walsworth** 16  
**Ronald Nameth** 192  
**Rōhagupta** 190  
**Rūpavijayajī, Paṇḍita** 181  
**Ṛṣabhadēva, Bhagavān( Ādinātha)**  
 100,138,149,152,189, 216, 292,  
**Sakalacandrajī, Upādhyāya** 181  
**Sambhavanātha** 149  
**Samitasūrijī, Ārya** 190  
**Sanghadāsa Gaṇi** 189  
**Saraswatī** 191

- Satsangi, D. K. 90  
 Schwarzschild, Karl 53,70,208,209  
 Sēnasūrijī 240  
 Shah, H. F. 212  
 Shah, Ashish Manekalal 141  
 Shipman, Harry L. 53,66,69,71,72,  
 Siddhasēna Divākara 190  
 Siddhasēna Gaṇi 82,83,184,242  
 Simandharsvāmi 216  
 Skandilācārya 190  
 Smith 117  
 Sthulbhadrajī 190  
 Sudarshan, G. 3,15  
 Sumati, Gaṇi 141  
 Sumatinātha 149  
 Supārśvanātha 149  
 Suvidhinātha 149  
 Sūrādāsa, 180  
 Sūryodayasūrijī, Ācārya 187,217,232  
 Svāmī Vīvēkānanda 181  
 Śāntinātha 138,150,152,292,293  
 Śāntisūrijī, Ācārya 151,290  
 Śayyambhavasūrijī 236  
 Śīlacandravijayajī 181  
 Śīlāṅkācāryajī 242,246,247  
 Śīltanātha 149  
 Śaṅkara 258  
 Śaṅkarācāryaji 102,103  
 Śrēyāṃsanātha 149,152  
 Śrīdhara 98  
 Śrīguptācārya 190  
 Śrīpati 98  
 Tagore, Rabindranath 208  
 Tānā 167  
 Tānasēna 165,166,167  
 Tawari, Paramahansa 142  
 Thomson, J. J. 22,24  
 Tiwari, Sarju 101,112,113,114  
 Tribhuvanasvāminī Dēvī 191  
 Tulasīdāsa 180  
 Udayaratnajī, Paṇḍita 181  
 Udayasūrljī 131,141  
 Umāsvāti 33,62,66,184,257,300,301  
 Uttamavijayajī, Paṇḍita 181  
 Vaiṣṇavī 198  
 Vaidya, Arunbhai 212  
 Vaidya, P.C. 103,106,205, 208,209,  
 210,211,212,213,214  
 Vaidya, Paresh 92  
 Vajrasvāmi, Ārya 190  
 Vakharia, Nirajanbhai N. 57,58,72  
 Varāha Mihīra 98  
 Vāsopūjyasvāmi 138,149,152  
 Venkatesan, K. 226,242  
 Viṣṇu 199  
 Vijayalakṣmīsūrijī 181  
 Vikram Sarabhai 212  
 Vimal Dhami 183  
 Vimalanātha 149  
 Vinami 189  
 Vinayavijayajī 100,113,308,310  
 Vīrasēna, Ācārya 94,118,135,136  
 Vīravijayajī, Paṇḍita 171,181,184  
 Vṛddhavādī 190  
 Weber, G. 43  
 Wien 22  
 William Raleigh 296  
 Wolf 117  
 Yaśōvijayajī, Upādhyāya 181,303,308  
 Yakṣarāja Gaṇipiaka 191  
 Young 45



## Appendix II

### Glossary

### Index of Scientific Terms

- Abiogenesis** 158, 162, 163
- Alpha rays** 34
- Amino acids** 158, 163
- Ammonia (NH<sub>3</sub>)** 158
- Amphibians** 145
- Amplitude** 15, 16, 30, 36, 37, 45, 47, 64, 178, 254, 255
- Anions** 289, 290
- Area** 39, 42, 43, 48, 53, 55, 71, 100, 115, 117, 118, 134, 135, 136, 142, 221
- Asexual Reproduction** 160
- Astrophysics** 16, 49, 109, 210, 211
- Atom** 14, 16, 18, 19, 27, 31, 32, 34, 41, 44, 55, 62, 65, 74, 75, 76, 77, 82, 85, 103, 105, 132, 143, 154, 158, 173, 207, 235, 239, 240, 301
- Beta rays/particles** 18, 34, 110
- Big bang theory** 143, 144
- Bio-electromagnetic field / energy** 81, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 229, 230, 231, 256
- Biogenesis** 157, 162, 163
- Black hole** 6, 13, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 60, 61, 64, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 75, 56, 57, 58, 60, 61, 64, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71,
- Bose-Einstein statistics** 207, 212, 213
- Calcium** 278
- Carbohydrates** 274, 278, 279
- Carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>)** 78
- Carbon-14 isotopes** 139, 293, 294
- Cations** 289, 290
- Casein** 278
- Cell** 144, 154, 158, 159, 163, 294, 295
- Centrifugal force** 51, 69
- Centripetal force** 51
- Circumference** 81, 100, 115, 116, 117, 118, 130, 134, 135, 136
- Compass** 115, 229, 243
- Complex number** 95
- Conservation of mass** 47
- Constructive interference** 45, 46, 47, 48
- Cosmic** 50, 132, 136, 138, 143, 144, 145, 146, 151, 152, 153, 156, 292, 293
- Cosmic dust** 156
- Cosmozoic** 156, 157, 161
- Crest** 25, 45, 46, 47, 84, 85
- Cube** 108
- Decibel** 178
- Deflection** 52, 53, 214
- Destructive interference** 45, 46, 47, 48, 84, 85
- Diameter** 50, 51, 52, 53, 70, 100, 115, 116, 118, 134, 135
- DNA (Dioxy Ribo Nucleic acid)** 158, 159
- Doppler's effect** 40, 41, 42, 48, 68
- Electromagnetic waves/force/field** 9, 21, 22, 23, 25, 26, 27, 32, 33, 34, 36, 37, 38, 43, 44, 67, 73, 74, 77, 78, 80, 81, 206, 207, 225, 226, 229, 230, 231, 240, 242, 254, 256
- Electron** 11, 24, 27, 28, 31, 32, 34, 43, 44, 74, 84, 207, 235
- Endocrine glands** 252, 258, 259
- Escape velocity** 50, 51, 67, 69, 70
- Even number** 91, 93
- Evolution** 24, 96, 140, 144, 150, 151, 156,
- Fission** 33, 34, 77
- Fossils** 139, 144, 145, 150, 151, 156, 293, 294
- Frequency** 22, 24, 25, 26, 27, 33, 37, 40, 41, 42, 43, 45, 47, 73, 74, 77, 168, 169, 171, 180, 224, 225, 226, 240, 241, 254, 255
- Fusion** 33, 34, 77
- Gamma rays** 34
- General Theory of Relativity** 52, 57, 61,

63,109,111, 205,208,214

**Geology** 158**Gravitational force** 13,50,51,52, 53,

55,58,61,62,63,64, 67,69, 109,110,

111,177,208,209,211, 212 ,213, 214,

**Heterotrophs** 159**Hydrochloric acid (HCL)** 278, 279**Hydrogen (H<sub>2</sub>)** 158, 235**Infrared rays** 64,67,73,77**Infrasonic waves** 33,74,174**Interference** 20,31,33,44,45,46,47, 48,84**Interval** 3,4,5,138,146,168,169, 274,275**Iodine** 152**Ionization** 290**Iron** 21,229,278**Irrational number** 94,115**Isotope** 139, 293**Jet lag** 265**Kinetic energy** 17,25,66**Lacto-bacillus** 278**Lactose** 278, 279**Latitude** 130**Lecithin** 252**Longitude** 130**Magnesium** 278**Magnet** 21,80,229,230,256**Magnetic force/force line/field/pole**

21,25,28,31,37,80,176,192,217,

229,230,254,256,258,259

**Mass** 3,4,5,6,9,12,13,17,18,26,27,

36,43,47,50,51,52,62,63,64,65,

66,67,69,70,71,73,110,188,208,

209,213,214,224,288

**Mechanical waves** 25**Meson** 43**Mesozoic** 151**Methane gas (CH<sub>4</sub>)** 158,163**Momentum =  $mv$**  26,28,43,47, 214,224**Multicellular** 144,145,154,**Natural number** 91,92,93,94**Negative number** 6, 93,95,106,107**Neutron** 11,27,31,34,43,44,53,55,

67,68,71,74

**Neutron star** 53,55, 67,68,71**Nitrogen** 252,302**Non-mechanical waves** 25**Nucleus** 31,162**Octave** 168,169,172**Odd number** 91,93**Oxygen** 78,144,145,150,158,234,

235,262,264,274,302

**Ozone** 139,158**Particle theory** 19,20,21,22,23,24,

31,32,44,

**Phobos** 50,69**Phosphorus** 278**Photo-electric Effect** 24,28,31,43, 44,

73,84

**Photon** 3,4,5,6,10,11,13,16,17, 24,

25,26,27,32,34,36,37,39,40,42,43

**Photosynthetic** 159**Pi  $\pi$**  90,94,101,115,117,118,119,

134,135,136,142

**Pole** 129,130,140,230,254,256,257**Polyneucleotides** 158,163**Polypeptides** 158**Positron** 11,34,43**Prime number** 93**Protein** 158, 278**Proteinoids** 158,163**Proton** 11,27,31,34,44,55,71,74, 235,**Protoplasm** 162**Pseudopodia** 256**Quantum theory/statistics/ mechanics**

23,24,25,31,32, 73,

84,206,207,211,225, 226, 242

**Quark** 11, 27, 34, 74**Radiating** 206,208,209,212,213, 214**Radiation** 22,23,24,31,39,42,67,

139,153,206,207,209,211,214

**Radio-active** 139**Radio telescope** 49, 60, 67,127**Rational number** 94**Real number** 94, 95**Rennin** 278

**Reptile** 145,151,152,293**Retina** 129**RNA (Ribo nucleic acid)** 158**Sexual reproduction** 159,160**Sodium** 278**Special creation** 156**Special Theory of Relativity** 14,17, 18,  
24,61,62,64,65,109,110**Spontaneous generation** 157,161**Square** 12,17,39,40,45,57,71,91,  
94,95,108,111,115,118,134, 142,  
194,201**Square root** 6,95,108,111,115,118**Sulphur** 278**Superlignic** 10**Supernovae** 50,53,54**Supersonic** 109**Tachyon particles** 3,15,16**Telepathy** 241**Teletherapy** 196**Thermodynamics** 22**Time-space continuum** 132,133**Tonoscope** 201**Ultrasonic waves** 33,74,174,226, 227**Ultraviolet enigma** 22,23,24**Ultraviolet rays** 22,24,33,67,73,78,  
84,139,150,158**Unicellular** 144,154**Variable** 10,17,18,40,42,218,219**Vector** 5,13,25,47,95,110**Velocity** 3,4,5,6,8,9,10,11,12,13,  
14,15,16,17,18,20,21,22,26,27,36,37,  
38,39,41,42,43,50,51,52,61,62,63,64,  
65,66,67,68,69,70, 110,  
209,224,225,226, 240,**Viruses** 153,159,279**Vitamin** 274**Volume** 27,32,35,50,63,64,66,67,  
71,100,213**Wave theory** 19,20,21,22,23,24,26,  
31,32,44,47,89,224**Wavelength** 20,22,23,26,27,28,33,  
36,37,42,45,47,254,255**Waves** 10,16,19,21,22,23,24,25,26,27,28,30,31,32,33,34,35,36,37,43,  
44,45,46,47,52,67,73,74,78,82,84,17  
8,180,193,206,224,225,226,227,240,  
241,242,254, 255**White dwarf** 51,53,67,68,69,71

## Appendix No. III

### Glossary

### Index of Jain Technical Terms

जैन पारिभाषिक शब्दसूची

**अग्नित्याग (शुक्राग) agnityābha**

(*śukrābha*) - One kind of gods/divine bodies out of nine gods

**अघातीकर्म aghātīkarma** - The karmas that do not cover the main properties of the soul like etc.

**अचित्त acitta** - Nonliving / nonsetient

**अष्टाई aṣṭhāī** - 1. Group of eight or nine sacred days 2. Penance like fasts of eight days

**अणिमा aṇimā** - A labdhi i.e. capacity to make one's body micro like aṇu

**अणुव्रत aṇuvrata** - Five vows, out of twelve vows for a layperson

**अण्डज aṇḍaja** - Animals and birds that reproduce through eggs

**अतिशय atīśaya** - Excellent qualities of Tīrthaṅkaras

**अधर्म (अधर्मास्तिकाय) adharmā (adharmāstikāya)** - A medium for rest

**अधिधर्मा (अहिधर्मा) adhidharmā (ahidharmā)** - A sub-direction between west

and south-west directions

**अर्धनाराच ardhanārāca** -

Fourth type of bone-joint interlocking the bones on one side and a pin through both bones

**अधोलोक adhōlōka** - Lower portion of the universe

**अध्यवसाय adhyavasāya** - 1. Thoughts 2. Fillings

**अनंतकाय anantakāya** - See साधारण वनस्पतिकाय

**Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya**

**अनुत्तर देव anuttara dēva** - Highest quality of gods having highest happiness

**अन्तर्मुहूर्त antarmuhūrta** - Time less then 1 muhūrta i.e. any time from two time-units (samayas) to 48 minutes less one time unit

**अन्तरजात antaraajāta** - Third type of sound from four types of sound described in Jain scriptures

**अन्तरायकर्म antarāyakarma** - One type of karma that causes unsuccess in any act

**अन्धकार andhakāra** - Darkness or absence of light

**अपरत्व aparatva** - Nearness

regarding to time or place,  
**अपर्याप्ता *aparyāptā*** - A living  
 being which has not  
 sufficient abilities to live  
**अप्काय *apkāya*** - Water-bodied  
 living beings  
**अप्रशस्त *aprasasta*** - Bad or  
 inauspicious  
**अरिष्ट *ariṣṭa*** - One kind of gods  
 out of nine Lōkāntika gods  
**अरुण *aruṇa*** - One kind of gods  
 out of nine Lōkāntika gods  
**अर्चि, अर्चिमाली *arci, arcimālī*** -  
 Types of residences i.e.  
 vimanas of gods out of nine  
 Lōkāntika gods  
**अलोक *alōka*** - Beyond universe  
**अलोकाकाश *alōkākāśa*** - Space  
 beyond the universe,  
 Transcosmic space  
**अवगाहना *avagāhanā*** - Length  
 or height of bodies of living  
 beings  
**अवधिज्ञान *avadhijñāna*** -  
 Knowledge through which  
 one can know without the  
 aids of senses the material  
 objects having shape, colour,  
 smell, taste and touch  
**अवसर्पिणी *avasarpinī*** - Half of  
 time-cycle in which height  
 and life of living being  
 decrease. Descending cycle  
 of Six aeons  
**अव्याबाध *avyābādha*** - A place  
 or condition where there is

nothing like pain and  
 unhappiness

**असंज्ञी *asañjñī*** - Living beings  
 that haven't material  
 sensorium/mind, which are  
 not able to think

**असंख्यात *asaṅkhyāta*** - Which  
 cannot be denoted in  
 numbers or mathematical  
 equation

**अशुभ कर्म *aśubha karma*** -  
 Inauspicious karma.  
 Accumulation of karma  
 through bad deeds

**अष्टापद *aṣṭāpada*** - 'A  
 mountain having eight  
 steps', Mt. Kailāsa situated in  
 Mt. Himālayas

**अहिंसा *ahiṃsā*** - Nonviolence

**आकाश *ākāśa*** - Space

**आगम *āgama*** - Jain canonical  
 books

**आतप *ātapa*** - Sunlight, Hot  
 radiation

**आतपनामकर्म**

***ātapanāmakarma*** - A  
 type of karma which causes  
 hot light

**आदित्य *āditya*** - One kind of  
 gods out of nine Lōkāntika  
 gods

**आध्यात्मिक *ādhyātmika*** -  
 Related to the soul

**आभामंडल *ābhāmaṇḍala*** -  
 Aura or bio-electromagnetic  
 field

आयंबिल *āyambila* - A vow in which person takes food only one time without ghee, oil, milk, curd, jeggery/ sugar and sweets

आयुष्य *āyusya* - Life span of living beings

आवलिका *āvalikā* - Unit of time

आहारक वर्गणा *āhāraka*

*vargaṇā* - Specific types of paramāṇu-units useful for specific body

आहारक शरीर *āhāraka śarīra*

- Additional body of a saint with a specific power

ईशान *īśāna* - 1. A sub-direction between north and east directions 2. A name of second dēvalōka where gods live

ईशित्व *īśitva* - A ability to show the affluence of indra or cakravartī

उत्कृष्ट अनंत अनंत *utkrṣṭa ananta ananta* - Ninth grade of infinity from the nine types of infinite system

उत्कृष्ट परित अनंत *utkrṣṭa paritta ananta* - Seventh grade of infinity from the nine types of infinite system

उत्कृष्ट युक्त अनंत *utkrṣṭa yukta ananta* - Fifth grade of infinity from the nine types of infinite system

उत्कृष्ट असंख्यात असंख्यात *utkrṣṭa asaṅkhyāta asaṅkhyāta*

-The highest /ninth innumerable from the nine types of innumerable system

उत्कृष्ट परित असंख्यात *utkrṣṭa paritta asaṅkhyāta* - The seventh innumerable from the nine types of innumerable system

उत्कृष्ट युक्त असंख्यात *utkrṣṭa yukta asaṅkhyāta* - The fifth innumerable from the nine types of innumerable system

उत्थानी *utthānī* - A sub-direction between the east and south-east directions

उत्पत्तिजात *utpattijāta* - First type of sound from four types of sound that are described in Jain scriptures

उत्सर्पिणी *utsarpiṇī* - Half of time-cycle in which height and life of living being increase. Ascending cycle of Six aeons/epochs

उदय *udaya* - The time in which souls experienced the karma that are attached to them in past. Fruition of past karma.

उद्देशक *uddēśaka* - A subpart of a chapter of the Jain canonical scriptures

उद्योत *udyōta* - Light like that of

Moon-light

उद्योत नामकर्म *udyōta*

*nāmakarma* - A type of karma due to which the moon gives off cold light

उपपात जन्म *upapāta janma* -

Type of asexual reproduction in hell and divine beings

उपवास *upavāsa* - A fast of 36 hours (From previous evening to the next morning)

उपसर्ग *upasarga* - Physical or mental annoyance from mankind, beasts-bird and divine beings to Tīrthaṅkara and saints

उपशम *upāśama* - Subsidence of the karma attached to the soul

उपांशु जाप *upāṃśu jāpa* - Repetition of Mantras with a slight noise that is not clear

ऊर्ध्वलोक-देवलोक  
*ūrdhvalōka-dēvalōka* - Upper part of the universe

ऋषभनाराच *ṛṣabhanārāca* - Second type of bone joint

एकाशन *ēkāśana* - A vow of taking food only one time a day

एकेन्द्रिय *ēkēndriya* - Living beings having only one sense organ-skin

ऐरवत क्षेत्र *airavata kṣētra* - A portion of Jambūdvīpa

ओघा (रजोहरण) *ōghā*

Scientific Secrets of Jainism

(*rajōharaṇa*) - A sweeping rod with woolen threads of Jain monks and nuns

ओजाहार *ōjāhāra* - Intake by an embryo in the form of blood and semen, sapdrawn from parents

औदारिक वर्गणा *audārika*  
*vargaṇā* - Specific types of paramāṇu-units useful for the body of the living beings other than divine and hell beings

औदारिक शरीर *audārika śarīra* - A gross body of living beings other than divine and hell beings

कटाह *kaṭāha* - Hanging half ribs

कपाल *kapāla* - Skull

कपिला *kapilā* - A sub-direction between south and south-east

कल्याणक *kalyāṇaka* - Five specific incidents in the life of Jain Tīrthaṅkara ,1

Ascending of the soul in the womb of mother, 2.Birth, 3.Initiation, 4. Attaining omniscience and 5.

Emancipation

कवलाहार *kavalāhāra* - A food taking with mouth, The intake of gross food

कायस्थिति *kāyasthiti* - Time spent in the same species

कायोत्सर्ग *kāyōtsarga* -

Meditation technique  
prevalent in Jain tradition

कार्मण वर्गणा *kārmaṇa*

*vargaṇā* - Specific types of  
paramāṇu-units useful for  
bondage of karma

कार्मण शरीर *kārmaṇa śarīra* -

Karmik body, cause of all  
bodies

काल *kāla* - Time

कालचक्र *kālacakra* -

Time-cycle, contains 12  
epochs, 6 in utsarpiṇī  
(ascending part) and 6 in  
avasarpiṇī (desending part)

कालोदधि *kālōdadhi* - A circular  
ocean around the

कीलिका *kīlikā* - Fifth type of  
bone joint, pin between two  
bones

कुर्मोन्नता *kurmōnnatā* - Type of  
yoni i.e. female reproductive  
organ

कृष्णराजि *kṛṣṇarāji* - A black  
portion under the fifth  
heaven named Brahma that  
contains darkness

केवलज्ञान *kēvalajñāna* -

Omniscience

केवली *kēvalī* - A person that  
possesses omniscience

क्रोश-गाउ-कोश *krōśa-gāu-kōśa*  
- An unit of length that is  
equal to 2000 dhanuṣyas

क्षय *kṣaya* - Eradication of  
karma attached to the soul

क्षयोपशम *kṣayōpaśama* -

Eradication-cum-Mitigation  
of karma

खरतरगच्छ *kharataragaccha* -

A sub-sect. of Jain monks

खेलिद्या *khēlidyā* - A

subdirection between south  
and south-west

गरिमा *garimā* - A labdhi i.e.

capacity of a man to make  
his body too much heavy

गणधर *gaṇadhara* - Prime  
disciple of Tīrthaṅkara

गंगा *gaṅgā* - A river coming  
from east side of lake Padma  
situated on Mt. Himavat

गर्दतोय *gardatōya* - One kind  
of gods out of nine  
Lōkāntika gods

गर्भज जन्म *garbhaja janma* -  
Sexual reproduction with  
copulation of male and  
female

गोत्र कर्म *gōtra karma* - A kind  
of karma due to which one  
takes birth in lower cast or  
higher cast

ग्रहणजात *grahaṇajāta* - Fourth  
type of sound from four  
types of sound described in  
Jain scriptures

घाती कर्म *ghātī karma* - The  
karmas covering the main  
properties of the soul like



infinite-knowledge, etc.

चउरिन्दिय (चतुरिन्द्रिय)

**caurindiya (caturindriya)**

- Living beings having four sense organs - skin, tongue, nose and eyes

चउविहार **cauvihāra** - A vow of not taking food, water etc. after sunset to sunrise

चंद्राभ **candrābha** - A place of one kind of gods out of nine Lōkāntika gods

चातुर्मास **cāturmāsa** - Four months of rainy season

उद्मस्थ **chadmastha** - A living being who has not attained omniscience, who is 'covered'

जघन्य अनंत अनंत **jaghanya ananta ananta** - Third type of infinite from the nine types of infinite system

जघन्य परित अनंत **jaghanya paritta ananta** - First type of infinite from the nine types of infinite system

जघन्य युक्त अनंत **jaghanya yukta ananta** - Second type of infinite from the nine types of infinite system

जघन्य असंख्यात असंख्यात **jaghanya asaṅkhyāta asaṅkhyāta** - Third type of innumerable from the nine types of innumerable system

जघन्य परित असंख्यात **jaghanya**

**paritta asaṅkhyāta** - First type of innumerable from the nine types of innumerable system

जघन्य युक्त असंख्यात **jaghanya yukta asaṅkhyāta** - Second type of innumerable from the nine types of innumerable system

जम्बूद्वीप **jambūdvīpa** - A continent in the central portion of Madhyalōka (Tircchālōka) having diameter 1,00,000 yōjanas

जरायुज **jarāyuja** - Type of sexual reproduction with wrapper containing blood, born with placenta

जाप **jāpa** - Repetition of mantras

जीव **jīva** - A living being

ज्योतिष्क देव  **jyōtiṣka dēva** - A divine body like sun, moon, planets and stars etc. Sun god, Moon god etc.

ज्ञानावरणीय कर्म **jñānāvaraṇīya karma** - A karma that covers the property of knowledge

तपागच्छ **tapāgaccha** - A sub-sect. of Jain monks

तमरकाय **tamaskāya** - Black substance in Kṛṣṇarāji under the fifth heaven named Brahma

तिर्यच **tiryañca** - Living beings

other than man, divine and  
hell beings

**तिविहार *tivihāra*** - A vow of  
taking only water during the  
whole night

**तीर्थकर *tīrthaṅkara*** - The  
'conqueror' of *rāga* and  
*dvēṣa*

**तीर्थकर नामकर्म *tīrthaṅkara  
nāmakarma*** - A type of  
karma necessary for a  
Tīrthaṅkara

**तेइन्द्रिय *tēindriya*** - Living  
beings having three sense  
organs skin, tongue and  
nose

**तेउकाय - तैजस्कायिक *tēukāya -  
taijaskāyika*** - Fire bodied  
living beings

**तैजस् वर्गणा *taijas vargaṇā*** -  
Specific types of paramāṇu  
units useful for vital body or  
bio-electromagnetic field

**तैजस् शरीर *taijas śarīra*** - The  
vital body a cause of  
bio-electromagnetic  
energy/field

**त्रसकाय *trasakāya*** - Animal  
kingdom (moving animals)

**त्रिपदी *tripadī*** - A trio of  
sentences told by  
Tīrthaṅkara to the prime  
disciples

**दर्शनावरणीय कर्म  
*darśanāvaraṇīya karma***  
- A karma that covers the

property of right faith

**दुःषम *duḥṣama*** - The fifth  
epoch of avasarpinī and  
second epoch of utsarpinī, a  
period of privation

**दुःषम-दुःषम**

***duḥṣama-duḥṣama*** - The  
last epoch of avasarpinī and  
the first epoch of utsarpinī, a  
period of extreme privation

**दुःषम-सुषम *duḥṣama-suṣama*** -  
The fourth epoch of  
avasarpinī and the third  
epoch of utsarpinī, a period  
of privation and plenty

**दीक्षा *dīkṣā*** - Initiation

**देव *dēva*** - Divine beings, gods

**देवपरिघ *dēvapariṅha*** - Name  
of seventh Kṛṣṇarāji out of  
eight Kṛṣṇarājis

**देवपरिघोक्षोभ**

***dēvapariṅhōkṣōbha*** -

Name of eighth Kṛṣṇarāji out  
of eight Kṛṣṇarājis

**देवी *dēvī*** - Divine beings  
goddesses

**देशना *dēśanā*** - Sermon of  
Tīrthaṅkara

**द्वादशाङ्गी *dvādaśāṅgī*** -

Twelve sacred Jain canonical  
treatises

**द्वीन्द्रिय *dvīndriya*** - Living  
beings having two sense  
organs skin and tongue

**धर्म(धर्मास्तिकाय)**

***dharma(dharmāstikāya)***

- A medium for motion

**धर्म *dharma*** - 1. Spirituality 2.

Philosophical tradition

**धनुष्य *dhanuṣya*** - Unit of length

equal to 4 hātha or 6 feet

**धातकीखंड *dhātakīkhaṇḍa*** - A

circular continent around the

ocean Lavaṇasamudra

**ध्यान *dhyāna*** - Meditation

**नमस्कार महामंत्र (नवकार)**

***namaskāra mahāmantra***

**(*navakāra*)** - A main

mantra of Jainism

**नय *naya*** - A philosophical view

point, A partial view

**नवकारशी *navakāraśī*** - A vow

of taking food and water after

48 minutes of sunrise

**नामकर्म *nāmakarma*** - A type of

karma due to which soul

obtains body etc.

**नारक *nāraka*** - 1. Hell 2. Hell

beings

**नाराच *nārāca*** - Third type of

bone joint, interlocking of

bones on both sides

**निगोद *nigōda*** - Sūkṣma

Sādhāraṇa Vanaspatikāya

that contains infinite souls

**निर्विकृतिक *nirvikṛtika*** -

Non-infatuating food, The

food items that do not defile

the soul, made from six

vigai(vikṛti)s that defile the

soul like Ghee, Milk, Curd,

Jaggery, Oil and sweets

**निश्चयकाल *niścayakāla*** - A real

time, - A type of time - that

becomes cause of the

change in the condition of

material objects according to

omniscience

**निश्चयनय *niścayanaya*** -

Absolute view-point

**निषध *niṣadha*** - A name of

mountain in Jambūdvīpa

**नीवि *nīvi*** - A vow of taking

nirvikṛtika food only once a

day, that do not defile the

mind

**परकायशस्त्र *parakāyaśastra***

-Any opposite substance that

renders living organism dead

**परमाणु *paramāṇu*** - The

smallest indivisible particle of

matter

**परत्त्व *paratva*** - Farness

regading to time or space

(place)

**परिग्रह *parigraha*** - 1. Hoarding

of worldly things

2. Attachment to worldly

things, possession

**परिणाम *pariṇāma*** - 1. Feelings

2. change, transformation

**परियाधर्म *pariyādharmā*** - A

sub direction between west

and north-west directions

**परिषह *pariṣaha*** - Inconvenient

conditions like hunger, thirst,

- cold, heat etc. that are 22 in number
- पर्यवजात *paryavajāta* - Second type of sound from four types of sound
- पर्याप्ता *paryāptā* - A living being which has sufficient abilities to live
- पर्याय *paryāya* - A micro or macro transformation in a substance
- पर्युषणा *paryuṣaṇā* - A group of eight days from śrāvaṇa vada-12 to bhādaravā suda 4
- पर्वतिथि *parvatithi* - Main days like 2nd, 5th, 8th, 11th, 14th and 15th in each half of Indian month
- पल *pala* - Ancient unit of weight
- पल्योपम *palyōpama* - 1. The unit of time which contains uncountable years, 2. 'Pit measured' period
- पश्चानुपूर्वी *paścānupūrvī* - Reverse order
- पञ्चेन्द्रिय *pañcēndriya* - Living being having five sense organs skin, tongue, nose, eyes and ears
- पुद्गल *pudgala* - Matter
- पुष्करवर द्वीप *puṣkaravara dvīpa* - A circular continent around the ocean Kālōdadhi
- पूर्व *pūrva* - Unit of time equal to 70,56,000,00,00,000 years
- पूर्व *pūrva* - The 14 sacred canonical treatises of Jainism also known as 12th anga, Dṛṣṭivāda
- पूर्वानुपूर्वी *pūrvānupūrvī* - Regular sequence
- पृथक्त्व *prthakatva* - Any number from two to nine numbers
- पृथिवीकाय-पृथ्वीकाय *prthivīkāya-prthvīkāya* - Earth-bodied living beings
- पोतज *pōtaja* - Type of sexual reproduction, without wrapper vertebrates without placenta
- प्रक्षेपाहार *prakṣēpāhāra* - A food taking through the hole or with injection
- प्रज्ञवृत्ति (प्राज्ञवृत्ति) *prajñavṛtti (prājñavṛtti)* - A sub direction between north and north-east directions
- प्रज्ञापक *prajñāpaka* - A person who is telling
- प्रतिक्रमण *pratikramaṇa* - Retreat from sin
- प्रत्याख्यान *pratyākhyāna* - A vow of abstaining from certain things for a certain period
- प्रत्येक वनस्पतिकाय *pratyēka vanaspatikāya* - Having

single soul in a single body  
of plant like seed, leaf, root,  
flower etc.

**प्रदेश *pradēśa*** - 1. A single  
paramāṇu 2. A point of  
space for only single  
paramāṇu, Space unit

**प्रभंकर *prabhāṅkara*** - A place  
of one kind of gods/divine  
bodies out of nine Lōkāntika  
gods

**प्रभा *prabhā*** - Irregular spread,  
reflection etc. of light

**प्रमोद भावना *pramōda  
bhāvanā*** - To rejoice in

**प्रव्रज्या *pravrajyā*** - Initiation

**प्रशस्त *praśasta*** - Good, Of  
good quality

**प्राकाम्य *prākāmya*** - A 'labdhi'  
(potentiality) through which  
one can walk on water or  
enter in earth as if it was a  
water

**प्राप्ति *prāpti*** - A 'labdhi'  
(potentiality) through which  
one can touch the top of Mt.  
Mēru from the surface of the  
earth

**प्रासुक *prāsuka*** - Nonliving i.e.  
soul-less food etc.

**बादर(बायर) *bādara(bāyara)*** -  
Gross

**बियासण *biyāsaṇa*** - A vow of  
taking food twice a day

**बेइन्द्रिय *bēindriya*** - Living  
being having two sense

organs skin and tounge

**ब्रह्म देवलोक *brahma dēvalōka***

- A name of the fifth heaven

**भरत क्षेत्र *bharata kṣētra*** - A  
section of Jambūdvīpa

**भव *bhava*** - 1. Birth, 2. The  
world

**भवनपति *bhavanapati*** - A type  
of divine bodies i. e. gods  
and goddesses

**भवस्थिति *bhavasthiti*** - Time  
spent in the same body, i.e.  
life-span

**भामंडल *bhāmaṇḍala*** - A divine  
circular light behind the head  
of Tīrthaṅkara, aura

**भाव *bhāva*** - 1. Feelings,  
2. Thoughts

**भावना *bhāvanā*** - To ponder, To  
think again and again over  
same truth

**भाषावर्गणा *bhāṣāvargaṇā*** -  
Specific type of paramāṇu  
units useful for speech or  
sounds

**भाष्यजाप *bhāṣyajāpa*** -  
Repetition of mantras with a  
loud pronounciation

**भुजःपरिसर्प *bhujahparisarpa*** -  
Reptiles

**भोगोपभोग विरमण व्रत  
*bhōgōpabhōga viramaṇa  
vrata*** - A 7th vow of  
laypersons in which person  
puts limit on use of worldly  
things

मघा *maghā* - A name of  
Nārakī or Narakāvāsa or  
third Kṛṣṇarāji out of eight  
Kṛṣṇarājis

मतिज्ञानावरणीय कर्म

*matijñānāvaraṇīya*

*karma* - A type of karma  
for covering the empirical  
knowledge

मध्यम अनंत अनंत *madhyama*

*ananta ananta* - The sixth  
infinite from the nine types of  
infinite system

मध्यम परित्त अनंत *madhyama*

*paritta ananta* - The fourth  
infinite from the nine types of  
infinite system

मध्यम युक्त अनंत *madhyama*

*yukta ananta* - The fifth  
infinite from the nine types of  
infinite system

मध्यम असंख्यात असंख्यात

*madhyama asaṅkhyāta*

*asaṅkhyāta* - The sixth  
innumerable from the nine  
types of innumerable system

मध्यम परित्त असंख्यात

*madhyama paritta*

*asaṅkhyāta* - The fourth  
innumerable from the nine  
types of innumerable system

मध्यम युक्त असंख्यात

*madhyama yukta*

*asaṅkhyāta* - The fifth  
innumerable from the nine

types of innumerable system

मध्यलोक(तिर्च्छालोक)

*madhyalōka(tircchālōka)*

- Central part of the universe

मनोवर्णा *manōvargaṇā* - A

type of paramāṇu units  
useful in thought process

मर्कटबन्ध *markatabandha* -

Interlocking between two  
bones

मरुत् *marut* - One kind of gods

out of nine Lōkāntika gods

महाविगइ *mahāvigai* - A

substance having high  
potentiality to defile the soul,  
Highly seasoned or  
infatuating food items

महाहिमवान् *mahāhimavān* - A

name of mountain in  
Jambūdvīpa

महिमा *mahimā* - A 'labdhi' out

of eight labdhis to make  
one's body as big as one  
wishes

माघवती *māghavati* - A name of

Nārakī or Narakāvāsa or  
third Kṛṣṇarāji out of eight  
Kṛṣṇarājis

माथुरी वाचना *māthuri vācanā* -

Text of Jain canonical  
scriptures, decided in a  
conference of learned Jain  
monks hold in Mathurā

माहेन्द्र(महेन्द्र)

*māhēndra(mahēndra)* - A  
name of fourth heaven

मुंहपति *mumhapatti* - A mouth cloth

मुहूर्त *muhūrta* - 48 minutes

मेघराजि *mēgharājī* - 1. A name of Nārakī 2. Second Kṛṣṇarājī out of eight Kṛṣṇarājīs

मेरु *mēru* - Central mountain in Jambūdvīpa

मोक्ष *mōkṣa* - Emancipation

मोहनीय कर्म *mōhaniya karma* - Infatuating karma

मौन(मानस) जाप *mauna(mānasa) jāpa* - Repetition of mantras without even a little noise

यतना(जयणा) *yatanā(jayaṇā)* - Doing every thing with care that any living being should not hurt through the action

योगी *yōgī* - A saint

योनि *yōni* - 1. Types of birth places 2. Female reproductive organ

रक्तवती *raktavati* - A name of river of Airavata in Jambūdvīpa

रक्ता *raktā* - A name of river of Airavata in Jambūdvīpa

रज्जु(राजलोक) *rajju(rājalōka)* - 14th part of height of universe according to Jainism

रत्नप्रभा *ratnaprabhā* - The name of the first hell

रम्यक *ramyak* - A section of

Jambūdvīpa

रिष्ट *riṣṭa* - One kind of gods/divine bodies out of nine Lōkāntika gods

रुक्मि *rukmi* - A name of mountain in Jambūdvīpa

रुचक प्रदेश *rucaka pradēśa* - 1. Eight space points located in the centre of the universe 2. Eight most micro-units of soul that are totally free from karma

लघिमा *laghimā* - A 'labdhi' potentiality to make body too much lighter

लघुहिमवान् *laghuhimavān* - A name of mountain in Jambūdvīpa

लब्धि *labdhi* - An extrasensory power, Miraculous power

लयन समुद्र *lavaṇa samudra* - The ocean around the Jambūdvīpa

लोक *lōka* - The Universe

लोकाकाश *lōkākāśa* - Universal space, Cosmic space

लोमाहार *lōmāhāra* - Food taken through hairs and skin

वज्रऋषभनाराच

*vajraṛṣabhanārāca* - First type of bone joint, interlocking the bones on both sides, strengthened with plate and pin

वनस्पतिकाय *vanaspatikāya* - Plant kingdom

वर्गणा *vargaṇā* - Types of aggregate of paramāṇu  
वर्णमातृका *varṇamātrkā* - A Sanskrit alphabet  
वर्तना *vartanā* - Change in positions or conditions of material objects, Becoming  
वलभी वाचना *valabhī vācanā* - Text of Jain canonical scriptures, decided in a conference of learned Jain monks hold in Valabhīpura in 454 A.D.  
वसति(उपाश्रय) *vasati(upāśraya)* - A place where Jain monks and nuns stay  
वशित्व *vaśitva* - A 'labdhi' out of eight 'labdhis' through which one can have control on others  
वंशीपत्रा *vaṁśīpatrā* - Type of yōni, Female reproductive organ  
वाउकाय *vāukāya* - Wind bodied living beings  
वातपरिघोक्षोभ *vātaparighōkṣōbha* - A name of sixth Kṛṣṇarāji out of eight Kṛṣṇarājis  
वातपलिघ *vātapaligha* - A name of fifth Kṛṣṇarāji out of eight Kṛṣṇarājis  
वाड *vāḍa* - A law, (A limit), Restrictions  
वाणव्यंतर *vāṇavyantara* - A

type of gods & goddesses  
वाम *vāma* - Ancient unit of weight  
वासक्षेप *vāsakṣēpa* - Powder of sandal wood used as a medium for blessings or worship  
वासुदेव *vāsudēva* - Semi supreme lord  
विगइ(विकृति) *vigai(vikṛti)* - The foods that defile the mind  
विजय *viḥaya* - A parts of Mahāvidēha  
विदल *vidala* - Mixing of dry or fresh dicotyledon vegetables with unboiled milk or curds  
विद्याधर *vidyādhara* - A branch of ancient Jain monks  
विष्कम्भ *viṣkambha* - Diameter of a circle  
विहार *vihāra* - Wandering of Jain monks & nuns on foot  
वीतराग देव *vītarāga dēva* - The 'conqueror' of rāga and dvēṣa 2. Prophet of Janism  
वेद *vēda* - A will for copulation, sex instict  
वेदनीय कर्म *vēdanīya karma* - A type of karma that gives happiness or unhappiness to soul  
वैक्रिय लब्धि *vaikriya labdhi* - A 'labdhi' potentiality to make desired type of body  
वैक्रिय वर्गणा *vaikriya vargaṇā*



- Specific type of paramāṇu-units for the desire-body and the body of divine & hell beings
- वैक्रिय शरीर *vaikriya śarīra* - A desire-body
- वैरोचन *vairōcana* - A place of one kind of gods out of nine Lōkāntika gods
- वैताढ्य *vaitāḍhya* - A mountain dividing the Bharata kṣētra into two sections
- वैमानिक *vaimānika* - A type of gods & goddesses
- व्यन्तर *vyantara* - A type of gods & goddesses
- व्यवहार काल *vyavahāra kāla* - A type of time used in our daily life
- व्यवहार नय *vyavahāra naya* - Relative or practical view point
- शतक *śataka* - A part of a chapter of Bhagavatīśūtra
- शंखावर्त *śamakhāvarta* - Type of yōni, A female reproductive organ
- शाश्वत(ती) *śāśvata(tī)* - 1. Eternal 2. immortal
- शिखरी *śikhari* - The name of mountain in Jambūdvīpa
- शीर्षप्रहेलिका *śīrṣaprahēlikā* - Highest numerical value mentioned in Jain scripture having 250 or 194 digits
- शुक्राभ *śukrābha* - A place of

- one kind of gods out of nine Lōkāntika gods
- शुभकर्म *śubhakarma* - Auspicious karma
- श्यामा *śyāmā* - A sub-direction between north-east and east
- श्रावक-श्राविका *śrāvaka-śrāvikā* - A layman & laywoman of Jainism
- श्रुतस्कन्ध *śrutaskandha* - A volume of Jain canonical treatises
- श्वसोच्छ्वास वर्गणा *śvāsōcchvāsa vargaṇā* - Specific type of paramāṇu-units useful for respiration of all living beings
- सचित्त *sacitta* - Living i.e. having life
- सनत्कुमार *sanatkumāra* - A name of third heaven
- समय *samaya* - The most micro-unit of time
- समयक्षेत्र *samayakṣētra* - A circular field having the diameter 45,00,000 yojanas where there is time like day & night
- समवसरण *samavasaraṇa* - A special assembly for sermon of Tīrthaṅkara
- सम्मूर्च्छिम जन्म *sammūrcchima janma* - Asexual reproduction
- सम्यक्त्व *samyaktva* - A faith on

- Jainism and Tīrthankara ,  
Enlightened true belief, Trust  
in Dharma
- सर्वज्ञ *sarvajña* - Omniscient  
सर्वदर्शी *sarvadarśī* - Omniseer  
सर्वार्थसिद्ध *sarvārthasiddha* -  
A place of supreme gods in  
heaven
- संक्रमणकरण  
*saṅkramaṇakaraṇa* - A  
process by which karmik  
paramāṇus interchange
- संख्यात *saṅkhyāta* - 1.  
Numbers 2. That can be  
expressed in number or in  
mathematical equation
- संज्ञा *sañjñā* - 1. Instincts 2.  
Knowledge, rationality,  
recognition
- संजी *sañjñī* - A living being  
having intelligence or  
sensorium i.e. mind
- संघयण *saṅghayaṇa* - A  
bone-joint
- संसार *saṃsāra* - Birth-death  
cycle
- सहस्रार चक्र *sahasrāra cakra* -  
A centre for meditation on  
the head
- सागरोपम *sāgarōpama* - The  
largest unit of time that  
contains 10<sup>15</sup> palyōpamas,  
Ocean measured period
- साधारण वनस्पतिकाय *sādhāraṇa  
vanaspatikāya* - Having  
infinite souls in a single body  
or cell of a plant
- साधु *sādhu* - A Jain saint  
साध्वी *sādhvī* - A Jain nun
- सामायिक *sāmāyika* - Exercise  
for meditation for 48 minutes
- सारस्वत *sārasvata* - One kind  
of gods out of nine  
Lōkāntika gods
- सावित्री *sāvitṛī* - A sub-direction  
between north and  
north-west
- सिन्धु *sindhu* - A name of river
- सुप्रतिष्ठाभ *supraṭiṣṭhābha* - A  
place of one kind of gods out  
of nine Lōkāntika gods
- सुषम *suṣama* - Second epoch  
of avasarpinī and fifth epoch  
of utsarpinī, Time period of  
planty
- सुषम-दुःषम *suṣama-duḥṣama* -  
Third epoch of avasarpinī  
and fourth epoch of  
utsarpinī, Time period of  
planty with privation
- सुषम-सुषम *suṣama-suṣama* -  
First epoch of avasarpinī  
and last epoch of utsarpinī,  
Time period of supreme  
planty
- सूक्ष्म(सुहुम) *sūkṣma(suhuma)* -  
Micro, Subtle
- सूर्याभ *sūryābha* - A place of  
one kind of gods out of nine  
Lōkāntika gods
- सेवार्त *sēvārta* - The sixth type  
of bone joint in which bones

touche only

स्कन्ध *skandha* - Aggregate of  
paramāṇus, clusters of  
matter

स्तुति(स्तोत्र) *stuti(stōtra)* - A  
hymn

स्त्रीरत्न *strīratna* - Chief queen  
of Cakravartī

स्याद्वाद *syādvāda* - The theory  
of seven folded logical  
prediction assimilating  
dissimilar viewpoints

स्वकायशास्त्र *svakāyaśāstra* - A  
similar substance that  
renders living beings dead  
स्वदारासंतोष विरमण व्रत

*svadārāsantōṣa*

*viramaṇa vrata* - A vow  
of abstention from sexual  
activity with a woman other  
than one's own wife

स्वाध्याय *svādhyāya* - To study  
हरिवर्ष *harivarṣa* - A part of  
Jambūdvīpa

हाथ *hātha* - Unit of length equal  
to 1.5 foot

हिमवन्त *himavanta* - A part of  
Jambūdvīpa

हिमवान् *himavān* - A mountain  
in Jambūdvīpa

हेरण्यवत् *hairanyavat* A part of  
Jambūdvīpa

## Bibliography

### Index of Reference Books

(Sanskrit-Prākṛta-Hindī-Gujarātī)

- Abhidhānacintāmaṇi** - Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī  
**Abhidhānarājendra** - Śrī Rājēndrasūrijī  
**Abhiyāna** 6 April, 1992  
**Acintya Cintāmaṇi Bhagavatī Padmāvatī** (Edi. Nandalāla Dēvaluka, Publi. Arihanta Prakāśana, Bhavanagar)  
**Ajitaśāntistōtra** - Muni Nandiṣēṇa  
**Amarabhāratī** - March-April, 1985  
**Amarakōṣa** - Amarasimhājī  
**Anuyōgadvārasūtra** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī  
**Aṣṭakaprakaraṇa** - Śrī Haribhadrāsūrijī  
**Aticārasūtra**  
**Ācārāṅganiryukti** - Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmījī  
**Ācārāṅgasūtra** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī, Commentator - Śrī Śīlāṅkācāryajī  
**Ānandasundara (Daśaśrāvakaacaritra)** - Manuscript - Śrī Sarvavijaya Gaṇi  
**Āvaśyakasūtra** - Niryukti - Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmījī  
**Āvaśyakasūtra** - Commentary by - Śrī Malayagīrijī  
**Bṛhatsaṅgrahaṇīsūtra** - Śrī Jinabhadra Gaṇi  
**Bhīnī Kṣaṇōṇō Valbhava** By Pa.Pū. Paṃ Śrī Śīlacandravijayajī Mahārāja, Publi. Bhadrāṅkarōdaya Śikṣaṇa Tṛasṭa, Gōdharā  
**Bhagavadgītā**  
**Bhagavatīsūtra (Vyākhyāprajñapti/Viyāhapannatti/Vivāhapannatti)** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī, Commentator - Śrī Abhayadēvasūrijī  
**Bhaktāmarakalpa** (Yantra-Mahāpūjana)  
**Cārēbāju (Pākṣika)** - April 15, 1994  
**Cōka Anē Ḍaṣṭara** Dr P. C. Vaidya Publi. Sugaṇitam Tṛasṭa, Ahmedabad, 1993  
**Cōsaṭha Prakārī Pūjā** By Śrī Vīravijayajī Mahārāja  
**Daśavaikālikasūtra** - Śrī Śayyambhavasūrijī - Hāribhadriyavṛtti  
**Dharmasaṅgraha** - Upā. Śrī Mānavijayajī  
**Dhvani Jagat** Dr V. B. Gōhēla, Uni. Grantha Nirmāṇa Board, Ahmedabad  
**Dravyasaṅgraha** - Digambarācārya Śrī Nēmīcandrajī  
**Dvīpasāgaraprajñapti** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī  
**Gāndharvavēda**  
**Gaṇaharasaddhasayaga (Gaṇadharasārdhaśataka)** - Śrī Jinadattasūrijī, Commentator - Śrī Sumati Gaṇi

**Grahaśāntistōtra** - Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmījī

**Gujarāta Samācāra** Dt. 13 Octo. 1993 Ravipūrti

**Gujarāta Samācāra** Dt. 15 July. 1993

**Gujarāta Samācāra** Dt. 17 Feb. 1993

**Guru Gautamasvāmī** By Śrī Ratilāla Dīpacanda Dēsāī

**Hrīṅkāra Kalpa** - Edit.. Pt. Dhīrajālā Tōkaraśī Shah, Mumbai

**Īśāvāsyōpaniṣad**

**Jaina Sāhityanō Saṅkṣipta Ītihāsa**, By. M. D. Dēsāī

**Jainadarśana : Vajñānika Dṛṣṭi** By Muniśrī Nandīghoṣavijayajī Publ. Śrī Mahāvīra Jaina Vidyālaya, Mumbai 1995

**Jambūdvīpalaghusaṅgrahaṇī** - Śrī Haribhadrasūrijī, Commentator - Śrī Vijayōdayasūrijī

**Janmabhūmi-Pravāsī**, Ravivāra, Sāptāhikapūrti, Dt. 1-1-1984

**Jayahinda**, Ravivāra Sāptāhikapūrti, Dt. 9-5-1993

**Jina Saṅgīta Saritā** By Muniśrī Dakṣavijayajī Mahārāja, Intro.-Prof. Lakṣmīcandra Mōhanalāla Shah

**Jīvābhigamasūtra** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī

**Jīvavicāra** - Śrī Śāntisūrijī

**Jyōtiṣkaraṇḍaka**

**Kālasaptikā Prakaraṇa** - Śrī Dharmaghōṣasūrijī

**Kalpasūtra**-Śrī Bhadrabāhusvāmījī, Subōdhikāṭikā - Upā. Śrī Vinayavijayajī

**Kalyāṇamandirastōtra / Kalpa** - (Mahāprabhāvika Navasmarāṇa - Publ.. Sārābhāī Navāba, Ahmedabad)

**Kṣētrasamāsa (Bṛhat )** - Śrī Jinabhadra Gaṇi

**Kṣētrasamāsa (Laghu )** - Śrī Ratnaśēkharasūrijī

**Karmagrantha - Fifth** - Śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī

**Karmagrantha - First** - Śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī

**Karmagrantha - Fourth** - Śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī

**Karmaprakṛti (Kammapayaḍī)** - Śrī Śivaśarmasūrijī, Commentary by Upādhyāya Śrī Yaśōvijayajī

**Lōgassa Svādhyāya (Kalpa)** - (Publ. Sāhityavikāsa Maṇḍala, Andheri, Mumbai)

**Lōkaprakāśa** - Upā. Śrī Vinayavijayajī

**Mahānīśīthasūtra** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī

**Mantra-Tantra-Yantra Mahāsamuccaya** - Publ. Gajānana Pustakālaya, Surat

**Mantravidyā (Yantravidyā)** - Śrī Karaṇīdāna Sēhiyā, Calcutta

**Manusmṛti**

**Namaskāra Svādhyāya/Mahāmantra Kalpa** - (Publ. Sāhityavikāsa Maṇḍala,

Andheri, Mumbai)

### Namutthunaṃ Kalpa

**Nandisūtranāṃ Pravacanō** Pa. Pū Ācārya Śrī Vijaya Nandanasūrijī Mahārāja  
1976

**Navanīta Samarpaṇa**, Sept. 1984, Nov. 1996 (Dīpōtsavī Issue), Dece. 1996

**Nyāyasaṅgraha** - Śrī Hēmaḥsa Gaṇi

### Navatattvaparakaraṇa

### Pākṣikasūtra (Pakkhīsūtra)

**Pañcāstikāya** - (Digambarīyagrantha)

**Pañcasaṅgraha** - Śrī Candramaharṣi

**Paccakkhāṇa Bhāṣya** - Śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī

**Pannavaṇāsūtra (Prajñāpanāsūtra)** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī

**Parīśiṣṭaparva** - Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī

**Phārbasa (Quarterly)** - Octo-Dece. 1992

### Piṅgalaśāstra

**Pratiṣṭhākālpa** - Śrī Pādālipasūrijī

**Pratikramaṇa Sūtra (Prabōdha Tīkā)** (Publi. Sāhityavikāsa Maṇḍala, Andheri,  
Mumbai)

**Pravacanasārōddhāra** - Śrī Nēmicandrasūrijī

**Rṣimaṇḍalamahāpūjana / Kalpa** - Edit. Muniśrī Yaśōvijayajī

### Sāmavēda

**Sūrimantrakalpasamuccaya (Part-1, 2)** Edi. Muniśrī Jambūvijayajī (Publi.  
Sāhityavikāsa Maṇḍala, Andheri, Mumbai)

**Sūryaprajñaptisūtra** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī

### Sēnapraśna

### Saṅgītasvarāmṛta

**Sakalārhat Stōtra** - Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī

**Sandēśa (Daily)** - Dt. 8 July, 1989

**Sandēśa (Sāptāhika Pūrti)** - Dt. 7 July, 1996

**Sandēhadōlāvalī Prakaraṇa** - Śrī Jinadattasūrijī, Commentator -  
Vācanācārya Śrī Prabōdhacandra Gaṇi

### Santhārāpōrisīsūtra

**Santikaram Stōtra/Kalpa** - (Mahāprabhāvika Navasmarāṇa - Publi. Sārābhāī  
Navāba, Ahmedabad)

### Siddhacakramahāpūjanavidhi

### Siddhisthāna

**Svāgata** - Sept., 1995

**Śramaṇakriyānāṃ Sūtrō** (Sārtha)

**Śrāddhadinakṛtyavidhi** - Śrī Dēvēndrasūrijī

**Śrī Haribhadrasūri** Prof. Hīrālāla R. Kapadia, Sayājī Granthamālā, Vaḍōdarā)

**Tandulavēyāliyaḥayannā**

**Taraṅgō Kē Kaṇṇō ?** Dr V. B. Gōhēla, Uni. Grantha Nirmāṇa Board,

Ahmedabad

**Tattvārthasūtra** - Vācaka Umāsvātijī, Commentator - Śrī Siddhasēna Gaṇi

**Tijayapahuttakalpa/ Stōtra** (Mahāprabhāvika Navasmarāṇa - Publi. Sārābhāī

Navāba, Ahmedabad)

**Tīrthaṅkara** - May, 1987 (Hindī Monthly)

**Tīrthaṅkara** -Sept., 1989 (Hindī Monthly)

**Trilōkasāra** (Digambarīyagrantha)

**Triṣaṣīśālākāpuruṣacaritra** - Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī

**Thāṇāṅgasūtra (Sthānāṅgasūtra)** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī

**Uttarādhyayanasūtra** - Śrī Sudharmāsvāmījī, Commentator - Śrī

Bhāvavijayajī

**Uvasaggaharaṇ Kalpa** - (Mahāprabhāvika Navasmarāṇa - Publi.. Sārābhāī

Navāba, Ahmedabad)

**Vītarāgastōtra** - Śrī Hēmacandrācāryajī

**Vēdanīya Karma Nivāraṇa Pūjā** By Śrī Vīravijayajī Mahārāja

**Vaiśvika Cētanā (Coscon)** By Lieut.Col. C. C.Bakṣī, Pravīṇa Prakāśana,

Rajkot, 1995

**Vardhamānavidyākālpa**

**Vasudēva Hingī** - Śrī Saṅghadāsa Gaṇi

**Viśvaprāhēlikā** - Muni Mahēndrakumāra 'Dvitīya'(Jhavērī Prakāśana,

Māṭuṅgā, Mumbāī)

**Vicāraratnākara** - Upā. Śrī Kīrtivijayajī

**Vijñāna Anē Adhyātma** Muniśrī Amarēndravijayajī Mahārāja

## English

**Aion** Carl Gustav Jung

**A Text Book of Quantum Mechanics** P.M.Methews & K.Venkatesan, Tata Mc

Graw Hill Publishing House Company Ltd. New Delhi, 1988

**Atomic Physics** J. B. Rajam

**Atomic Structure** E. U. Condon & Halis Odabasi, Cambridge Uni. Press (U.K.)

**Basic Mathematics** L. C. Jain

**Berliner Berichte** 4, 11, 18, 25, Nov.1915

**Beyond Matter** Paramahansa Tewari

**Black Holes** Jean Pierre Luminet, Cambridge Uni. Press (U.K.)

**Black Holes, Quasars and The Universe** Harry L. Shipman, Hughton Mifflin

Company, Boston, U.S.A.

**Bulletin of Theosophy Science Study Group, India** December, 1988, Vol. 26,  
No. 6

**Cosmology : Old and New** G. R. Jain

**Religions, Jainism and Hinduism** Niranjan Vakharia, U.S.A.

**Current Science** March 1943

**Discover** Nov. 80 & Sept. 81 An American Science Magazine

**Everyman's Science** 1993, ISCA, Calcutta

**Everyman's Science** Vol. XXIX, No.3, June-July, 1994, ISCA, Calcutta

**Exposition du Systeme du Monde** Pierre Simon & Marquis de Laplace, 1796

**Holistic Science and Human Values** Quarterly, Feb. 1989, Theosophy Science  
Study Group, Adyar, Madras

**In Search of New Miraculous** P. D. Ospensky

**Introduction to Special Relativity** Robert Resnik, Wiley Eastern Ltd, 1988

**Jainism : Through Science** Muni Shri Nandighoshvijayji, Shri Mahavira Jaina  
Vidyalaya, Bombay, 1995

**Mathematics in History, Culture, Philosophy and Science** Sarju Tiwari,  
Foreword by Prof. J.B. Ganguly, Vice-Chancellor, Tripura Uni., Mittal  
Publications, New Delhi, 1992

**Nature** A British (Science Magazine) 20 July 2000

**New Scientist** (Science Magazine)

**Origin of Species** Charles Darwin Faber & Faber Co. Ltd, London, U.K. 1979

**Principles of Relativity** H. A. Lorentz, A Einstein, H. Minkowski & H. Weyl,  
Dover Publications Ins., 1952

**Quantum Mechanics** G. R. Chatwal, S. K. Anand, Himalaya Publishing  
House, 1988

**Role of Vegetarian Diet in Health and Diseases** Bombay Hospital, Bombay  
1991

**Science Discover Eternal Wisdom,** Muni Shri Amrendravijayji Maharaja 1993  
**Science of Regeneration**

**Science Reporter** Sept. & Dec. 1987, CISR, New Delhi

**Tao of Jain Sciences** Prof. L. C. Jain

**Text Book of Physics** Std XII

**The Jain Cosmology** Callete Gailat

**The Origin of Life** A. I. Oparin

**The Pyramid Power** Max Toth & Gerg Nilsen

**The Standard Sanskrit English Dictionary**

**The Tao of Physics** Fritjof Capra, Shambhala Publications, Boston, U.S.A.



1990

**The Times of India** 3 Sept. 1993, Sunday Review**The Times of India** 5 June 2000**The Times of India** 20 Jan., 2001**The Turning Point** Fritjof Capra Flamingo, London

# Muni in pursuit of science through Jain treatise

RANDOM NOTES

By Tushar Bhatt

(Senior Editor, The Times of India,  
Ahmedabad Edition)

In the spacious first floor hall at the Ambawadi Jain Upashraya, silence ruled, A few monks here and there, disciples of Acharya Suryodayasuri, were seated on the floor, in front of small, reclining writing desks. There were only a couple of devotees around, whispering in order not to jar the peace. Outside, there was a steady drizzle and the afternoon was dragging on at a drowsy pace, as if reluctant to make way for the evening. The monks seemed totally oblivious to the somnolence that the weather was casting on worldly mortals.

Dressed in the mandatory white cloth of a Jain monk, Muni Nandighoshvijayji was absorbed in writing. Several ruled, foolscap pages, filled with neat handwriting lay around. Next to him stood a rack filled with books for reference.

He was making notes on a subject that many might think unlikely topics to preoccupy celestial mind of monks : mathematics and purer physics, Einstein's theories, quantum leap. This in addition to the routine chores of a monk.

If Tao of Physics can be acceptable, it is, perhaps, perfectly in order for a monk to undertake a reverse examination of science. Learning has been a time-honoured tradition among the Jain monks, as would be testified by the works done over centuries. Even today, new entrants to the order under any Acharya spend years, Sanskrit, Prakrit and Agams and other literature. Acharya Suryodayasuri himself has done a lot of work in researching and writing in these areas.

But 42-year- Nandighoshvijayji has charted almost a new course for nearly a decade-and-a-half now, exploring pure science and examining its compatibility with what has been observed, and remained buried to the common eye, in the Jain scriptures.

The Muni, with a frail body, topped by a head with receding hairline, face covered deliberately uncared for beard that sprouts many grey strands, has a winsome smile, sparkling eyes and a scientific temper. He triggered a debate on

serious and profound topics in mathematics and physics by delving in to Jain Agamshastras and examining the modern theories vis-a-vis them, and brought out a book, *Jainism : Through Science* both in English and Gujarati, containing articles on what he has studied, observed and compared between ancient writings and the modern thought in these complex areas.

Nandighoshvijay, who received vows 23 years ago, was known as Nirmalkumar Nagindas Shah in his previous identity, and was keen student of science and mathematics. After eight years of his monkhood mastering Sanskrit and Prakrit to be able to study the scriptures, he took to empirical examination of the scientific concepts has expounded in the Jain scriptures and the modern day scientific thoughts.

The scriptures, he said, were 2500 years old, and were preserved in oral traditions for a thousand years before being put on palm leaves.

He does not find anything odd in what he is doing. He is not a dogmatic person, out to prove something with a fanatic finality; he has triggered a rational debate.

His articles in the book discuss a host of intricate issues such as concept of time and its units, origin and development of the universe, Darwin's theory of evolution, units of time and their relativity, the atomic theory of construction of material objects and energy, the corpuscular theory and the wave theory of light.

The basic scientific introduction to each topic has been followed up with a detailed discussion according to the Jain philosophical tradition. Dr P. C. Vaidya, a mathematics don of renown, has noted that "after awakening interest in both traditions, the Muni attempt to compare them."

Dr Vaidya went on to observe " The results of the comparison of these different traditions will hardly be acceptable to all. Muni Nandighoshvijayji, who makes the comparison is proficient in the reflective philosophical tradition. If the reader, like me, is a lover of empirical tradition, may not fully accept the conclusions, but that does not at all diminish the important of these writings."

What Muni Nandighoshvijayji has done is to set out various themes that indicate that Jain concept of science accord well with the modern science. The Jain concept of science is qualitative as expounded by tirthankaras while modern science is very much quantitative, as has been noted by Prof. Kanti V. Mardia, who holds the chair in Applied Statistics and is director of Centre of Medical Imaging Research at the University of Leeds in England.

Normally, philosophy and religion on one hand, and science, on the others, belong to different fields since philosophy is based on thinking and reflection and science on experience. But Albert Einstein himself noted in 1940 that both sides were not totally incompatible.

Einstein wrote in an article, *Science & Religion*, in Nature magazine 57 years ago that Science without religion is lame, religion without science is blind. Science is the attempt at the posterior reconstruction of existence by the process of conceptualisation.

The task is ambitious. For instance, an article in the book, on some shortcomings of the theory of special relativity according to Jainology, the Muni has made an attempt to point up drawbacks in Einstein's Special Theory of Relativity (STR) by putting forth arguments derived from the interpretation of Jain philosophy, with support from the hypothesis on the existence of "tachyon" which are currently postulated to have a velocity higher than light.

Einstein's theory being challenged by many scientists too, but, as Mr. P. Tewari, an officer of the Atomic Energy Commission's Nuclear Power Board, has noted the reasons for the refutation by others were more profound and subtler than what was put forth in the Muni's paper.

Nandighoshvijayji himself says that "Since I am Jain Muni, there are many limitations regarding practical work, I have not tested the (scientific) principles in Jain Philosophical treatises, practically. I arrived at the conclusions on the basis of natural phenomena and social experience.....The research paper are only theoretical."

Nevertheless, he thinks that since many scientific principles lay hidden in ancient Jain treatises, it is very necessary to represent these in the modern world.

Acknowledging that this was too tall an order for a single individual, he feels that science has not discovered the complete truth yet. Eventually, in pure sciences such as mathematics, conceptualisation played an important role.

The immediately perceptible merits or otherwise apart, Muni Nandighoshvijay appears to be set on a life-time course of comparative studies of scripture and science. What he inscribed on a copy of his book summed up his motto: "Knowing is not enough, we must apply. Willing is not enough, we must do."

(The Times of India, Ahmedabad, Saturday, August, 2, 1999)

If the reader like me, is a lover of the empirical tradition, he may not fully accept the conclusion of the comparison made by the author. But that does not at all diminish the importance of these articles

**Dr P. C. Valdia (A great mathematician of India)**

The presentation of the papers by Jain Muni Nandighoshvijay is lucid and quite impressive. Some of the concepts mentioned in the papers need a very serious explanation in order to dwell deeper into the mysterious working of nature.

**Prof. H. F. Shah, (Head, Deptt. of Physics, St. Xavier's College, Ahmedabad)**

I went through the manuscript and found the theories very interesting. I would like to convey my best wishes in your endeavour.

**Dr Satya Prakash (Emeritus Prof., PRL, Ahmedabad)**

In the age of wide-spread scientific progress religion should be taught through the language of science and by relating it to interesting topics selected from various branches of science Muni Shri Nandighoshvijayji is wonderfully doing just the job.

**Dr Pradip K. Shah M. D., (487, Jeremy, Bour Bonnlas, ILL 60914, USA)**

I think that you have brought out the concept of the Einstein's theory extremely well. I agree with the conclusion arrived at by you in your initial review.

I am very much glad and delighted to learn that though you are a worshipable Jain Swami, you have got great interest in the scientific advanced subjects like special theory of relativity, quantum mechanics and black holes etc. and even you are engaged in research in these highly scientific subjects. It is a great pride for India and for Jainism. I congratulate you for being a part of this big mission.

**Dr Shamtilal M Shah, (Retd. Scientist, Bhabha Atomic Research Centre, Trombay, Bombay)**

In my opinion, It is a noble task to 'relate' the concept of modern science to Jain thoughts and vice-versa. I congratulate you for this important and timely contribution and in particular I whole heartedly recommend the book to the scientific community, Jains and non-Jains alike.

**Prof. K. V. Mardia, Ph.D. (Raj.) Ph.D, (N'cle), University of Leeds, LEEDS, U.K.**

There is one school of thought in India which argues that whatever western science is discovering today was already known to the eastern thinkers long ago. The attitude in this book is not of this kind. Instead the author has argued that Jain thinking has been more mature, more comprehensive and more satisfying than what science has to offer.

**Jayant Narlikar**

Director & Homi Bhabha Professor, IUCAA, PUNE-411007 (India)

The present book written by *Munishri Nandighoshvijayji* is an attempt to bridge the gap between Jain school of thought and modern science. The book covers a wide variety of topics. In the beginning it takes up topics such as Special Theory of Relativity, Nature of Light, Doppler Effect, Black Holes etc., many of which form the foundations of modern physics and are deeply entrenched into current scientific thought. The problem whether light is a wave or a particle has been a fundamental problem of the 19th century physics. There is no such conflict with the Jain Philosophy since Anēkāntavāda is one of the basic premise on which Jain thought has developed. It is impressive to see that a variety of topics, as diverse as the origin of life to cosmic time cycles were discussed in the ancient scriptures. The topics dealing with mantra, yantra, japa, colour and music point out their importance in Jain philosophy and spiritual practices. The bio-electromagnetic energy or extrasensory perception are the topics which are only lately being investigated scientifically.

**Dr Narendra Bhandari** (Ph. D., F.A.Sc., F.N.A.Sc.)

Senior Prof. & Chairman, Earth Science & Solar System, PRL, Ahmedabad-380009, (India)

But the 42 year *Nandighoshvijayji* has charted almost a new course for nearly a decade-and-a half now, exploring pure science and examining its compatibility with what has been observed, and remained buried to the common eye, in the Jain scriptures.

The scriptures, he said, were 2500 years old and were preserved in oral traditions for a thousand years before being put on palm leaves. He does not find anything odd in what he is doing. He is not a dogmatic person out to prove something with a fanatic finality, he has triggered a rational debate.

**Tushar Bhatt** Senior Editor

The Times of India, Ahmedabad, (India)